

MARRIED AGAIN\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*PREVIOUSLY ON MY MAMIWOTA....\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*INSIDE RUU'S BEDROOM\*\*\*

\*\*\*Thandi knocked and Ruslan opened the door and he was naked with his hard dick ready to bust with veins popping....she walked in with her eyes popped out and when she turned he was closer to her and he didn't waste time....he smashed his lips on hers and they kissed and soon Thandi's clothes were scattered all over the floor and Ruslan was hitting it from behind...they went on and on until they both came and they laid in bed with Thandi's head on his chest as they caught their breath\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you amour

Thandi: I love you too

\*\*\* he kissed her forehead and he breathed in and out\*\*\*

Ruslan: can you do me a favor?

\*\*\*she raised her head and nodded while smiling at him and his heart melted because her smiled did things to his heart\*\*\*

Ruslan: marry me

\*\*\*her eyes popped out as she looked at him shocked then her phone rang....\*\*\*

Thandi: umm...can... can I answer it

\*\*\*he perked her lips and nodded then she took it and breathed out then she answered sitting up\*\*\*

Thandi: hello

\*\*\*she heard sniffs\*\*

Thandi: hello

Voice: he's gone....he's dead

\*\*\*she frowned \*\*\*

Thandi: Joe?

Joe: yeah....James...James is dead

Thandi.....that bitch killed him...she stabbed him to death

\*\*\*her heart started beating fast and Ruslan saw something was wrong and he also sat up and looked at her curiously \*\*\*

Thandi: wha...what?

Joe: that evil baby mama of his stabbed him to death....look as his wife you are expected to sit on the mattress for him and mourn for him the right way.... ooh and the funeral will be held gae Limpopo....tell the boys and prepare to go to Limpopo...shap

\*\*\* he sighed then he dropped the call and tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Ruslan: amour what's wrong

\*\*\*she looked at Ruslan and she wiped her tears off\*\*\*

Thandi: J...James is dead....hi...his brother said he was stabbed by his baby mama and....God....what am I gonna tell the boys Ruu, where will I even begin

\*\*\*He just pulled her closer and held her tight and she sniffed also holding him tight\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*

\*\*\*Castiel was sitting on the ground with a bottle of whiskey on this hand next to Juana's grave at their backyard, next to Juana's grave was their baby's small grave, they were both

under a huge tree \*\*\*

Castiel: im all alone baby....you left me all alone.....maybe I should just give myself up to the witches council and let them do as they please with me and to think I betrayed my brother to save you and now you left me

\*\*\*he chuckled bitterly with tears gushing out and he drank from the bottle\*\*\*

Castiel: I wasn't ready Juana, why didn't you accept that mmmh.....why couldn't you wait a bit

\*\*\*he continued to cry....it's been three months since Juana died and he looks like shit.....all he does is drink, pass out and when he wakes up and he goes hunting....for these three months he has been surviving only on blood and that made his skin look pale....well he's a hybrid and he survives both on solid food and blood, normally he would only feed on blood for two to

three times in a week while the rest of the time he eats solid food. That's why his skin looked light caramel instead of pale when he met Kazi for the first time...he can blend in with humans nicely cause he's not a full blown vampire, his mother was a human witch and his father was a vampire but now that he hasn't eaten solid food for three months he looks like a real vampire with pale skin and the area around his eyes was dark \*\*\*

Castiel: yeah maybe I should just hand myself in to the witches council

\*\*\*then he felt a hand touch his shoulder and he turned but he didn't see anyone but then he heard a voice\*\*\*

Voice: you will never be alone my night rider....i will always be with you and you have Kazi now

\*\*\*he quickly got up and stumbled a bit since he was a bit drunk\*\*\*

Castiel: JUANA?...JUANA IS THAT YOU....BABY  
PLEASE COME BACK....PLEASE I PROMISE I'LL  
STOP SEEKING FOR A CHILD AND....AND I'LL  
BE A GOOD HUSBAND I PROMISE PLEASE  
COME BACK TO ME BABY

Voice: I'll always be with you my night rider and  
remember you are never alone...

Castiel: Juana show yourself baby....Ju....

\*\*\*he felt dizzy and fell on the ground and it  
was lights out....he woke up when he felt a  
hand touch his cheek and he looked around and  
the was no one around....it was starting to get  
dark so he got up and picked his bottle and  
walked to the house...he changed his shirt and  
he ran out going deeper into the woods\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT KAZI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Well she did find out that she's pregnant and she decided to tell Menzi cause she didn't want her kids to grow up without knowing their father just because he's married to another woman and ever since he knew he's fussy and over protective of her....he always wants to know where she is all the time and he spends more time with her than he does with his wife and that frustrates Kazi cause Buhle has called her multiple times warning her to keep away from her husband and when she tries to reason with Menzi he just won't hear any of it, as for Menzi he was glad Kazi is pregnant cause it means she will be bound to him for the rest of their lives and he now had hope that she might even agree to his marriage proposal soon....



Anyway her phone rang and she rolled her eyes and answered\*\*\*

Kazi: im parking outside my yard and about to open the gate Menzi.....can you please stop calling me every second and concentrate on your marriage for goodness sake

Menzi: my marriage is my business Ntandokazi and those babies in your womb are my business too

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: fine....let me open the gate shap

Menzi: I hope you have started packing cause on Saturday you are moving in

\*\*\*well he bought her a house, she tried to protest but with Menzi being Menzi she ended up giving up\*\*\*

Kazi: im almost done Menzi

Menzi: good and im sleeping over tonight, in

fact im on my way now

Kazi: Menzi im not your wife or girlfriend so you cant just tell me ukuthi you are sleeping over

\*\*\*she said with an annoyed voice\*\*\*

Menzi: well you are my baby mama so I can....shap im almost there

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and she huffed angrily then she got out and went to the gate but before she could open it she felt like someone was watching her then she quickly turned around and there was no one....there was a car parked on the other side of the road but it looked like no one was inside but that feeling of being watched was still there.... she felt the hair on the back of her head stand then she decided to go back to her car and drive around until Menzi comes but as she took a step towards her car a gun went off and she fell on the ground.... then a force moved to the car that

was on the other side of the street as the driver was starting the engine ready to drive away from the scene and it ripped the driver's door off the car and threw it away then it pulled the driver out and ripped his throat off his neck and it dropped his body on the ground and went to pull out the passenger that was also inside the car out of the it and it ripped his heart out of his chest and it dropped the body on the ground....the next thing Kazi was no longer on the ground and you could hear dogs bucking vigorously around the neighborhood...even the neighbor that was walking to lock his gate ran inside the house when the gun went off.....5 minutes later Menzi parked the car in the middle of the street when the lights of his car hit a body on the ground and he quickly got out and rushed to it with his heart beating fast and he sighed with relief when he saw that it wasn't Kazi but the state the body was in....was gut-wrenching \*\*\*

Menzi: ooh God Kazi....Ntandokazi!

\*\*\*he called out to her rushing to her car and he saw her car keys on the ground and blood next to her car keys then he started to panic\*\*\*

Menzi: Ntandokazi! Where are you....Kazi answer me baby!

\*\*\*he said running around calling out her name and she was nowhere in sight then he saw legs showing on the other side of the other car and his heart stopped beating for a sec and he slowly walked there and he sighed with relief when he saw that it was a male figure and not Kazi and he made a disgusted face when he saw what looked like a heart not far from the body\*\*\*

Menzi: Kazi ukuphi? (where are you?)...ooh God.....

\*\*\*he went back to her car and her handbag was there then he put his hands on top of his

head cause it was clear she was abducted....he then took out his phone and made an important call to his boss asking for help before he called the police net for control nje\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\* THE END \*\*\*\*\*

-----

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....01

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*He put her on top of a bed and he looked at his bloodied hands and his eyes changed and his fangs got longer, then he pulled his hands closer to his mouth and he licked the blood off his hands hungrily...he did it so fast while making moaning sounds cause her blood tasted good and fresh until he heard a soothing voice whisper close to his ear\*\*

Voice: Castiel stop....you need to save her!

\*\*\*he looked around and it was just him and Kazi then he sighed and he looked at a bleeding and passed out Kazi\*\*\*

Castiel: sssss.....my wife is no fun damn

\*\*\*then his fangs went back to normal so did his eyes and he went to wash his hands and he

took his medical tools and removed the bullet that was stuck deep inside her stomach and he stitched her up then he also cleaned her womb since the twins didn't make it...

He then took her to his "white" room and he connected her to machines and he also connected an IV on her filling it with a perfect dosage of morphine and he sat down on a chair and stared at her\*\*\*

Castiel: mmmmh I wonder who tried to kill you.....or was it your useless mother and step father since I told them that I want half of my money back since you are pregnant and they decided to kill your babies or your baby daddy's wife?.....mmmh

\*\*\*he said that and he frowned then he got up and he walked out of the room all the way to the front door\*\*\*

.  
. .

\*\*\*Joy switched the side lamp on and she got out of the bed ready to go to the bathroom when she saw a male figure standing and leaning on the closed bedroom door and she screamed then her husband also got up\*\*\*

Mthembu: what is it Joy

\*\*\*then his eyes popped out as his eyes landed on Castiel who was covered with blood\*\*\*

Mthembu: M...Mr. G

Castiel: did you do it?

\*\*\*he asked with a scary voice\*\*\*

Mthembu: i...I haven't gotten the money yet but ummm you'll get it by the end of the day tomorrow



\*\*\*he took a step forward and Joy covered her face looking scared cause Castiel looked like something out of a vampire movie....his clothes where covered in Kazi's blood and he looked pale with dark circles around his eyes\*\*\*

Mthembu: ooh God....ooh God

\*\*\*he said shaking \*\*\*

Mthembu: please don't hurt me Mr. G....please don't hurt me and my wife im begging you

\*\*\*he pleaded with him\*\*\*

Castiel: im gonna ask this for the last time.....did you send those men to kill her and her unborn kids?

Mthembu: wh...who are you talking about

Castiel: her daughter

\*\*\*he said pointing at Joy and she uncovered her face with her eyes popped out and he saw right through them that it wasn't them....he

could also read their thoughts\*\*\*

Joy: you mean to tell me my...my daughter was almost killed?

\*\*\*she asked with a shaky voice\*\*\*

Castiel: I don't even know why I came here, you two are just useless

\*\*\*then he opened the door and turned to look at them\*\*\*

Castiel: my money by the end of the day tomorrow or I'll finish her off and start off with your children too Mthembu

Mthembu: you'll...you'll get it by the end of the day tomorrow please don't hurt my kids

\*\*\*then Castiel looked at Joy\*\*\*

Castiel: he'll do anything for his kids including selling your daughter to pay off his debt and you chose him over your own blood and they call me a monster

\*\*\*he shook his head and he walk out and soon after they heard dogs bucking in the neighborhood....then Joy sat down with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Mthembu: shit....did you see how he looked baby....is this boy even human I mean he looked like a ghost or something.....God what have I gotten myself into

\*\*\*Joy didn't say anything as what Castiel said rang in her head\*\*\*

Mthembu: baby?

\*\*\*he said getting out of bed and he went closer to her and he tried to touch her but she pushed him away and she got up and rushed to the bathroom and she locked herself inside and she just cried.....Mthembu swallowed hard and he sat down with his head bowed\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT MBALI AND RAY'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*The Khumalos left and it was now the Owoh-Masdens and the Vilakazi's sitting on the lounge with Ruslan pacing up and down....Thandi told them about the call\*\*\*

Ray: Ruu sit please....you making me dizzy man

\*\*\*he stopped and he turned and looked at Ray and everyone swallowed hard...the look on his face was deadly and bone chilling\*\*\*

Ruslan: what have you all decided?

Heath: she's still his wife by tradition Ruslan

Ruslan: you are not answering my question....i said what have you decided!

Ray: she's the only one that can decide on what to do

\*\*\*he then looked at Thandi and she was looking down while playing with her fingers\*\*\*

Ruslan: amour look at me

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: amour I said look at me

\*\*\*she did slowly\*\*\*

Ruslan: what have you decided?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Thandi: the elders don't know that we broke up so I don't think they'll be happy if I refuse to sit on the mattress for James and plus we have kids together

\*\*\*he licked his lower lip then he chuckled and he shook his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: you are not answering me

Jabu: man look this is a complicated issue ok...traditionally she's still his wife and now

he's dead and...

\*\*\*Ruslan interrupted him\*\*\*

Ruslan: amour answer my question

\*\*\*he said ignoring Jabu\*\*\*

Thandi: if...if my elders say I should, I'll have to  
Ruu

\*\*\*he swallowed hard and he walked to the door  
and Thandi quickly got up and she went after  
him calling his name but he ignored her and  
kept on walking out\*\*\*

Ray: fuck....this shit is fucked up

Heath: Ruslan needs to understand that no one  
except for us knew that they broke up

Ray: you've seen La Parca right....well guess  
what, he's the only one I know that can summon  
and control him so be ready for anything cause  
Ruslan loves Thandi he won't take this lying  
down

\*\*\*The guys swallowed hard except for Mj  
cause he didn't know about the real La Parca\*\*\*

Mj: summon and control him?....what are you  
talking about Big Ray

\*\*\*Ray just ignored him and he asked Mbali to  
get him a glass of cold water\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*outside Thandi caught up with him and she  
grabbed his arm and he stopped walking\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruu please understand

Ruslan: get your hand off me!

\*\*\*he said it with a firm voice and Thandi  
flinched and she let go of him with tears  
running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Thandi: what should I do then Ruslan mmmmh

tell me, I know what the elders will say ok

\*\*\*she said sobbing and he kept quiet with his jaws clenched\*\*\*

Thandi: tell me what to do and I'll do it but please don't walk out on me

\*\*\*he sighed and turned to face her and his face softened when he saw her crying....he went closer to her and he pulled her in for a hug and she just cried on his chest\*\*\*

Ruslan: shhh....im sorry for walking out on you amour please stop crying.. you breaking my heart please

\*\*\*he said brushing her back gently....after some time she calmed down and he cupped her face and wiped her tears off with his thumbs then he perked her lips\*\*\*

Ruslan: im sorry ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he perked her lips again and



also her forehead\*\*\*

Thandi: tell me what to do Ruu and I'll do it but just know his family will force me to sit on the mattress and mourn for him

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ruslan: I don't have a problem with you going to his funeral to support the boys...I'll also be there with your family to support you and the boys' amour but I will not have my woman mourn for another man, that i won't take lightly....you are mine Thandi and mine alone so you better make it clear to them that you have a man in your life and he doesn't take shit when it comes to you and the boys so they better bury their son in peace or I'll bring hell to them specially!

\*\*\*he said that with a straight face and firm tone and Thandi swallowed hard.....she could see that this wasn't the ever laughing and joyful Ruslan but another dark version of him...a

version she wishes to never see again cause even the aura around him was tense and dark\*\*\*

Thandi: i hear you

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: good now let's go tell the boys

\*\*\*she swallowed hard looking down and tears welled her eyes and he lifted her chin up so she looks at him and he stared into her teary eyes\*\*\*

Ruslan: I got you....you won't ever do or face anything alone ok

\*\*\*she nodded and tears ran down her cheeks and he wiped them and perked her lips\*\*\*

Thandi: thank you for choosing me Ruu and for loving me

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead and he pulled her into a tight hug and they stayed like that for some

time until Ray walked out and he found them in that position...he went to them and he looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

Ray: you good?

Ruslan: I am now

\*\*\*he said with a straight face and Ray nodded and he looked at Thandi\*\*\*

Ray: you good too Tee?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Ray: so we telling them to fuck off?

\*\*\*Thandi nodded \*\*\*

Ray: tomorrow I'll go pick gran and gramps for a meeting so you tell them what's been happening and that you can't mourn for James before those barbarians (his family) come to cause trouble

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: let's go tell our boys

\*\*\*she sighed and they all walked inside and as soon as Naledi saw her she got up and went to her and they hugged tight\*\*\*

Naledi: o shap? (are you ok?)

\*\*\*Thandi nodded\*\*\*

Naledi: ok

\*\*\*she hugged her again\*\*\*

Ruslan: excuse us for a minute Star we need to tell the boys

\*\*\*Naledi swallowed hard and she nodded and they walked away\*\*\*

Jabu: he's suddenly different big Ray

Ray: I know...the last time I saw him like this was when Castiel.....

\*\*\*he then kept quiet and he sighed\*\*\*

Heath: who is Castiel?

Ray: someone who betrayed him....well he didn't have a choice but him running away instead of explaining things to Ruu so he understands why he did what he did almost turned Ruu into a bad....

\*\*\*then he kept quiet and he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ray: why did that bastard James have to die now nx

\*\*\*he got up and walked away and Mbali also got up and followed him\*\*\*

.  
.br/>.

Mpendulo: Ma what's going on....you've been crying....uncle Ruu

Thandi: ummm i.....i just received some bad news my boy

\*\*\*Mpilo sighed dramatically\*\*\*

Mpilo: let me guess.... dad won't be able to come as always

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: listen here boys....me and your mother love you very much and we will always be here for you, so will your uncle Ray, uncle Jabu, uncle Mj and Uncle Heath and so will all your aunts ok

\*\*\*they nodded\*\*\*

Mpendulo: Ma what's going on?

\*\*\*tears ran down Thandi's face\*\*\*

Thandi: your...your father is gone....your Uncle Joe called me and told me that your father passed on

\*\*\*the boys froze as they looked at Thandi\*\*\*

Thandi: im sorry my babies...im so sorry but your dad is gone...he went to heaven

\*\*\*tears ran down Mpilo and Mpendulo's faces as their bottom lips trembled\*\*\*

Mpe: no he's fine....he....wait he....noo....mama he's....

\*\*\*he spoke fast with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Thandi: im sorry baby

\*\*\*she said getting up to go hold him and he quickly got up and rushed out but Ruslan acted quickly by chanting a spell of illusion and he blinded him and that made Mpendulo to stop on his tracks outside the room and he rubbed his eyes trembling....Thandi wanted to run after him but Ruslan stopped her\*\*\*

Ruslan: I got this

Mpendulo: my...my eyes

\*\*\*he said rubbing them and Ruslan rushed out to him and he held him tight and whispered in his ear as Mpendulo was crying and Thandi was

hugging a crying Mpilo inside the bedroom\*\*\*

Ruslan: calm down my boy...calm down

Mpendulo: my...my eyes...i...I can't see

\*\*\*then Ruslan removed the spell and Mpendulo started seeing\*\*\*

Ruslan: can you see now

\*\*\*Mpendulo nodded repeatedly\*\*\*

Ruslan: good now listen to me.... your father loves you dearly and he may have passed on but he'll live forever in here

\*\*\*he said pointing at Mpendulo's left side of his chest\*\*\*

Ruslan: its ok to cry, to shout and to feel hurt and sad but never ever do what you were thinking of doing.... do you also want to lose your mother too mmh?

\*\*\*he shook his head no crying\*\*\*



Ruslan: you running away will kill your mother is that what you want

\*\*\*he shook his head no still crying\*\*\*

Ruslan: good now listen here....im here for you, your brother and mother...I'll never let anything happen to either one of you and I'll skin alive anyone who even attempts to hurt you....i'll always be here for you and your little brother and im not going anywhere you hear me

\*\*\*he nodded crying\*\*\*

Ruslan: you may not be mine biologically but I take you as my son, and your little brother too I take him as my own so cry champ, its ok but never ever think of running away or harm yourself in any way you hear me

\*\*\*Mpendulo nodded crying and Ruslan pulled him closer and he held him tight as he cried loud\*\*\*

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....02

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*Ruslan continued to hold him tight and

Mpendulo also continued to cry out loud....after sometime Ruslan picked him up and he went inside the room and he found Thandi trying to calm Mpilo down then he put Mpendulo on top of the bed and he put both his thumbs on his forehead then he whispered some spell and immediately Mpendulo fell asleep..... then he made him sleep properly and he went to Thandi and he picked Mpilo up and Mpilo rested his head on his shoulder crying with hiccups and he went to sit down on the edge of the bed with him on his lap\*\*\*

Ruslan: my pilot look at me

\*\*\*he did slowly and Ruslan wiped off his tears and mucus\*\*\*

Ruslan: it's gonna be ok, im here for you and Im never going anywhere you hear me

\*\*\*Mpilo nodded sobbing with hiccups \*\*\*

Ruslan: your dad is with angels now and he's

looking down on you ok and he loves you very much....and as for me im gonna be here for you, im not going anywhere ok

\*\*\*he nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you ok my pilot

\*\*\*he nodded and Ruslan kept on wiping his tears off and he rested Mpendulo's head on his chest and he held him and he looked at Thandi who looked like a beautiful mess...seeing her sons in this state broke her heart into pieces\*\*\*

Ruslan: you need to be strong for them  
amour....never shed tears in front of them they are still kids and they need to see you as their super woman so they can be strong themselves....i know it hurts my love but when they see you coping even though you know that inside it hurts, it will show them that all will be well cause mama is holding on and coping.....and this chest is yours to let it all out,

to cry, to scream and to feel and look like shit  
but the moment you are around them you put  
up a brave and happy face so they'll be able to  
move on from this pain ok

\*\*\*she nodded wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Ruslan: you know I got you so be strong for  
your boys and let daddy handle the rest ok

\*\*\*she nodded again feeling lucky to have  
Ruslan in her life\*\*\*

Ruslan: good

\*\*\*then he got up with Mpilo\*\*\*

Ruslan: time for you to rest a bit my pilot

\*\*\*he said putting him next to his brother and  
he did what he did to Mpendulo and Mpilo also  
fell asleep then he covered them with a throw  
blanket and he went to Thandi and helped her  
up and he kissed her forehead and led her out  
of the room and they went to Ruslan's bedroom

and they laid in bed with Thandi's head on his chest\*\*\*

Thandi: how did you make them fall asleep like that?

\*\*\* she asked with a curious tone and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: it's my little secret but don't worry I'll tell you all about it after the funeral

Thandi: ummm why after the funeral?

Ruslan: because after the funeral im gonna get an answer to my marriage proposal and it better be Yes then im gonna tell you all about myself, my favorite color, food, drinks...my favorite sex position, the size of my erect dick, where my birthmark is and many other things including my "trick" that made the boys to fall asleep that quick

\*\*\*Thandi giggled and he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: now its time I do that little trick on you too so you can rest....when the boys wake up they need to find you looking fresh and better ok

Thandi: umm

\*\*\*he flipped them over and he was on top looking down on her and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you so damn much and as much as it stings that you cried for another man but I understand cause you've been with that man for years and you have kids together.... but I will not...I repeat.... I will not take it lightly if you agree to mourn for him like a wife does for her husband and if they say they want their dowry back tell them its fine I'll pay double the amount he paid for you ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he perked her lips and his hand travelled to her stomach and he smirked and bend a bit again and he kissed her for some

time...after a while he pulled out of the kiss and he put his thumbs on her forehead looking straight into her beautiful eyes and he whispered the spell\*\*\*

Thandi: huh?

\*\*\*she asked cause she couldn't hear what he was saying then she immediately fell asleep and he kissed her forehead and he went down and also kissed her stomach then he made her sleep comfortably and he covered her with a throw blanket and got out of bed and he walked out going down stairs\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*the guys, their wives and kids where still around and now the guys were inside Ray's study room except for Mj after Ruslan asked them to go there to talk\*\*\*



Jabu: how are they?

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: it will take time but they'll be fine

Ray: well im more worried about you cause we all know those people will do anything in their power to put the blame on Tee for his death cause she left him....you know how grieving families can be and they might even fight her for the cents he left or even force her to sit on the mattress and mourn him like a wife should

Heath: eish plus she once told me how bad they have been treating her ever since she left him

Jabu: ba nyela megwete ya bona nx ( swear words)..... Fucken shit

\*\*\*Heath and Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: my Thandi is off limits so they better not try that shit or I'll unleash hell on them

\*\*\*then he rubbed his head roughly\*\*\*

Ray: what is it?

Ruslan: I think there's foul play here....something possessed the chick to kill him  
\*\*\*they looked at each other\*\*\*

Heath: nah I don't think so, Portia is ghetto like that and she's just trash I mean she's worse than Omphile's mother

Jabu: heh I can't believe James ne a ja sefebe sele Portia (heh I can't believe James was fucking that bitch Portia)

Heath: mmmmh remember if you fuck a bitch you'll also die by one

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im dead serious man....James and the chick are victims on this, something forced the chick to kill James now my question is who or what did that and why

\*\*\*they all looked at him surprised\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?

Heath: why do you care about who or what killed him

Ruslan: cause even though I hated the nigga but he's Mpe and Mpilo's father and they love him dearly even though he was a shitty father lately.... they are broken man and I hate seeing them like that...i was willing to let him live after he hurt Thandi because of those boys

\*\*\*they all nodded\*\*\*

Jabu: now understand why you said you'll handle him your way

Ray: so what do you wanna do?

Ruslan: I'll get to the bottom of it for the boys and give you feedback

Heath: ok

\*\*\*he got up\*\*\*

Heath: this is our queue to head home im sure

my wife and kids are tired....we will see ya'll tomorrow

Jabu: we are also vaying too ( leave too)

\*\*\*he said getting up too and Heath and Ray laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: tomorrow gents (guys)

\*\*\*they all fist bumped and walked out then Ray got his tablet and he got busy on it and gave it to Ruslan\*\*\*

Ray: I bumped into the story in the morning I was waiting for us to be alone so I can show you

\*\*\*he read the headlines and continued to read the rest of the story and he frowned and looked up at Ray\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's here?

Ray: his last known location was Sierra Leone where he lived with Juana

Ruslan: this can't be.... maybe it's the Beasts

\*\*\*Ray shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: it's not, I asked Mateo to do some research about the incident and he found out that the girl that is kidnapped is a girlfriend to one of Baba's hitman Menzi or Manzi and the guy contacted Baba after she was taken probably to ask for help cause the search is on for her and it's Khumalo's men searching for her all over

\*\*\*Ruslan got up still holding the Tablet\*\*\*

Ruslan: so he's here....he's been here all along

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: it looks like it but my question is why her and why did he kill the guys in that manner

Ruslan: he's a vampire so he's supposed to suck their blood so why did he kill them like that cause the last time he killed someone like that it was that guy that once kidnapped Juana that

time....its like he was angry or...

Ray: protecting the girl from the guys cause Mat found out that the guys had guns on them and one of the guy's gun was fired on the scene cause a neighbor confirmed that he heard a gunshot....then the blood on the ground is probably hers and her belongings were found on the scene

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed rubbing his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: they say the car door was ripped off the car and thrown meters away from the scene....shit he's here....that son of Vamp is here

Ray: but why though and where is Juana

Ruslan: he always wanted a child what if he kidnaped the girl to bear him a child cause if he changed Juana then she won't be able to bear him children or Juana fell pregnant and the child killed her...fuck I don't know

Ray: shit...yeah it could be but Juana is a sweetheart man she wouldn't do that to another woman....we both know his seeds are toxic man....maybe his child killed her

Ruslan: people change man....i mean look at Cass, that motherfucker was my brother and I trusted him and what did he do, he fucken betrayed me for a woman so he probably changed her to be like him nx ungrateful bastard

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: we both know why he did what he did Ruu

Ruslan: fuck him....that bitch-ass-nigga had a choice....he could've told me and that would've showed that he doesn't wanna do it and that he can't betray me or lose Juana and we would've found a way for him to give the Brethrens what they want and for him to also save Juana but he chose to betray me instead....so much for

brotherhood fucken piece of shit!

\*\*\*he said looking angry and Ray sighed again\*\*\*

Ray: calm down

\*\*\*Ruslan huffed and he put the Tablet down\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's gonna kill that girl if he wants her to carry his child....and Juana how could she let that happen.....fuck

Ray: wait what if all the women that went missing here in South Africa are all his victims

Ruslan: shit.....I need to find him before the Khumalos does cause they'll kill him man....we both know he won't go down without a fight and he's a fucken lunatic he might kill them even

\*\*\*Ray got up and he started pacing around\*\*\*

Ray: then Mbali will be shattered and Saint will come out and shit will hit the fan.....yeah we need to find him cause it says on the article the



woman is also pregnant and since the hitman is loyal to the Khumalos they'll do anything to find her and when they do its gonna be a blood bath that will affect everyone including us man.....Saint will go berserk for his mother so we need to find him man....and we cant tell the Khumalos cause you know how the brothers are

- .
- .
- .

\*\*\*\* AT MENZI AND BUHLE'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Menzi has locked himself inside his study ever since he came back in the morning, he's busy calling in favors and also doing anything possible to find Kazi but nothing tangible was coming out of it and as for Buhle she's upstairs in their bedroom worried as hell....she's

rereading the story of Kazi's kidnapping for the umpteenth time....she can see how her kidnapping affected Menzi, he's a mess...he hasn't slept, bathed or eaten anything and she's worried about him.... then the door opened and he walked in and he went straight to the en-suite bathroom and she heard the shower running then she sighed....less than five minutes later he got out and he dried himself and put lotion on his body and he got dressed as she watched then he walked to the door but then he stopped midway and he turned to look at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Menzi: if you had anything to do with her kidnapping then you better commit suicide or bring her back alive with my kids still safely in her womb before I find out....she's carrying my kids and....

\*\*\*he swallowed getting more angry and emotional at the same time\*\*\*

Menzi: the blood found on the ground indicated that she was shot on the stomach area and if...if anything happened to my kids and you are involved im going to give you a slow and painful death just like I did to your shuga daddy....i hope you aren't involved Buhle cause I'd hate to make you meet your ancestors in a most cruel manner

\*\*\*then he walked out slamming the door leaving Buhle shaking with fear\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. . .

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* The following day Castiel was busy cleaning around the house when he heard someone moaning in pain (he has super hearing abilities)

then he left what he was doing and he went to the room Kazi was in and he found her moaning in pain.....she still had her eyes closed but she was feeling extreme pain. He then took the Morphine drug and he injected it on her IV and as soon as the morphine entered her body she stopped moving and moaning in pain and laid still, he then threw away the used syringe and he huffed looking annoyed and he walked out\*\*\*

Castiel: Juana better be in hell so when I get there when I finally die I'll give her a piece of my fucken mind

\*\*\*he said to himself pouring himself a glass of whiskey and he gulped it all down \*\*\*

Castiel: I don't even know why I saved her.....i mean now I have to wait until she heals for her to fall pregnant again....useless....that's what she is.....fucken useless!

\*\*\*he put the glass down\*\*\*

Castiel: YOU HEAR THAT JUANA....YOU BETTER MAKE SURE YOU WENT TO HEAVEN OR ELSE I'LL MAKE HELL TOO SMALL FOR THE TWO OF US NX!

\*\*\*he shouted looking angry then he sighed and he took his laptop and he sat down....he switched it on and he tapped on a folder and a live stream video was playing....he watched Buhle pacing up and down in her bedroom then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: wrong choice little girl....that hitman of yours is gonna kill you I mean he killed his own father so imagine what he would do to you

\*\*\* he said looking at Buhle pacing up and down then he went to the video that showed Menzi's study room and he saw him on the phone busy pacing up and down shouting and he shook his head\*\*\*

Castiel: pussy! if you killed that bitch along with your father none of this would've happened...wait what am I saying Kazi belong to me...I fucken own her so tough boy

\*\*\* he laughed a bit then he went to the kids room and they weren't there then he went to the play room and they were watching cartoons on Tv with the nanny watching them then he swallowed hard and he closed the laptop...his mind went to his late son.... to how he made another bad choice....first he chose Juana over his brother Ruslan and then he chose Juana again over his son and now she's dead leaving him all alone.....he wished he made different choices but it was too late and also impossible to go back in time to rectify his mistakes\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck....

\*\*\*he said rubbing his face then he laid on the couch and he closed his eyes and imagine his life before he met Juana\*\*\*

.  
. .

\*\*\*AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE\*\*\*

\*\*\* Mbali was busy preparing lunch for Ray, Ruslan, Mj and Mateo and herself when Mj walked in the kitchen and he cleared his throat....he still couldn't believe how beautiful and young Mbali was, yes he has a crush on her but that's where it ends cause he knows Ray will literally kill him if he even try that shit on her cause he has seen how much he loves her and how obsessed he is with her and plus his heart beats for someone else\*\*\*

Mbali: hey you good

\*\*\*he cleared his throat again\*\*\*

Mj: ummm yeah

Mbali: oohk but it looks like something is troubling you....you do know that a problem shared is half solved right

\*\*\*she said smiling at him and his heart melted and he found himself smiling too then he quickly stopped smiling and he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mj: i....its complicated

Mbali: then uncomplicated it for me then

\*\*\*she said raising her eyebrow at him and he swallowed hard cause she looked hot doing that\*\*\*

Mj: umm its....ummm ok fine....the thing is back home im in love with some girl

\*\*\*she smiled-frowned at him\*\*\*

Mbali: how is that complicated....wait....ooh my God don't tell me she's pregnant...ooh my God your brothers are gonna skin you a....



\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Mj: what?....no...no...no its not that geez

Mbali: phewww ok umm so what's wrong

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: well let's say her family and my own hate each other

Mbali: ooooh I see

Mj: yeah so ummm next year she's also gonna come study this side and I wonder how will my brothers take it when they find out about us

\*\*\*Mbali sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: well Ray and I have been there...done that....owned it and now we good

Mj: wait your family hated Big Ray too

\*\*\*he asked surprised and she laughed a bit which made him smile a bit looking at her\*\*\*

Mbali: hate is an understatement Mj....one time

they even shot him when they found out about us

\*\*\*Mj's eyes popped out and she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmh but we never gave up on us and look at us now

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: I don't wanna get shot or beaten up Flower... I bruise too easily

\*\*\*Mbali laughed out loud\*\*\*

Mbali: well if you truly love her then it will all be worth it Mj....you might even take a bullet for her

\*\*\*he shook his head dramatically\*\*\*

Mj: and put it where? im sorry but im not a movie star or a white man Flower im black so no taking a bullet for a girl or moving mountains for her or even swimming to the middle of the ocean for her....im too cute to be doing all that

\*\*\*Mbali was busy laughing\*\*\*

Mbali: ah ah Mj

Mj: what?....look a no be Romeo na any of those fools that died for love ooo....do you know how delicious yam, fufu, pepe soup and many other Nigerian foods are....no no no and not forgetting plain pap, sour pap, chicken feet and tribe and skop (sheep head) ooh and cho....chot low (chotlo - traditionally cooked red stew meat)

\*\*\*Mbali was in stitches....he let her laugh until she calmed down and she wiped off her tears\*\*\*

Mj: you done laughing at me now

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: I can't with you Mj....damn you are crazy and I like it

\*\*\*he laughed and she joined him\*\*\*

Mbali: so what happened between your families?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: umm her sister...ok let me put it this way...mom and dad once married a wife for brother Heath without his knowledge and when they brought her here all hell broke loose....then they took her back to her parents' house and it got heated and apparently words and insults were exchanged and now they hate each other to a point that they even don't do business together anymore

\*\*\*she frowned at him\*\*\*

Mbali: wait you mean that Nigerian girl Naledi told me about

Mj: ummm yeah

Mbali: mara Mj

Mj: its this stupid heart Flower...

\*\*\*he said beating his chest\*\*\*

Mj: I tried to fight it but damn this stupid thing just won't listen

Mbali: OMG Heath is gonna flip

\*\*\*well she didn't know so will Ray cause he once slept with Adanma\*\*\*

Mj: well he's not into her at all

Mbali: but she made Naledi cry dude and worse part she was pregnant

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Mj: but Mercy is not like that Flower....she's humble, loving and kindhearted....well she's more like you, sister Star and sister Amo so she'll fit in nicely

Mbali: ok but the big question is....is she really worth it and if she is then I'll support you and try to protect you from your brother but if not then don't open old wounds because of someone you don't see a future will

\*\*\*he sighed and he sat down then she patted his shoulder\*\*\*

Mbali: its part of growing up dude ask me I've been there

\*\*\*then she continued to prepare lunch as he sat there thoughtfully.....then he looked at her and his eyes landed on her appetizing ass and he swallowed hard and quickly looked away\*\*\*

Mj: ummm thanks for the talk I'll...I'll surely think things through before I do something I'll regret

Mbali: good

\*\*\*she nodded looking at him with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Mj: ummm I'll...I'll just go to the...to the guys

\*\*\*then he walked out and breathed out loud then he went upstairs\*\*\*

Mj: shit I need to leave this house

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆

18SLV...INSERT.....03...\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*Gogo:  
yini ofuna ukusitshela Thandi? (what is it that  
you wanted to tell us Thandi?)\*Thandi cleared  
her throat and she looked down while playing  
with her fingers\*\*Mkhulu: Thandi kwenzekani?  
(Thandi what's going on?)Thandi: ummm  
ngiyazi ukuthi ngabe nginitshele futhi  
ngiyaxolisa (ummm I know I should've told  
you and im sorry)Gogo: usitshele ukuthini? (told  
us what?)Thandi: ukuthi uJames name  
sahlukana and that we both even moved on  
ngaphambi ngokuba afe (ummm that James  
and I broke up and that we both even moved on  
before he died)Mkhulu: heh?Thandi: he cheated

and got Omphile's aunt pregnant....the same woman who killed himMkhulu: ini? (what)\*\*\*she told them everything that happened except for her new relationship with Ruslan cause she was scared they might judge her somehow but at least she gave them a hint about both of them "moving on" \*\*\*Gogo: ooh nkosi yam (ooh my God)\*\*\*she said with her hands on top of her head\*\*\*Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo no mkhulu for not telling you....my mind was all over the place and when theycalled me and told me James was killed by his girlfriend and that im supposed to sit on the mattress for him that's when I realized that I should've told both families of our break upMkhulu: so his family didn't know about the other womanThandi: his brother knew and my brothers also knewbut I told them to stay out of it and that I'll handle it then he left for Limpopo and since then I haven't seen himMkhulu: yeses!Thandi: then I heard ukuthi he came back but he never, not



even once came to see the boys, he would only call them and make promises that he would come see them then he wouldn't show up\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*Gogo: what did I say to you when you told me James proposed Thandi?\*\*\*Thandi looked down and she swallowed hard\*\*\*Gogo: ngikhuluma nawe Thandi (im talking to you Thandi)...what did I say?\*\*\*she asked her with a raised voice\*\*\*Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo (im sorry Granny)Gogo: I warned you Thandi but you didn't believe meangithi ( right)Thandi: im sorry\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*Gogo: you could've avoided everything and now you have James family to deal with and you know how they are and on top of it ugogo wakhe ungumthakathi ( his grandmother is a witch)\*\*\*Thandi just continued to cry\*\*\*Gogo: heh heh "James and I have been through the worst and we will surely survive whatever is coming" .....are you surviving it now mmmmh?Mkhulu: mkami yehlisa umoya

(calm down my wife)Gogo: hai these children baya dina man nx (are too much man nx)Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo....please forgive me im sorry\*\*\*she pleaded with her\*\*\*Gogo: so what now.....are you going to sit on the mattress like they told you to?\*\*\*Thandi shook her head no\*\*\*Thandi: no\*\*\*Mkhulu sighed\*\*\*Mkhulu: what about the boys?Thandi: I wont stop them from paying their last respects to their father\*\*\*Mkhulu nodded\*\*\*Gogo: yazi Thandi angazi nokuthi ngithini kuwe ( you know Thandi I don't even know what to say to you)Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo (im sorry) ....i wish I listened to you and mkhulu and the worst part is I think I stayed with him and took in all his nonsense because I wanted to give the boys a family, something I never got to experience when I was growing up and now my sons are heartbroken and were way hurt before he was even killed and I don't know how to take away their pain\*\*\*she said sobbing and her grandmother

sighed\*\*\*Gogo: its ok...come here\*\*\*Thandi got up and went to sit next to her grandmother and she hugged her tight and Thandi just let it all out with her grandmother comforting her\*\*\*...\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED

LOCATION\*\*\*\*\*Kazi moved her eyeballs around for some time with her eyes shut and after some time she slowly opened her eyes and blinked a couple of times until she regained a clear vision and she looked around\*\*\*Castiel: take it easy woman....your stitches haven't healed\*\*\*he said getting up and he poured water into a glass and helped her drink some water with a straw and he adjusted the bed and fixed the pillows for herto lay comfortable\*\*\*Kazi: where...where am i?\*\*\*she said with a husky voice and Castiel just put his hands inside his pockets and looked at her\*\*\*Kazi: you....i remember you.....the elevatorCastiel: sharp mind I see\*\*\*he said with a straight face\*\*\*Kazi: where...where am I

and...and who are you Castiel: well you in my house and im Castiel\*\*\*her heart started beating fast and her hand went to stomach\*\*\*Castiel: they didn't make it\*\*\*her eyes popped out as she looked at him and her bottom lip trembled and tears started coming out with her chest visibly moving up and down\*\*\*Castiel: and to clear things up....im not responsible for your miscarriage "if I may call it that", your baby-daddy's wife is the one responsible....she sendthugs to kill you and your now dead babies\*\*\*tears continued to run down her cheeks until she let out a heart breaking cry....she screamed holding her stomach not even caring about the pain then Castiel just walked out leaving her crying her eyes out\*\*\*...Castiel: eat!\*\*\*he said giving her a plate with some home cooked meal and she didn't move an inch or even look at him...it was late in the afternoon\*\*\*Castiel: lady I said eat!\*\*\*she continued to stare into space and he clenched

his jaws getting annoyed\*\*\*Castiel: fine... but just know that you have a few hours to stay like a zombie just like you are now but tomorrow if you ignore me like you are doing now, I'll literally force food down your throat and if you think im joking just know that I don't joke around\*\*\*then he put the plate on top of the side drawer and he walked out then Kazi blinked and she inhaled loudly as tears gushed out and she just let it all out crying painfully....Downstairs Castiel watched Buhle on his laptop packing her clothes in a travelling bag and he knew what she was about to do...then he took his burner phone and he dialed her number and watched as she picked her phone and hesitantly answered it\*\*\*Buhle: helloCastiel: how does it feel to have blood in your handsBuhle?\*\*\*he watched her gasp with her hands shaking andhe chuckled\*\*\*Buhle: who...who are you and what the fuck are you talking about?Castiel: that's not important lady but what is important

is me having a recording of one of your hitman confessing before he died painfully\*\*\*he lied to her and he saw her sit down on the edge of the bed and he smirked\*\*\*Buhle: i...I don't know what you are talking about....if you have nothing to do with your life then go masturbate or something nx\*\*\*she dropped the call and Castiel laughed, then he watched her pacing up and down with her hands on top of her head then he send her a message and it read;"since you think im kidding then how about I send the recording to your dearest husband and lets see if he'll have the same thoughts as you....just so you know Kazi's babies died so you are a dead woman lady....i mean D...E...A...D dead!"\*\*\*then he also put in laughing emojis and he send the sms to her and watched her sink down to the floor as she read the sms....the two guys she hired to kill Kazi were killed brutally and she knew its possible that they confessed to be spared cause whoever killed them seemed

dangerous that even the police are shocked at the state the bodies and the car were...then his phone rang and he chuckled and answered it\*\*\*Castiel: lady im not done with jerking myself up you knowBuhle: what...what do you want?\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*Castiel: I'll let you know in due time so in the meantime don't even think of running away cause I have eyes and ears everywhere....just be a good wife to that bull of yours and pray he doesn't find outthat you killed his babies...you better answer the callwhen I call or else....\*\*\*he chuckled then he dropped the call and he watched her crying with her body shaking and he closed his laptop and he sat back and smirked then he closed his eyes\*\*\*Castiel: Juana you better talk to that useless womanYOU forced me to nurse back to health to eat or she'll join you wherever you are and you know im not joking....talk to her or I'll traumatize her to a pointof no returned nx\*\*\*he said still with his eyes closed\*\*\*Castiel: and tell

her im not a nice man and when I say I'll do something I do it for real so if she doesn't snap out of it by tomorrow...\*\*\*he chuckled a "she doesn't fucken know how I can get" chuckle \*\*\*Castiel: she needs to heal fast because I want that baby so talk to her\*\*\*then he hummed an ancient song his mother used to hum whenever she was trying to calm herself down\*\*\*...\*\*\*\*AT THANDI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*\*Three days ago James' aunt called gogo and told them they are coming for a meeting with the vilakazis since Thandi told her when she called to ask why she haven't arrived as yet in Limpopo and Thandi told her she won't sit on the mattress for James cause she broke up with James so the aunt told Gogo they will arrive three days later to hold a meeting with them... and now its three days later and they are all sitting in the lounge, it's the Mashabas ( James aunt, Joe, his eldest brother Jackson and James' two uncles ) and the Vilakazis ( gogo, mkhulu, Jabu, Ray,



Heath and Ruslan) Thandi's mother refused to come to the meeting cause she said she used to warn Thandi about James but she thought she knew it all so she's not getting involved cause she has never acknowledged their "supposed" marriage and she didn't even chowher lobola money so those who did ( being gogo andmkhulu) they should see how they handle everything.....Asfor Ruslan well he didn't give a fuck about not being family....he just came in and sat down leaving Jabu and Heath chuckling while Gogo and Mkhulu saw right through him and they just shook their heads and let him because deep down they knew he and Thandi were seeing each other and that he's stubborn....as for Gogo she knew he practiced white-witchcraft and that deep down he's a good man so she decided to stay out of it and let fate play its part \*\*\*Mkhulu: now that we are all here we can start\*\*\*Joe cleared his throat\*\*\*Joe: askies madala ( sorry old man)

but I know everyone here except for this guy, is he family? Ray: are you here to get to know our family members or something else brought you here man\*\*\*he said with a firm tone and Joe raised his eyebrow at him\*\*\*Joe: look here man we are all family here so I wanted to know if he's also family Jabu: o reng wena snai....o family ya mang wena....bona mo o sa tsamaya o botsa batho gore o family ya rona verstaan ntja and dai man ke family ya rona so zipa dai molomo wa gao ( what are you saying you fool....you are part of who's family?....look here don't go around telling people that you are part of our family, do you understand dog and that man is our family member so shut up) and let's get this over and done with nxJoe: don't talk to m...James uncle: Joel miyela man ( keep quiet man)\*\*\*Joe kept quiet and so did Jabu but they gave each other nasty looks and Heath chuckled\*\*\*Uncle1: you can continue VilakaziMkhulu: well since you all called for this

meeting Mashaba you should start Aunt: im the one who called for this meeting so I'll speak.....what I want is for Thandi to tell me to my face why she isn't in Limpopo as we speak mourning for her husband like she should\*\*\*Ruslan looked at the aunt and he immediately disliked her...the aura around her felt evil and as for Thandi she looked at her grandma and her grandmother nodded then Thandi cleared her throat and looked at James' aunt\*\*\*Thandi: like I told you aunty, I cant sit on the mattress for James cause we broke up way before he was killed by HIS BABY-MAMA\*\*\*she emphasized the last part\*\*\*Aunt: broke up?....is that your excuse Thandi: its not an excuse aunty it's a fact...you can even ask Joe cause he knows we broke up\*\*\*the aunt clapped her hands once laughing and Ruslan clenched his jaws looking at her\*\*\*Aunt: yah neh hai James otese xilo ntsena a re yi ngwansate wa yena....xilo ntsena ai... yeses vo James na vona

va famba va doba doba man yeses nx (James brought us a useless thing as a wife...a useless thing....yeeses James decided to go around picking useless things man)Jabu: askies\*\*\*He said moving to the edge of his seat\*\*\*Jabu: uthini? ( what did you say?)\* \*\*he said looking at the aunt and she made a disgusted face\*\*\*Gogo: hai JabuJabu: wooh gogo let this kokwane repeat what she said about ThandiUncle2: can we stop all these and go back to the reason we are all here assomblief (please)Jabu: wooh uncle vag (uncle wait).....\*\*\*then he looked at the aunty\*\*\*Jabu: eeh kokwane ( ey old lady) I said repeat what you said about ThandiJackson: don't talk to my aunt like that boy\*\*\*he said with a scratchy voice and Jabu looked at him with a pissed off look\*\*\*Mkhulu: ok boys stop it assomblief ( please)...this isnot the time or placeJabu: fine Khulus but die mense ba sa tla mo from Giyani ba kgokgolloga ka maShangaan bag a bona

batlo re tella mo....a se Giyani mo, a re loye hierso...mo re go tllhaba ka bullet wa no swa once (these people shouldn't come here all the way from Giyani with their Shangaan bag to come mess with us...this is not Giyani, we don't do witchcraft here....we shoot you and you die immediately)Joe: wanyela san (fuck you boy)Heath: go nnyela mmao san ( fuck your mother boy)\*\*\*he said with a straight face and Joe got up\*\*\*Joe: o reng ka my oulady san ( what did you say about my mother boy)\*\*\*Heath also got up and Jackson got up too and so did Ray...as for Ruslan his eyes were on Thandi the whole time, reading her emotions cause he wanted her as calm as possible\*\*\*Heath: wena o reng ka broer ya ka ( you...what did you say about my brother)Ray: ok ya'll need to settle down...now!\*\*\*he said warning them and Mkhulu shook his head looking down and they all sat down giving each other nasty looks\*\*\*Uncle1: ok lets discuss

what brought us here so we can leave before things get out of hand\*\*\*he was one of those sophisticated men and he was well off\*\*\*Aunt: wait bhut Mzamane....jaha leri rere yini yi sisi wa mina? ( wait brother Mzamane...what did this boy say about my sister)\*\*\*she said getting up taking off her shoulder scarf ( a don't touch) and she tied it around her waist\*\*\*Mzamane: will you calm down!Aunt: calm down?....calm down? look here I won't sit here and listen to this thugs insult my late sister while I sit aroundHeath: so what are you gonna do mmmh....fight us\*\*\*he said with a bored look on his face and the aunt chuckled\*\*\*Aunt: heh heh ok..ok...well then listen here little girl\*\*\*she said looking at Thandi\*\*\*Aunt: ....this house belongs to my late son so is the car you are driving so get up and pack your rugs and get the hell out!Gogo: woah stop right there....first of all your son wasn't rich and that car you claim as your son's was bought by my grandson Heath

and he gave it to Thandi as a birthday gift and everything that is inside this house most of them were house....heh Thandi what do they call it again?Thandi: house warming gifts gogo\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*Gogo: ehe khona lokhu....house warming gifts so don't talk as if your son was some rich guy my granddaughter was feeding off\*\*\*she said getting worked up\*\*\*Mkhulu: mkami yehlisa umoya (my wife calm down)Gogo: baba I won't sit and watch this woman attack my granddaughter.....i kept quiet when he kept on hurting Thandi countless times and his family did nothing about it and I thought maybe is because shewas a girlfriend and now even though he came and paid ilobolo for her he still hurt her by sleeping around and he also got the girl pregnant and insteadof understanding why she can't sit on the mattress you come here to insult herJabu: batshele gogo!Aunt: maybe she wasn't woman enough that's why he went

outside\*\*\*Thandi closed her eyes tight as that hit her hard and Ruslan got up\*\*\*Ruslan: ENOUGH!\*\*\*he said looking angry\*\*\*Ruslan: IF YOU HAVE NOTHING BETTER TO SAY THEN KEEP QUIET!\*\*\* He said looking at the aunt and they all kept quiet.....he also kept quiet a bit trying to calm himself down\*\*\*Ruslan: first of all your son was a useless piece of shit, he hurt Thandi more than you can even count...he was a serial cheat and you as his family never called him to order, he even hurt his sons by constantly lying to them about coming to see them so don't come here and talk nonsense!\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and Thandi wiped her tears that kept falling\*\*\*Ray: Ruu...Ruslan: you should be here begging Thandi to help ya'll hide the kind of man your son was which is a useless, no-backbone whatsoever, weak piece of shit and not what you are doing nowMzamane: she should help us?....hey wena she's ourdaughter in law, so



don't stand there and talk nonsense\*\*\*Uncle number two got up\*\*\*Uncle: excuse me I need a smoke\*\*\*then he walked out shaking his head\*\*\*Mkhulu: people please calm down!Aunt: calm down for what.....you are all sitting there pretending as if Thandi is the first woman to get hurt...we all know marriage is no walk in a park....yesJames hurt her so what!Jabu: SO WHAT?.... UTHI SO WHAT?....AWUNYIPERHAPS HEH ?Jackson: don't talk to my aunt like that boy, this is your final warning!Jabu: or what?\*\*\*he said getting up\*\*\*Jackson: ni ta ku tshova nenge mfo ( I'll break your leg man)\*\*\*he threatened him\*\*\*Ruslan: hey.....just because you have muscles doesn't mean you are strong, and just because you are an ex-military man doesn't mean you are all that....there are useless and dumb stupid men in the military so shut the hell up and sit down!\*\*\*Jackson took a step closer to Ruslan and Ruu clenched his jaws\*\*\*Ruslan: Ray take this cockroach off my

face before I squash it\*\*\*he said through his teeth and Ray got up and stood between them\*\*\*Ray: sit!\*\*\*he said to Jackson\*\*\*Jackson: don't fucken tell me what to doMzamane: Jackson tshama hanse man (Jackson sit down)...sit!Ray: yeah Jackson you heard your uncle...sit!Aunt: whose side are you on Mzamane heh...so you're ok with these thugs disrespecting us like this?Mzamane: we didn't come here to fight man...we came here to know why Thandi refused to mourn for her husband not all this fighting\*\*\*the aunt clapped her hands once and she chuckled \*\*\*\*Mkhulu: thank you Mashaba....Sambulo no Ruslan sit down too\*\*\*they slowly did looking at Jackson who was angry cause Ruslan disrespected him\*\*\*Mzamane: now Thandi you do know traditionally that you are still our daughter in law so the fact that you and James broke up doesn't mean anything, when you two broke up you should've informed bothfamilies firstThandi:

if I was the one dead would you say the same thing to James uncle?\*\*\*she said looking at him and Ruslan smirked\*\*\*Thandi: Joe here knew everything that was going on between James and I and as an elder brother he didn't even bother calling James into order or to even call a family meeting for us....when he called to tell me about James' passing he said his baby mama killed him that she finally killed him meaning he knew where James was all along...Joe: hey don't blame me for your failed marriage ok\*\*\*Thandi laughed bitterly\*\*\*Thandi: you all never liked me or accepted me as James wife.....\*\*\*she turned to the aunt\*\*\*Thandi: you aunty you used to insult me every chance you got\*\*\*then she looked at Joe\*\*\*Thandi: and you Joe you used to remind me how your family warned James about marrying someone like me and that I don't "fit" in your family\*\*\*she said with tears running down her cheeks and Ruslan's hands started shaking with anger

cause he doesn't want to see Thandi cry and Ray saw him then he whispered that he should calm down\*\*\*Thandi: and now you are here forcing me to mourn for a man that never respected me, that never even acknowledged my worth\*\*\*the aunt laughed\*\*\*Aunt: vona la sesinyana, you are not the first bride to be hated by the in laws and you are not the first bride to be hurt by her husband and you also are not the first and won't be the last bride to be cheated on...now here is the thing, it's either you accept to do right by your late husband or we disown you and your kids and I'm sure you know what that meansMkhulu: haibo!\*\*\*he exclaimed\*\*\*Gogo: mihlolo!\*\*\*Heath chuckled shaking his head and Jabu shook his head not believing what she was saying and as for Ruslan he was looking at Thandi while Ray was looking at him to see his reaction\*\*\*Thandi: you can't do thatAunt: yes we can now what is it gonna be?Gogo: niya hlanya manje...what kind

of a family are you mmmmh?\*\*\*she said getting worked up\*\*\*Aunt: now what is it gonna be sesinyana, and know that us disowning you and your sons means even if your boys someday will need an ancestral ceremony to be done for them we won't do it in fact you will be banned from setting your feet akaya (back home)\*\*\*then Thandi started crying\*\*\*Gogo: so now you are using her children to do what you want, uyiskhohlakali somfazi wena.....a despicable woman!Mkhulu: Mashaba\*\*\*he said looking at uncle Mzamane but the uncle just raised his right eyebrow with an attitude then Ruslan got up\*\*\*Ruslan: gramps leave them....these people came with an agenda, in fact they came with plan A and plan B....with plan A they used James house and other stupid things to make Thandi agree to what they want and they failed cause she's not budging.....and their plan B is using her sons which is low even for useless people like themJackson: just shut

up and sit down man cause you talking  
nonsense\*\*\*Ruslan gave him an intimidating  
stare until Jackson looked away\*\*\*Jabu:  
Mshikaro waitisi leShangaan le le thoma go  
ntlatsa phinya le melomo ekare o sunne mbaola  
(Mshikaro this Shangaan is starting to piss me  
off with his big lips as if he kissed mbaola “a  
metal container for holding burning coals”  
)Ruslan: from what I know gramps is that this  
ugly woman as James’ mother can sit on that  
mattress ifThandi refuses right\*\*\*Mkhulu  
nodded\*\*\*Gogo: yes my son she can so I don’t  
understand why she’s doing all this nx....uyi  
skhohlakali somfazi lo nx (she’s a despicable  
woman)Ray: that’s because she’s power hungry  
and a control freakAunt: askies?Ruslan: and she  
holds all these men by their ballsJackson: fuck  
you...you hear me fuck you!Joe: how dare you  
insult us like this?Mzamane: now I see why you  
told James not to marry this thing nxAunt: well  
since it looks like you made your

decisionsesinyana, I want you to pack maguja a wena (your things) and get out of my son's house\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled and Mkhulu shook his head andhe got up and walked out then Ruslan went to a crying Thandi and he helped her up and he went to gogo and helped her up too\*\*\*Gogo: uyabona wena skhohlakali somfazi (you see you evil woman)...your day will come you...\*\*\*Ray interrupted her\*\*\*Ray: Gogo don't exchange words with witches...you are prayerful woman and a respected one at that so don't taint yourself with this dirty thingAunt: GET OUT....GO AND PACK YOUR RUGS AND LEAVE MY SON'S HOUSE YOU PATHETIC THING....HUMA! (leave)Ruslan: Tee go with gogo and pack your clothes andthe boys clothes too\*\*\*she nodded while wiping her tears as they kept on falling and Gogo went with her to her bedroom\*\*\*Jabu: lena le le three le marete ( you three dickheads), you gonna pay for this....le e gatile ko moseleng dimpya ke

lena( you messed with the wrong one you useless dogs)... by the time he's done with you...\*\*\*he pointed at Ruslan\*\*\*Jabu: even your ancestors won't recognize you....and the fact that im telling you all this ka sekgowa means im dead serious\*\*\*then he walked out\*\*\*Jackson: cockroaches don't scare us boy, ha te doomer te fa ( we spray them with doom and they die)\*\*\*he said looking at Ruslan and Heath laughed then he got up and started whistling with his hands in his pockets\*\*\*Heath: you know big Ray im trying to calm down so Caesar doesn't come out but this fucker keeps on pressing my wrong buttons\*\*\*he said chuckling\*\*\*Heath: but its all good....our day will come right?Ray: you bet it will\*\*\*then he went after Thandi and Gogo leaving Ruslan, Ray and the Mashabas\*\*\*Aunt: you don't scare me boy\*\*\*she said looking at Ruslan\*\*\*Ruslan: ቦጣም ጥሩ የሆነ መሆን ስብስቧለ! (you should be scared)\*\*\*he said in the forbidden language and



his eyes changed from his normal colour to light green then they went back to normal and the Mashabas felt cold shills run down their spines\*\*\*Ray: you shouldn't have used the boys to hurt Thandi....you shouldn't have\*\*\*then he leaned back on the couch and he looked at them as they looked at Ruslan looking a bit spooked\*\*...\*\*\*\*OUTSIDE\*\*\*\*Jabu: dimpya tse (those dogs) don't know me Khulus...especially lebrakane le le ba reng ke Jackson le seriba sa mpya gape le melomo ekare o gotse a letsa diprompta nx rubbish ( especially thatsmall dog called Jackson with a big forehead and big lips as if he grew up blowing on trumpets )\*\*\*Mkhulu just looked down and he shook his head laughing and James' uncle joined him...they were standing together on the veranda with James' uncle smoking\*\*\*Uncle2: be careful man...valoya vano lavaya ( they do witchcraft)Jabu: mxm a dinchikini dimpya tsele nna (mxm they don't scare me)Mkhulu: like

Ruslan said they came here with an agenda JabulaniUncle2: and the only reason im here with them is because our mother forced me to be part of all this nonsense....and those two don't even like me they just tolerate me cause we shared the same womb...a ne loye mina ( I don't do witchcraft) so I don't qualify to be in their circle\*\*\*Jabu looked at him surprised\*\*\*Uncle: my advice....give them James' things since Thandi refused to do what they want or to be controlled by them or else they might hurt Thandi using the boys, remember those boys have James' blood running through their veins so its easy to bewitch them\*\*\*Mkhulu sighed\*\*\*Mkhulu: yeses angikholelwa ukuthi lokhu kwenzeka (I can't believe this is happening)Uncle: money or peace of mind, your choice.... and even if you choose peace of mind still make sure Thandi and the boys are protected, and I hope you know what I mean\*\*\*then he continued to

smoke with Jabu staring at him  
shocked\*\*\*...\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED  
LOCATION\*\*\*\*\*Kazi was just staring into  
space after her crying session, when she heard  
a voice whispering next to her\*\*\*Voice: Kazi!\*\*\*  
she blinked and turned her head and there was no  
one, then she sighed thinking she was now  
losing her mind but then the voice whispered  
again\*\*\*Voice: Kazi.... everything is going to be  
alright please eat....\*\*\*she quickly looked  
around but she was all alone....her heart then  
started beating fast\*\*\*Voice: eat or he'll kill you,  
you are no use to him when you are weak....eat  
please....\*\*\*she tried to move but she felt pain  
and she laid there shaking with her eyes  
wondering around\*\*\*...#hit-like-pls and  
comment #MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆

\*18SLV INSERT...04...\*

**\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*\*\***Castiel was at the mall, he went to buy groceries since now he can't only feed off blood since Kazi is there so he's gonna have to eat solid food for his skin to seem normal...anyway after buying groceries she decided to go buy toiletries and clothes for Kazi cause he can't stomach the thought of her wearing Juana's clothes, after his shopping spree he felt his presence...his stomach knotted and he swallowed hard, his eyes wondered around until they landed on him...He was with two boys and a woman and he still looked good, well better than good cause he looked like he's been hitting the gym for some time, then he saw him stop walking as if he's suddenly frozen and he knew he felt his presence too then he walked away blending in with the crowd making

sure he doesn't see him\*\*\*Castiel: fuck he's here....wait are those boys his and the woman is she his wife...fuck!\*\*\*he said to himself but then he stopped as he felt his presence getting closer and closer and he quickly went inside a boutique for woman's clothes that was closer to him and he hid there with his heart pounding hard against his chest and he pretended to be looking for something to buy....he then peeped to see if he was still around and he saw him standing there looking around and he swallowed hard cause he missed him so damn much but he knew he might kill him if he even shows himself for double crossing him\*\*\*Castiel: leave Mahamadou!\*\*\*he spoke with him using his mind, something they were taught by their late mother\*\*\*Ruslan: so it's really you....you've been here all along you bastard\*\*\*Castiel swallowed hard\*\*\*Castiel: just go about your business and pretend that this shit never happened\*\*\*Ruslan

chuckled\*\*\*Ruslan: show yourself man or are you now some scared little bitch\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*Castiel: rather a scared little bitch than a dead one little bro Ruslan: where is the girl Castie

Castiel: I don't know what you are talking about

Ruslan: you picked the wrong one and now beasts are after you and you know beasts and vampires don't mix...now where the hell is that girl?\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*Castiel: there are no

beasts here Madou only small town witchcraft and gangsterism\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*Ruslan: nope I personally know a family of real beasts and they are looking for that girl\*\*\*Castiel

frowned\*\*\*Castiel: you're lying man, you want me to come out so you can kill me im not stupid Madou ok Ruslan: her baby daddy is a hitman to the beast family and they are coming for you and believe me its just a matter of time\*\*\*Castiel kept quiet thinking\*\*\*Ruslan:

Castiel!\*\*\*he continued to keep quiet\*\*\*Ruslan:  
Cass!Castiel: why are you telling me all this  
Madou I mean you hate me Ruslan: so that I will  
be the one to kill you, that's why...Castiel  
thought as much Ruslan: now let that girl go  
Castiel: I'd rather have the beasts' blood on my  
hands than my own brother's blood Ruslan:  
Cass don't do this Castiel: look man im sorry for  
choosing Juana over you and guess what  
karma dealt with me by taking her so don't  
make me fight you, just go about your business  
and let me deal with my shit Ruslan: she....she's  
dead?\*\*\*Castiel chuckled bitterly\*\*\*Castiel:  
yeah and now im all alone...no family.... nothing  
and that girl can change all that Ruslan: no no  
no Castiel listen to me....\*\*\*he interrupted  
him\*\*\*Castiel: if the beasts succeed in killing  
me, which I doubt they will then bury me upside  
down so that the world can kiss my fossil  
ass....adios brother\*\*\*then he looked around the  
shop and everyone was minding their business

then he checked the security cameras and they weren't facing him then he apparated from where he was to his car in the underground parking lot and he loaded his things in the car, got in and drove off\*\*\*Ruslan: shit!\*\*\*then he took out his phone and dialed Thandi's phone\*\*\*Thandi: hey Ruslan: amour where are you and the boys nowThandi: at WoolworthsRuslan: ok im on my wayThandi: ok\*\*\*they ended the call and he dialed Ray's numbers\*\*\*Ray: bros Ruslan: I just had a run in with Castiel Ray: wait what?Ruslan: yeah...well I didn't see him but I felt his presence and we mind-communicated and he does have the girl and he doesn't give a damn that the Khumalo's are looking for her Ray: shit!Ruslan: I think we should break into the girl's house and get one of her things that she usually uses so I can use it to track her down and maybe I might find out where she is Ray: ok I'll take care of the break in and you'll handle the rest\*\*\*Ruslan



sighed\*\*\*Ruslan: ok...i gotta go we will talk later Ray: ok\*\*\*then they ended the call and Ruslan went to Thandi and the boys and when Mpilo saw him he ran to him and Ruslan picked him up and they went to Thandi and Mpendulo\*\*\*Ruslan: you good\*\*\*Thandi nodded and he kissed the top of her head and he went to Mpendulo\*\*\*Ruslan: you see anything you like champ\*\*\*Mpendulo just shrugged and Ruslan sighed....he was worried about him and the sudden change of his mood....well he knew the reason behind his change of moods but he was worried that his father's death might turn him into someone bitter and with anger issues cause he hardly says anything these days and he also could see that something else other than his father's death troubles him, then he went to Thandi and he put Mpilo down\*\*\*Ruslan: I need to have a talk with Mpe privately....im worried about him\*\*\*Thandi sighed\*\*\*Thandi: im also worried about him ...he hardly says

anything these days Ruslan: so you'll be good with Mr Pilot\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*Ruslan: ok\*\*\*then he took out his black card and he gave it to her\*\*\*Thandi: ummm Ruu I cant....\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*Ruslan: you not about to reject my money amour, just spoil yourself and Mr. pilot here and as for Mpe I got it covered ok\*\*\*she sighed and nodded\*\*\*Ruslan: call me when you are done\*\*\*then he kissed her forehead and whispered to her\*\*\*Ruslan: I love you so damn much\*\*\*he said with his one hand on her belly and she whispered that she loves him too then he crouched down \*\*\*Ruslan: your mom is gonna buy you anything you want while I take Mpe to the restroom ok\*\*\*Mpilo frowned\*\*\*Mpilo: is he afraid to go there alone like me\*\*\*Ruslan smiled and he nodded\*\*\*Ruslan: remember I once told you that there are bad guys that look for kids that walk around alone inside the mall and they steal them\*\*\*Mpilo nodded\*\*\*Ruslan: so I don't want

them to steal Mpe so im gonna take him to the restroom while you continue to shop with mom  
ok Mpilo: ok Ruslan: and don't leave her side  
okMpilo: ok I promise I wontRuslan: that's my boy....and tell your mom to buy you that big toy truck you saw at that other shop ok\*\*\*Mpilo smiled wide\*\*\*Mpilo: really?\*\*\*he said all excited and Ruslan nodded smiling the Mpilo hugged him and Ruslan laughed so did Thandi then she got emotional looking at how happy Mpilo is and how selfless and kindhearted Ruslan is\*\*\*Ruslan: im sure you heard that mommy\*\*\*she nodded and he kissed her forehead and he went to Mpe who was sitting down playing a game on his phone now\*\*\*Ruslan: let's go champ\*\*\*he put a pause on the game he was playing and looked up at him\*\*\*Mpe: where?Ruslan: you'll see...come lets go\*\*\*he got up and followed Ruslan\*\*\*Mpe: what about mom and Mpilo Ruslan: we will catch up with them later Mpe: ummm ok\*\*\*they

walked out of the shop\*\*\*...\*\*\*they bought everything Mpendulo wanted and now they were sitting at a restaurant, Mpendulo ordered a burger and milkshake while Ruslan ordered a meaty meal with a glass of beer....Mpendulo looked excited with what he got and you could tell he couldn't wait to get home and try on the clothes and the gargets Ruslan bought for him too...as for Thandi and Mpilo they were at spurs enjoying their meal too and she was communicating with Ruslan all along\*\*\*Ruslan: champ Mpe: uncle Ruslan: what's wrong\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*Mpe: huh? ummm with what?Ruslan: im not your mom Mpe so you don't have to pretend with me Mpe: nothing is wrong with me now can we drop it please\*\*\*Ruslan looked at him intensely\*\*\*Ruslan: boy when you look at me what do you see\*\*\*Mpendulo didn't look up at him\*\*\*Ruslan: hey look at me!\*\*\*he said with a stern voice and Mpendulo looked at him\*\*\*Ruslan: I know something is bothering

you and you gonna tell what it is\*\*\*he said with a serious tone and Mpe looked down to his food\*\*\*Ruslan: im waiting Mpe: I heard mama and gogo talking and mama was crying\*\*\* "shit" is what Ruslan thought\*\*\*Ruslan: im listening Mpe: that dad's family cut us off...more like they disowned us because mom didn't want to do what they want\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*Ruslan: and how does that make you feelMpe: angry at mom\*\*\*Ruslan frowned\*\*\*Ruslan: why?Mpe: because if she did what they wanted her to do they wouldn't have disowned us\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*Ruslan: tell me here....whenever you don't do what your mom wants you to do does she disown you or "cut you off"\*\*\*Mpe shook his head no\*\*\*Ruslan: do you even know what they wanted her to do\*\*\*he shook his head no\*\*\*Ruslan: so if they told her to strip naked and run around the street just so they don't disown you three she should do it or if they said they want you and your little brother to move to

Limpopo for good without her, she should agree  
Mpe: no....no she shouldn't\*\*\*he said with a  
frown on his face\*\*\*Ruslan: Mpe you are the  
eldest son to your mom and it should be your  
job to make sure she's always happy and that  
no one makes her cry....do you like it when she  
cries\*\*\*he shook his head no\*\*\*Ruslan:  
remember you once told me you once heard  
your granny from your father's side of the family  
swearing at your mom over the phone when it  
was on loud speaker and after the call she  
cried\*\*\*Mpendulo swallowed with tears filling  
his eyes when she remembered his  
grandmother's words and her mother's  
sobs\*\*\*Ruslan: so now you can imagine what  
they said to her this time but instead of being  
there for her you are angry that she didn't do  
what they wanted her to do\*\*\*Tears ran down  
his cheeks\*\*\*Mpe: i....i Ruslan: shhh its  
ok....listen here my boy im not gonna beat  
around the bush and lie to you.... your father's

family don't like your mother cause they think she was with your dad for his money and they forgot that your mother's brothers swim in money....she accepted your father the way he was and she lived in a two bedroom house cause that's what your father could afford to buy and she never made him feel less of a man because of that....your uncles could've brought her a big house with a swimming pool and many bedrooms but she loved your father and didn't care about material things\*\*\*Mpendulo swallowed hard\*\*\*Ruslan: but your father's family doesn't see that all they want is your father's money and they are doing extreme things to make sure they hurt your mother because of that.... look your mother is a special woman, she's one in a million and she needs to be appreciated and not hurt ok Mpendulo: ok Ruslan: as for them disowning you, don't worry they'll change their mind and I'll make sure of that and it looks like your other grandfather

doesn't agree with them disowning you and your brother so relax Mpendulo: im...im sorry  
Ruslan: hey look just love your mom and never let anyone come between you, your mother and little brother, protect them and make sure they are always happy and you'll shame the devil ok  
Mpendulo: ok\*\*\*then he brushed his head\*\*\*Ruslan: I love you ok champ Mpendulo: I love you too uncle Ruslan: and always come to me whenever something is bothering you, don't ever keep things to yourself or else you'll die in silence where else I could've helped you  
ok\*\*\*Mpendulo nodded wiping his tears off\*\*\*Ruslan: good now let's eat so we can go join your mother and little brother...\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*\*Castiel Walked inside the room Kazi was in and he went to open the curtain and window and he put shopping bags that had her toiletries and new clothes on top of a table\*\*\*Castiel: have you snapped out of it lady?\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard



and she didn't answer him....she wondered how does this guy expect her to snap out of losing her unborn babies just like that and why did he help her and save her life.... she wondered what he wanted from her cause he doesn't look like a "father Theresa" who goes around helping people without wanting anything in return\*\*\*Kazi: are you going to kill me?\*\*\*he raised his one eyebrow looking at her with a smirk on his face amused by her question\*\*\*Castiel: should i?\*\*\*she swallowed hard...."who says that" she thought\*\*\*Castiel: should I?\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*Castiel: ok then I won't....for now....so have you snapped out of it?\*\*\*she nodded lying, I mean who snaps out of losingtheir babies\*\*\*Castiel: even though you are lying but I'll let it slide cause I have a lot on my mind\*\*\*she swallowed again\*\*\*Castiel: it's time for your bath....you fucken stink....i'm sure it's that pad you are wearing, it's probably full by now....you didn't even try to get out of the

bed to go change it, what kind of a woman are you yeses\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks as he helped her sit up....she flinched with pain but he didn't care\*\*\*Castiel: take it out...im going to run a bath for you\*\*\*he went to the en-suite bathroom and she let out a sob feeling embarrassed, hurt, sad, angry and broken\*\*\*...\*\*\*she was now clean and the bed sheets were also changed and she was eating slowly as he watched her\*\*\*Castiel: why a married man?\*\*\*she stopped eating but she didn't raise her head to look at him\*\*\*Castiel: I ask and you answer lady.... trust me you don't wanna make me angry\*\*\*she closed her eyes then she opened them again\*\*\*Kazi: I didn't know he was marriedCastiel: bullshitKazi: I found out when I showed my now ex friend his picture and she said he's her cousin's husbandCastiel: damn and let me guess she turned on you\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*Castiel: but then im sure you

continued to fuck him even after finding out he's married right\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*Castiel: typical cliché stories of desperate bitches....I mean couldn't you find someone single\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*Castiel: and now the wife is gonna go to jail or probably be killed by that bull of hers just because she acted without thinking....i mean you were fucking her husband for fucks sake and you even fell pregnant as if you didn't know about fucken condoms or what you wanted to trap him with a baby?..... and now she's the one that's going to pay...nc nc nc\*\*\*Kazi continued to cry as his words pierced through her already shattered heart\*\*\*Castiel: you and that bull should be the ones going to jail for hurting that woman but no.... no wonder Juana refused to continue to live in this fucked up world, it's because of people like you nx\*\*\*then he looked at her\*\*\*Castiel: eat!\*\*\*she quickly picked her fork and continued to eat

with tears all over her face\*\*\*Castiel: if it's not your mother and stepfather selling you to me it's you fucking married men but then I guess you took after mommy cause she also fucked a married man and now she's married to him as the second wife.....wait was that your plan tooKazi: please stop\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and he chuckled\*\*\*Castiel: why, im only telling you the truthKazi: plea....\*\*\*she stopped and looked up at him\*\*\*Kazi: wait my...my mother and stepfather sold me to you\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*Castiel: yeah that's why you are here, I own you....isn't it lovely?\*\*\*he laughed and he got up and walked out leaving Kazi frozen...he went downstairs and cold air passed him and he stopped walking\*\*\*Castiel: Juana...baby?Voice: I have always seen the good side of you eventhough everyone saw a monster and it pains me to say that today I finally saw you for who you really are, a monster\*\*\*she whispered on his ear and he

frowned\*\*\*Castiel: wh...what?.....you don't mean thatVoice: you didn't have to say all that to her and just so you know...you hurt me more than you hurt her when you said all that to her...I can't believe I fell in love with a heartless person like you\*\*\*he swallowed hard\*\*\*Castiel: Juana you don't mean that\*\*\*nothing\*\*\*Castiel: Juana?...baby?\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*Castiel: JUANA!\*\*\*still nothing then he got angry\*\*\*Castiel: fuck you Juana you hear me fuck you....im busy doing all this shit because of you, I saved her life and im also taking care of her for you so what more do you want mmmmh....what the fuck do you want from me you dead bitch!\*\*\*he shouted looking angry and also hurt by what she said....she has never called him a monster before when she was alive\*\*\*Castiel: im a monster right?....then watch as this monster deal with that fucken bitch\*\*\*he turned and went back upstairs and he walked in and found Kazi crying and he

grabbed her by her throat and his eyes changed color and became all black so did his skin, it became pale instantly and his long fangs came out and Kazi screamed\*\*\*Castiel: WHY DOES JUANA ALWAYS TAKE YOUR SIDE MMMM....SHE'S MY WIFE SO SHE'S SUPPOSED TO TAKE MY FUCKEN SIDE NOW WHY IS SHE ALWAYS DEFENDING YOU?Kazi: Casstiel you....you are scaring me\*\*\*she said shaking with fear then he squeezed his hand tight around her neck and she tried fighting him off but he was just too strong...she struggled breathing until she saw her whole life flashing in front of her and her eyes rolled back then he openedhis mouth wide ready to feed on her then a force hit Castiel hard and he flew across the room and he hit the wall hard and he landed on the floor and passed out immediately....Kazi then took the IV off her wristand she got off the bed and limped to the door....she opened it and got out then she walked down the stairs slowly

until she reached downstairs and she rushed to the door and after she opened the door she froze...the house was surrounded by thick trees and outside it looked like some ancient abandoned building, it was like one of those houses you see on horror movies...her body shook as she looked at her surroundings and she limped through those thick trees hoping that she will find a road ahead or find any help from anyone\*\*\*...\*\*\*\*AT RAY AND MBALI'S

HOUSE\*\*\*\*\*Ray was busy pacing up and down\*\*\*Ray: so he's really here and he has the girl....fuck!Ruslan: we need to find her man, I tried to warn him but it was like I was talking to a brick....now he's gonna be ready for the beasts and I know it won't end well....imagine a vampire who is also a wizard manRay: this shit is getting complicated each secondRuslan: yeah\*\*\*he rubbed his head and he sat down\*\*\*Ray: why did you warn him.....i thought you hated him and wanted him dead\*\*\*Ruslan

didn't say anything\*\*\*Ray: let me guess no matter how fucked up he is and no matter how much of a nuisance he is he's still your elder brother right\*\*\*Ruslan didn't say anything he just clenched his jaws\*\*\*Ray: you don't want him dead do you?\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*Ruslan: can we not talk about that son of a vampire and let's talk about my plan for James' family\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*Ray: I've come through for Heath so many times that I've even lost count whenever he fucked up pretty bad while we were growing up...i have wishedso many times to put a bullet on his forehead each time he messed up bad cause I was the one cleaning up his mess but I couldn't cause at the same time my love for him as my little brother and the bond we share grew stronger every time and I wouldn't trade him for anything man so I understandand I got your back in whatever you decide to do even though is to help him\*\*\*he sat down too\*\*\*Ray: so what do you have planned for the



Mashabas\*\*\*Ruslan smirked a little\*\*\*Ruslan:  
im gonna traumatize them for eternity, and the  
world will never forget James Mashaba's  
funeral everRay: what do you mean by  
that?\*\*\*he smiled\*\*\*Ruslan: watch what I do to  
those who hurt Thandi and the boys...#hit-like-  
pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....05

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*Ray just shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: whatever you plan on doing please bros remember Star, Thandi and the boys will be there

\*\*\*well Amo and Mbali won't be able to make it because their babies are still young for them to be going to funerals\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't worry they won't see anything

Ray: his home?

Ruslan: no....the graveyard

\*\*\*he said smiling\*\*\*

Ray: fuck no

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: fuck yes

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Castiel woke up holding his head then he sat up straight and he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: what are you Juana, I mean you're supposed to be a ghost but here you are using special powers to throw me across the room

\*\*\*nothing then he looked over at the bed and it was empty and he chuckled shaking his heavy head then he closed his eyes and searched for her and he found her limping along the thick bushes and he sighed shaking his head....he has a physical link to her through her blood from that day he licked her blood and almost fed on

her....he then connected to her mind \*\*\*

Castiel: you are deep inside the jungle and there are wild animals and they are hungry as hell, especially man-eating snakes and tigers

\*\*\*Kazi stopped walking and she looked around as she heard Castiel's voice with her heart beating fast....she was in extreme pain but she didn't care cause all she wanted was to be as far as she can away from the monster she left in that house and now she was hearing his voice as if its speaking inside her head\*\*\*

Castiel: your choice lady, its either you take your chances with me or you get eaten by wild animals and perish just like that....and just so you know the moment that lion or tiger gets its claws into your flesh you gonna wish you chose to take your chances with me....now you have approximately 45 minutes before those boa pythons come out to feed

\*\*\*she stood there shaking looking around then out of nowhere she felt hands on her waist and she froze\*\*\*

Castiel: so what is it gonna be Kay

\*\*\*her body visibly shook as he whispered on her right ear\*\*\*

Castiel: so?

\*\*\*then they heard some sound not far from them and she held his hand tight and it was cold as ice\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it gonna be lady

Kazi: I'll....I'll take my...my chances with you

Castiel: thought as much

\*\*\*he chuckled and he apparated from there to inside the house then he picked her up bridal style and took her to her bed and laid her down\*\*\*

Castiel: try to run away again and I'll personally

feed you to the wild animals and that's if I don't kill you first you hear me

\*\*\*she nodded with tears running down her cheeks and he lifted her shirt up and took his things and he cleaned her wound since it was bleeding and after he was done he covered her and injected her with a right dose of morphine and he walked out\*\*\*

Castiel: show yourself Juana and that's if it's your real name

\*\*\*nothing\*\*\*

Castiel: its either you show yourself or I'll kill Kazi by sucking out every drop of her blood out of her body and you know I don't play around

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

Castiel: fine, she's the dead weight I don't need anyway

\*\*\*he turned and walked back to the stairs\*\*\*

Voice: Cass

\*\*\*he stopped and slowly turned and there she was standing in a mid-evil light brown long dress but the thing is, it wasn't the Juana he knows physically but the voice was that of her\*\*\*

Castiel: who the fuck are you?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Juana: Juana

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled looking at her then he shook his head not believing all this\*\*\*

Castiel: my wife is Caucasian and you are black

Juana: i...I know i...

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Castiel: I ASKED YOU WHO THE FUCK YOU ARE!

\*\*\*he roared and his eyes turned black\*\*\*

Juana: Cass you need to calm down and let me

explain

\*\*\*then Castiel moved like the wind charging towards her but when he got to her and tried to grab her by her neck she vanished and he quickly turned and she was standing behind him\*\*\*

Juana: im not really here so stop it

Castiel: where's my wife?

\*\*\* He said with his fangs all out\*\*\*

Juana: she doesn't exist

\*\*\*he stood there frozen with a frown on his face\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*AT BUHLE AND MENZI'S RESIDENCE\*\*\*



\*\*\*Menzi walked inside the house feeling drained, they had another lead but it turned out to be a another dead end they have been facing, each day passing without finding her meant that she could very well be dead or shipped off to another country and that broke his heart even more....then his phone rang and it was Snakes\*\*\*

Menzi: grootman

Snakes: Mapholoba I have something

Menzi: im listening

Snakes: I found your wife's numbers on that motherfucker who hired those guys

\*\*\*Menzi closed his eyes and he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Menzi: how many times did she call him

Snakes: 6 times and the last time they spoke on the phone was a night before the attack and

she tried him a couple of times after the attack and left a few missed calls too

Menzi: how could she

\*\*\*he said with a low tone\*\*\*

Snakes: look its either she's cheating on you with the man who hired those men to kill your Kazi or she paid him to find men to do it

Menzi: im gonna kill her

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and he rushed upstairs and when he walked in, he found her on the floor with her eyes and mouth opened and she wasn't blinking, she was bleeding from her mouth and nose ....he looked besides her and saw a box of rat poison and a paper under it...he sighed and went to pick the paper and she wrote something on it ....it read;

" im sorry for hiring that guy to kill Kazi and her

unborn babies. I could see it in your eyes that you in love with her and I knew that if I didn't know your deep dark secret you would've divorced me long ago. Im also sorry for sleeping with your father, I fell in love with his money and what I didn't think about is when he dies you'll inherit all his money and it will also be my money since im your wife so yah im dumb like that. The love for money and material things were my downfall and if I became loyal and faithful to you im sure we would be happy by now but no I screwed it up, I guess my mother was right about me, despite all the shitty things I did that hurt you but I have always loved you despite what you may think.

Thank you for accepting Ntwentle as if she's yours even though she's your father's, please take care of my babies and always tell them that I love them and im sorry I had to resort to

this because of shame and fear. Talking about fear, the guy that has Kazi and killed those guys called me and threatened to expose me by sending you a recording of one of the guys confessing that I was involved and he has her, he even said the babies didn't make it im sorry. I saved his number as the kidnapper, im sorry Menzi please find it in your heart to forgive me.....love Buhle”

\*\*\*he stood there with his hands shaking, his eyes welled with tears and he let them fall....then he started kicking her body over and over until he got tired then he stopped and he grabbed her phone and walked out wiping off his tears\*\*\*

.  
.br/>.

\*\*\* AT THE MASHABA RESIDENCE AT GIYANI,

LIMPOPO \*\*\*

\*\*\*it was the day of the funeral and Thandi and her brothers, sons, Naledi and Ruslan slept at a nearby BnB and now they are standing outside the yard while people and the casket are inside the tent where a ceremony was held....Ruslan has his arm around Mpendulo who keeps on wiping off his tears while Ray was holding Mpilo and Naledi was standing next to Thandi....they saw uncle Gezani walking to them, he shook their hands and stood next to Jabu\*\*\*

Gezani: im sorry about all this, the boys should be inside there but because some people are evil they are standing out here like it's not their father who's laying inside that coffin

Heath: it's all good uncle, as long as they are there when their father is being buried

\*\*\*the uncle nodded\*\*\*

Gezani: where is your grandfather I thought he'll come

Jabu: di high high di namelletse so re mochaetse gore a blome gae le magriza (his blood pressure is high so we told him to stay back with granny ) and we will come instead and plus they are looking after Heath's kids

\*\*\*the uncle nodded\*\*\*

Jabu: ka bona gore ebile ba chunne monyanya wa lesa hierso ( I see they threw a party-funeral here)

\*\*\*they chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: mmmmh bo stretch tent le di catering as if o tla tsoga e be a re "yeeses auntiza yeer go pila mos mo....ai motho tshwanetse a swe mo often mos mo" (mmmmh stretch tent and catering as if he'll wake up and say "jeez aunt its beautiful here....i guess a person needs to die more often")

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Uncle.Gezani: wa bona wena Jabu....number one!

\*\*\* They continued to laugh\*\*\*

Ruslan: you ok champ

\*\*\*Mpendulo nodded and he kissed the top of his head then Jackson walked to them with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Jackson: what are you doing here, I thought we told you never to set your feet here

Jabu: hei wena changaan man ke strata sa papao se? ( hey Shangaan man is this your father's street?)

Jackson: o volavola na mena wena san? ( are you talking to me boy)

Jabu: no im talking to your shadow jou bleksem ...ofcourse ke ova le wena ntja (ofcourse im talking to you dog)

Thandi: Jabu there are kids here please

Jabu: then botsa Mr Steroids here a fotseke mo unless papae a owner this street ( then tell Mr. Steroids here to fuck off from here unless his father owns this street)

\*\*\*Jackson chuckled\*\*\*

Jackson: remember this is Giyani and not where you come from mfo

\*\*\*he said with a smirk on his face\*\*\*

Heath: are you threatening us man

\*\*\*he said getting closer to him with a scary frown on his face\*\*\*

Jackson: take a step back boy

Heath: I asked you a question you piece of shit

Ray: Ezeh not here man

\*\*\*then Heath smirked looking at Jackson who was itching to beat the shit out of Heath\*\*\*



Heath: damn you just got saved again....you lucky son of a bitch....but remember luck sometimes runs out man and I'll be there waiting for you

Jackson: I can't wait for that day where I'll teach you what we do to bitches like you in the military

\*\*\*Heath smiled wide in a creepy way and Jackson frowned \*\*\*

Ruslan: not in front of the boys

\*\*\*he said through his teeth with a warning tone\*\*\*

Caesar: damn I cant wait....we should make it soon cause im sure you also can't wait

Ruslan: I said not in front of the boys are you both deaf!

\*\*\*he said with a stern voice\*\*\*

Ray: Caesar calm down

\*\*\*he said through his teeth and Caesar raised his hands up with that creepy smile on his face and he took a step back then he put his hands inside his pockets and he looked over at Naledi who had a frown on her face and Caesar winked at her with a side smile on his face and Naledi swallowed hard\*\*\*

Caesar: sorry about that Obi m

\*\*\*Ruslan just shook his head then Jackson looked at Thandi and his face softened\*\*\*

Jackson: after the funeral we need to talk you and I, its about the boys

\*\*\*Ruslan frowned\*\*\*

Thandi: I have nothing to say to you

Jackson: look its at the best interest of my brother's sons we talk after the funeral ok

\*\*\*Thandi huffed and she looked away while Naledi was giving him nasty looks scanning him

up and down with a disgusted look on her face\*\*\*

Ruslan: move along Mr steroids!

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone and Jackson chuckled then he looked at Thandi again\*\*\*

Jackson: I'll call you after the funeral don't leave without us talking

Ruslan: I said move along!

\*\*\*he said now with a pissed off tone and Jackson chuckled again and he walked away and Thandi and Naledi clicked their tongues \*\*\*

Ray: calm down man

\*\*\*he said to Ruslan who seemed angry\*\*\*

Uncle.Gezani: I need a DNA test done...I can't be related to these people....maybe im the neighbor's child no man vanhu la va vanyanyesa man nx

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: sure uncle

\*\*\*then people inside the tent stood up and some got out of the tent and Jabu told Thandi to get inside the car and she did and closed the door and as soon the coffin was carried out of the tent to the hearse Mpendulo started crying and Ruslan held him tight while inside the car Thandi kept looking up to stop the tears.....she was hurt that after all the years she suffered fighting James' side chicks and forcing him to grow up and to take care of his boys ended here with him inside a coffin, she wished she never agreed to marry him cause if they never married traditionally she wouldn't be expected to sit on the mattress and his sons wouldn't have been disowned by the family....if only she listened to her grandmother's warnings but she knew that now it was too late for regrets....even though she is hurt that he's dead at the same time she despised him for what he's putting her

through even in his death.....anyway the casket is now inside the hearse with people singing gospel songs and off it went slowly to the graveyard where he will be laid to rest and cars followed it\*\*\*

.  
. .

\*\*\* AT THE GRAVEYARD\*\*\*

\*\*\*Thandi remained inside the car while her brothers, the boys, Ruslan and Naledi went to the burial site and stood there and watched the family cover the casket with a blanket and the pastor started the burial ceremony.....Mpendulo was busy crying with Ruslan holding him tight and the congregation started singing as the casket went down slowly and the aunt cried out loud then others followed\*\*\*

"1. Oho Yesu, Ndza ta Sweswi,  
O ndzi amukela,  
Ndzi tisane hi swivi swa nga,  
U ndzi amukela.

2. Ndzi xisiwile hi nala,  
Masiku hinkwawo,  
Kunene a ndzi lovile  
Ndzi nga voni chumu. Hosi,  
Ndzi hlayise Yesu.  
Moya lo'wu hanyisaka  
Tirha masingita.

5. Ndza ta Hosi, Ndzi mudyohi,  
U ndzi tsetselela,  
Ndzi kombela wena Hosi  
U ndzi amukela.

6. O, Moya wa Pentekosta

Xika hi marimba,

Hi ve timboni ta wena

Hi nga chavi nchumu"

\*\*\*they sang and Ruslan clenched his jaws as Mpendulo and Mpilo's cries touched a sensitive part in his heart and he swallowed hard.....after the casket was now inside the grave Ruslan whispered to Naledi that she should take the boys back to the cars and she nodded and held their hands and she went back to the cars with Mpendulo sobbing painfully and Ray watched Ruslan move to the other side of the Burial site and he whispered to his brothers\*\*\*

Ray: brace yourselves

Them: huh?

Ray: don't freak out ok

\*\*\*the congregation started humming a slow sad song with the pastor reciting a “ashes to ashes and dust to dust” prayer in Xitsonga.... then Ruslan’s eyes changed from its normal color to cloudy eyes and he recited a spell and dust wind started filling the burial site and people screamed, women where holding their dresses, wigs and skirts down as the dust-wind blew all over then all of a sudden it stopped and people started mumbling dusting themselves and when the pastor continued with the “ashes to ashes and dust to dust” prayer they heard something hitting hard inside the grave and they all stopped.....the sound got louder and louder and people started freaking out cause it was clear the sound was inside the casket\*\*\*

Jabu: what the fuck!

\*\*\*Ray looked over at Ruslan and he knew it was him even though he was wearing shades.....he was waking James from the dead,



well more like using James' corpse to do whatever he wants it to do\*\*\*

Woman: Jesus o koma a ha hanya a ndzeni ka bokisi (Jesus I think he's still alive inside the coffin)

\*\*\*she said with her hand on her chest\*\*\*

Woman2: ooh my God!

\*\*\*they said looking freaked out while others were moving to the back cause they were scared....then someone went to the family and told them what was going on as the sound was getting louder and Jackson, Mzamane, the aunt and Joe got up and went closer to the grave next to the pastor while everyone else inside the tent also got up\*\*\*

Pastor: I don't know what is happening but there's a banging sound inside the casket

Aunt: ooh my God.... o hleketa kore..... (do you think...)

\*\*\* Jackson rushed closer to the grave with other people taking videos while others were already by the pavement far away from the grave site\*\*\*

Heath: don't tell me its what I think it is

Jabu: shit...shit...no he fucken didn't!

\*\*\*he said with his heart pounding hard and his hands shaking\*\*\*

\*\*\* anyway Jackson went inside the grave \*\*\*

Jackson: JAMES? JAMES?.....IS IT YOU IN THERE?

\*\*\*\*the banging sound continued and he remembered that the casket was locked then he asked someone to hand him a rock and they quickly did....well everyone was shocked including the funeral parlour guys to a point that one of them was even taking a video to show people so they'll believe him when he tell them what he saw....

Anyway Jackson broke the lock and he balanced himself with the walls inside the grave and he quickly opened the casket and James corpse was looking at him with its eyes opened and the eyeballs were also cloudy in colour just like Ruslans and Jackson swallowed hard as he felt chills run down his spine.....he slowly bend backwards since he was bending forward after he opened the coffin\*\*\*

Aunt: Jack o pfukile James?....n'wana mina o pfukile? ( Jack is James awake...is my child awake?)

\*\*\*then the corpse slowly sat up straight like a robot, well the corpse was doing exactly what Ruslan was commanding it to do with his mind.... anyway Jackson told them to get him out immediately and Joe grabbed his hand and pulled him out....then the corpse stood up from the coffin and Ruslan recited another spell and

it started climbing out of the grave fast without any difficulty and people screamed and they ran away with others falling and other women running in heels as if they are wearing flat shoes screaming\*\*\*

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

INSERT.....06

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*James corpse stood there as Richard, Joe,

kokwane and the aunt stood about 16 yards away from him, as for Ray, Jabu and Heath they were now standing next to Ruslan while other people were standing far wondering what's happening while other men who are brave enough they were standing at about 17 to 20 feet away from James with shocked and horrified looks on their faces while others were taking videos\*\*\*

Jabu: no man...no man....bo ke boloi ba ko America... I swear tse re di bona ko Tv fela( this a American witchcraft....we only see such on Tv)

\*\*\*He said with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Heath: im dreaming right big Ray?

Ray: nope

\*\*\*he said with a chilled voice\*\*\*

Jabu: no man big Ray.....so ke tsona di Para what what tsona tse ( so these are the Para what-what)

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: will you two just breathe and relax and enjoy the show

Jabu: enjoy?.....ka bona o tsobile lebake wena no in fact o tsobile nyaope and a ke frostane why o tsobile o le one o sa re fa le rona nx.... ( I see you smoked weed no in fact you smoked whoonga “nyaope” and I don’t understand why you would smoke alone without us)

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Heath: bros wetin be this....na juju or na my eye dey showing me things? ( bro what’s all this...is this witchcraft my eyes are seeing?)

Ray: Na juju Ezeh now calm down and relax

Kokwane: mehlolo ngwino.....nere mehlolo bano ba xikwenbu! (this is unbelievable.... I said this is unbelievable people of God)

\*\*\*she said with her hands on top of her head

shouting\*\*\*

Aunt: Kwendlakala yini la.... yi mehlolo le yi njane leyi? ( what's going on here....what kind of miracle is this?)

Richard: I can't believe this!

\*\*\*he said with a shaky voice\*\*\*

Mzamane: xipoko ngwino...wapoka Jemese....( a ghost people....James is a ghost)

\*\*\*he said looking scared then the corpse turned its head and looked towards the Mashaba family and uncle Mzamane ran away like he was being chased by dogs and other people who were still around but far from the scene started to run too when they saw Uncle Mzamane running towards them.....then the corpse tried to open its mouth but the lips were glued together so Ruslan whispered a spell and the glue melted and it opened its mouth then kokwane fell on the ground and she fainted

while the aunt stood there shaking along with Richard and Joe, as for uncle Gezani he long ran away busy screaming that his family is full of witches....

Anyway the corpse then made hissing sounds like a snake and it turned its whole body and it faced the Mashabas \*\*\*

James: you....

\*\*\* it moved its arm slowly and it pointed at the Mashabas and they moved back slowly shaking with fear\*\*\*

Joe: ooh God....oooh God...

\*\*\*he said with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

James: it's your fault

\*\*\*it spoke with a hissing tone then it made those hissing sounds again\*\*\*

James: my sons....

\*\*\*then it made cracking sounds when its head



bend to the side a bit \*\*\*

James: why?

Jackson: James look we....

\*\*\*he said with a shaky voice\*\*\*

James: talk again and we will be buried together today brother

\*\*\*Jackson kept quiet looking scared\*\*\*

James: take back what you said about my sons and their mother or you will never know peace!

Aunt: i...we...

\*\*\*then Ruslan chanted a spell and the Mashabas felt stuck where they are....they couldn't move an inch and James' corpse walked closer to them doing a zombie walk and Joe fainted\*\*\*

Jackson: ooh god....ooh God we are dead!

\*\*\*he said shaking with fear as for the aunt she

was visibly shaking too\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION\*\*\*\*

Castiel: what do you mean my wife doesn't exist?

Juana: im the real Juana, I was send to look after you until you find her

\*\*\*his face and fangs went back to normal\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

Juana: my job was to make sure you don't go astray and that you leave America in one piece

\*\*\*he paced up and down while shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: no no no....you're lying....you're lying!

\*\*\*he said shouting\*\*\*

Juana: im sorry but if your mother didn't make me your guardian you and your brother would be dead

Castiel: guardian? guardian?...we fucken had sex you vile bitch.... I kissed you, ooh fuck I kissed a dead body posing as a living human.....

\*\*\*Juana looked away and she kept quiet\*\*\*

Castiel: and stop lying to me, my mother wouldn't do that to me.....she wouldn't!

Juana: look she couldn't lose two sons

Castiel.....you and Ruslan would have died at the hands of the brethren

Castiel: stop it ok...fucken stop it!

\*\*\*he grabbed a vas and threw it at her but it went through her and hit the wall breaking into pieces\*\*\*

Juana: IF SHE DIDN'T PLANT ME IN YOUR LIFE YOU WOULD HAVE JOINED THE BRETHREN

AFTER HER DEATH CAUSE SHE KNEW HER DEATH WOULD HIT YOU HARD AND YOU WOULD GIVE UP ON LIFE AND THE BRETHREN WOULD HAVE RECRUITED YOU AND YOUR BROTHER WOULD HAVE TRIED TO SAVE YOU FROM THEM CAUSE WE ALL KNOW THEY ARE DANGEROUS AND THEY WOULD HAVE KILLED THE BOTH OF YOU

Castiel: MADOU IS STRONG AND A GREAT WIZARD.... I MEAN HE KILLED THEIR LEADER LIKE HE WAS SOME COCKROACH

Juana: they would have kidnapped his son and it would have been his life for his son's life and you know he wouldn't hesitate to give up his life own for his son's

Castiel: no...no

Juana: then you would have went after the brethren and you wouldn't have made it going after them alone....your mother saw your future

and if she didn't do what she did she would have lost two sons

\*\*\*Castiel sat down with his chest visibly moving up and down fast \*\*\*

Juana: im sorry but it had to be done, I was supposed to make you betray your brother to have your mind occupied and for you not to dwell too much on your mother's death and to continue to lead you to the one that will give you your heart's desire

Castiel: so all of this was a lie....it was all a lie....MY FUCKEN BROTHER HATES ME BECAUSE OF YOU AND MY MOTHER!

Juana: it had to be done or you wouldn't be here!

Castiel: all of this was a lie!

Juana: a lie that saved both you and your brother

\*\*\*then Castiel started laughing, the laugh

started off low then it got louder and louder then all of a sudden he stopped laughing\*\*\*

Juana: treat Kazi right and know that once she's pregnant and she dies then your baby will die too....and you need your brother Ruslan's help to keep her and the baby alive....she's a special one and everyone that gets close to her feel fulfilled and complete, you used to lie by pretending you weren't smitten by her but the actual truth is you were and still are

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: that bitch means nothing to me and to prove that I can go and feed on her until she takes her last breath so don't psycho analyze me you fucken bitch

Juana: well if you do that then know that there is no woman in the world that will be able to carry your seed and have a 50 percent chance of making it alive I mean even that dead

woman's body couldn't carry it for long

\*\*\*he chuckled bitterly shaking his head\*\*\*

Juana: you need her Cass and you are not the only one who does....that hitman also need her and he loves her unlike you and he will leave no stone unturned until he finds her and your brother is right, he has beasts behinds him searching for her and if you decide to take them on then some might die and you might live but you will have to forget about having a child ever

\*\*\*he didn't say anything\*\*\*

Juana: let her go and court her the right way and have her accept to carry your seed willingly and not have your child hate you when he/she finds out about what you did to mommy.... and fix things between you and your brother cause the brethren are coming after you and him and so is the witches' council, they found your location

\*\*\*he looked up at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

Juana: I guess your mother's plan had a flaw after all cause now real danger is coming

\*\*\*Then she disappeared\*\*\*

Juana: you don't have to keep her captive....do things the right way cause she's the only woman in this lifetime who can give you your heart's desire and for your information you are not a monster Castiel, circumstances made you one but you can choose not to be one....remember she's every men's chosen one who threat her good and so treat her right so she becomes yours.....Good bye Castiel

\*\*\*her voice spoke then silence.....then out of the blue Castiel got up and his fangs got long and his skin changed along with his eyes and he screamed out loud with rage and he started



breaking things, throwing them to the wall while others he broke them into half.....by the time he was done the whole house except for the room Kazi was in was in shambles.....then he ran out of the house into the woods in his vampire state baying for blood\*\*\*

.  
. .  
. .

\*\*\*\*AT THE GRAVEYARD.....LIMPOPO\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*James corpse stood next to the remaining Mashaba members...it was dripping a clear liquid the ice was melting....then it hissed\*\*\*

James: my sons are off limit or I'll haunt you until you decide to commit suicide.... I may have been a useless father when I was alive but I'll make anyone who hurts my sons in any way wish death upon themselves

\*\*\*then it looked at his aunt who was too frightened to even utter a single word\*\*\*

James: don't dare me aunty..... apologize to Thandi and my sons or I'll make you

\*\*\*then it hissed again and its neck cracked as it put its head in a straight up position and it looked at Jackson who looked spooked\*\*\*

James: I know what you and aunty here did brother....confess or I'll haunt you until you do

\*\*\*Jackson's eyes and aunties popped out as they visibly shook then it cracked its neck again looking down on Joe and his grandmother\*\*\*

James: ደፈጥር ታል ( wake up)

\*\*\*he commanded them and they both at the same time opened their eyes and when they looked up wondering what's going on.....their eyes landed on James corpse and they screamed while Joe peed on himself shaking\*\*\*

Kokwane: Jemese xetokolo xa mena....ko...ko endlakala yini.....opfuxi yi mani? (James my grandson....what's...what's going on.....who woke you up)

\*\*\*the corpse didn't say anything since Ruslan couldn't understand what she was saying\*\*\*

Joe: ooh God....ooh God...

\*\*\*he said trying to move from his position but it felt like he was glued on it....he couldn't even move a muscle....they all couldn't move a muscle\*\*\*

James: I know what you did

\*\*\*it said looking from Jackson to his aunt then it made laughing sounds but its face didn't show that it was laughing and it stopped and turned and walked back to the grave and it got in without any hassle and it went inside the coffin and laid down nicely and the coffin closed its self as the corpse closed its eyes and

strong dusty wind filled the grave site then it stopped all of a sudden then silence\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok im done we can go now

\*\*\*Jabu jumped a bit startled and both him and Heath looked at him taking off his shades with shocked faces\*\*\*

Jabu: what are you man?

\*\*\*he asked Ruslan with a horrified look on his face\*\*\*

Ray: show off!

\*\*\*he chuckled and Ruslan laughed a bit and Ray started walking away\*\*\*

Jabu: and wena o grand ka die hele ding? ( and you are ok with the whole thing)

\*\*\*he said to Ray who just laughed walking back to the cars\*\*\*

Ruslan: ታላቅ (thaw)

\*\*\*it said with its hand waving from left to the right side then the Mashaba got control of their bodies and Joe got up and he ran like he was being chased by dogs too....and Ruslan walked back to the car whistling lightly with Jabu and Heath walking behind him tongue tide\*\*\*

Heath: Mjava a ke lore right ( Jabu im not dreaming right).... what happened really happened?

Jabu: if wa lora Mshikaro then re lora toro e one....ke fetsa go bona mafa vuka James a bolela, diphefo tsa boloi and broer ya rena o bona die hele ding e le normal ebile wa laga are "show off" to moloi wa Phd ( if you are dreaming then we are dreaming the same dream....i just saw a dead James talking... winds of witchcraft and our brother sees the whole thing as normal and he's even laughing busy saying "show off" to a wizard who holds a Phd)

\*\*\*he then looked at Heath\*\*\*

Jabu: die man o busy o bakisana le Modimo  
Mshikaro....bo pastor Lukau batle ba tlo trainer  
mo mfowethu...gape mo diabowa mo....die man  
o fetsa go embarrass(a) di kono kono tsa mo  
Giyani, ke ra ditweebenare tse di kgolo ...tsona  
di brigadier tsa mo Giyani, e bile di idibetse  
( this man is busy competing with God  
Mshikaro....pastor Lukau and his peers should  
come train here my brother....its lit here....this  
guy just embarrassed big shots of Giyani, big  
witches.... I mean brigadiers of Giyani, and they  
even fainted)

Heath: I just can't believe that happened man

Ruslan: believe it Ezeh, I don't play around when  
it comes to those I hold dear to my heart

Jabu: what did mafa vuka say to them Ruru?

Ruslan: he warned them....well let me say I  
warned them that the boys are off limits and if  
they continue, well he'll haunt them until they

beg death to visit them...in different words but the meaning is the same

Heath: damn!

\*\*\*then they saw two police vans driving inside the cemetery and Jabu laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: ba tlo etsang dimogoes tse? (What are they here to do these fools?)

Heath: probably to arrest mafa vuka

\*\*\*they laughed and Ruslan just shook his head and got inside the car where Thandi, Naledi and the boys were and Jabu and Heath went to the car Ray was in and they drove out\*\*\*

Naledi: Ruu what happened out there, I saw people running and others screaming

Ruslan: well go to Facebook and Twitter and you'll find out what happened

Naledi: huh?

Ruslan: I can't say it now but people took videos

im sure they'll post it on social media

Naledi: ooh ok

\*\*\*then he looked at Thandi through the rearview mirror and she was leaning her head on Naledi's shoulder with her eyes closed and he sighed and continued to drive away....Meanwhile inside the other car Ray was talking on the phone with Mbali\*\*\*

Ray: ok I love you too my flower....I'll see you later ok

\*\*\*then he ended the call\*\*\*

Heath: "I love you too"

\*\*\*he mimicked his voice\*\*\*

Heath: damn I never thought I'd hear big Ray say that to any woman

Ray: fuck you man

\*\*\*they all laughed\*\*\*



Ray: I love that girl man....i swear I can't live without her

Heath: mmmmh I know...I also can't live without Naledi

Jabu: entlek le brekela mang...le nna I can't live without Amo waka ( who are you bragging to....i also can't live without my Amo)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: no man big Ray so vele vele Ruslan o kgona go tsosa mense ba ba bhodileng? (so Ruslan can wake dead people up?)

Ray: no he doesn't sometimes he gives them a second chance in life before they go to the light, if you know what I mean and this time let's say he commanded James' corpse to do what he wanted it to do

Heath: I still can't believe he did that

Ray: Ezeh we should be glad that he's one of us

and that hes on our side and most of all that he loves our sister Thandi....believe me when I say you don't wanna mess with him, take him on or mess with those he holds dear...he's a very dangerous man and he has a dark-witches' blood running through his veins so him being a "good wizard" doesn't mean he doesn't have a bad side, believe me he does and its not a pleasant one to see

\*\*\*Jabu and Heath just kept quiet\*\*\*

Ray: that man made me get my soul back from the devil himself at one go when I had lost all hope....he killed a brethren and when he was done with him it was like he was ripped apart by a mystical beast

Jabu: eeh!

Heath: who are the brethren?

Ray: some bad motherfuckers...they are a dangerous group of vampires that only feed on

human blood, they killed his father right after his brother betrayed him net for control

Jabu: broer wa gae betrayed him? ( his brother betrayed him?)

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: he had no choice, it was either Ruslan or his fiancé...he knew Ruslan can take care of himself but Juana is or was human

Heath: damn so how did he betray him...what did he do?

Ray: he told the Brethren the spell they needed to enter the witches' sacred grounds to apprehend a special stone named the Hag stone...there are other Hag stones out there, many of them but that one is special man and it has immense super special powers

Jabu: mxm hai suka....letlapa ke letlapa man ( a stone is just a stone man)

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: well the Hag stone can ward off the dead, curses, witches, sickness and nightmares but the Brethren wanted to use it to defeat by killing all the witches, it was gonna stop witches and wizards from using their powers then they kill them all.... so that's how they wanted to wipe out all the witches to rein supreme...it will only be them and werewolves and I believe after they have dealt with all the witches they were gonna go after the werewolves by finding their weaknesses and use them against them

Heath: ok ok so you want to tell me that there are vampires and werewolves too

\*\*\*he asked shocked\*\*\*

Ray: yeah man

\*\*\*Heath just shook his head astonished by all this\*\*\*

Heath: man those things are fantasies man they

are not supposed to be real

Jabu: tell him Mshikaro

Ray: I have the grim reaper inside of me and you met him even though he wasn't in his full form....Ruslan is a real wizard and Mbali's family members have beasts in them

Jabu&Heath: WHAT?

\*\*\*Ray nodded\*\*

Ray: yeah and Kalu has a demon named Saint and a beast inside of him too

\*\*\*Jabu and Heath just kept quiet processing all that, shocked, astonished and not believing what they were hearing\*\*\*

Heath: what?

\*\*\*he asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Ray: yeah... well with Saint it's the repercussions of making a deal with the devil and the Beast well that is a Khumalo thing...they say it was

made to protect them....so yeah

\*\*\*they kept quiet\*\*\*

Jabu: mo motho le ge akare wa zama legodimo lona a ka se lebone shem....ke nale broer le setlogolo sa ledimone ( I don't think a person will ever see heaven shame....i have a demon brother and a nephew)

Ray: I have the La Parca while you Ezeh have a multiple personality disorder, Ruslan is a wizard and my son has a beast and a demon in him, Mj is the only way God punishes us for our sins whenever he's around and with you Jabu well your rotten mouth more especially whenever you are swearing at another person hits me inside as if you are directing those swear words towards me....and whenever you say le marete I feel it man so yah we won't see heaven unless we repent man and me and my son repenting means death

\*\*\*he said with a pained tone\*\*\*

Jabu: ok I really need to go to church so that ge ke fitlha ko legodimong modimo a mpulele masango ka smile ( so that when I arrive at Heaven God will open the gates with a smile)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Heath: e be satan a tle a tswere coto ya black label le patji mixed with nyaope a jele di brentwood, classic florsheim shoes, leopard print shirt le berethe e be a re “ye wena le marete a reye, di broer tsa gao di ka da wena o nyakang ka mo jou fokon moeskond” ( and satan will come holding a cot of black label and weed mixed with whoonga wearing a brentwood trouser, classic florsheim shoes, a leopard print shirt and a beret cap and he will say “ lets go dickhead, your brothers are that side so what are you doing here you fucken asshole”)

\*\*\*they busted out loud with laughter\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT THE BNB\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Ruslan opened the door for Thandi and she walked in and when she turned he was closer to her and he pulled her closer and they kissed a slow passionate kiss that made Thandi to have goosebumps all over her body, after a while they broke the kiss and he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: you ok?

\*\*\*he asked her and she nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: where are the boys?

Thandi: they went to the mall with Jabu and Ray

Ruslan: and im sure Heath and Star are busy



fucking like rabbits by now

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you

\*\*\*she blushed looking down and he put his finger under her chin and slowly pushed her face up and he looked at her with an intense look\*\*\*

Ruslan: marry me Thandi

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: we wont get married now I just want to know your answer

\*\*\*she sighed and nodded\*\*\*

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: huh?

Thandi: yes I'll marry you Ruu

\*\*\*he smiled wide and he kissed her and hugged her tight and after some time they

broke the hug and went to lay down on the bed and he put his hand on her stomach and he rubbed it slowly as he held her from the back\*\*\*

Thandi: what happened at the cemetery?

Ruslan: they say James woke up from the dead to warn his family to lay off his sons

Thandi: what?

Ruslan: mmmmh

Thandi: you said 'they say', khante didn't you see everything that happened

Ruslan: would you stand closer to the scene of a dead man waking up if you were me or your brothers?

Thandi: no... of course not

\*\*\*he kissed her neck and continued to rub her belly\*\*\*

Ruslan: we stood from afar trying to see what the heck was going on but there was dust

winds and people were running and screaming,  
it was just chaos

Thandi: mmmmh I wonder what happened

\*\*\*he kissed her neck again\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruu?

Ruslan: amour

Thandi: why do you like rubbing my belly?

\*\*\*he kissed her neck again and pulled her  
closer and he continued to rub her belly\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't worry you'll know why soon

\*\*\*then his phone rang and he let her go and  
took it from on top of the side drawer and he  
answered it sitting up\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

Voice: Madou

\*\*\* the voice said with a low tone and he got out  
of the bed with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: Cass

Castiel: yeah.... i need your help man

Ruslan: what?

Castiel: Juana....i just found out that she never existed man... it all a façade....mom and that girl who used some dead woman's body to fool me planned the whole shit

Ruslan: ok wait... what?

Castiel: and the brethren know about my whereabouts and it's only a matter of time before the witches' council finds me too...there's a lot this Juana bitch told me that you also need to know

Ruslan: Cass look i...

\*\*\*he interrupted him\*\*\*

Castiel: the brethren are coming after you too man for killing their own, you have a family now so ....just bring your son closer so you can

protect him along with your new family

\*\*\* Ruslan walked out and closed the door behind him\*\*\*

Ruslan: how did they find you...I mean I couldn't even find you

Castiel: those men that I killed...the car door ripped off from the car and their hearts ripped out so yah I messed up cause even today the police can't explain what happened to them or to the car door

Ruslan: and how do they know about my location

Castiel: they gonna use me to fish you out

\*\*\*he paced around while brushing his head roughly\*\*\*

Castiel: im sorry I messed up man im really sorry

Ruslan: THAT'S ALL YOU KNOW

CASTIEL...MESSING UP AND I ALWAYS HAVE TO CLEAN UP AFTER YOU AS IF YOU'RE NOT MY ELDER BROTHER

Castiel: look its fine I'll hand myself over to the witches' council....they'll kill me and the brethren won't have find you...its better I die with the witches council's hand than with the brethren's

Ruslan: no no no

\*\*\*he stopped moving\*\*\*

Castiel: it's the only way man...if the brethren catch me that bitch Ariel will make me talk forcefully with her powers

Ruslan: NO!....we'll find a way just tell me where you are and....

Castiel: I'll send you my location...and Madou, I killed a human by feed off him ....right now im thirsty and Kazi....she's in danger man, im gonna kill her I know I will

Ruslan: shit...ok look go outside and keep yourself busy im coming

\*\*\* Castiel dropped the call and Ruslan's phone beeped, it was Castiel who send him his location\*\*\*

Ruslan: shit!

MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....07

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION \*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Castiel decided to go to the basement cause he could smell Kazi's blood from outside the door of the room she was in from her stained shirt, that's how thirsty he was.... he knew he shouldn't have fed on a human but with the way he was angry he couldn't control himself...he only regretted what he did minutes after he did it....Anyway he got inside the basement and he locked it and pointed his palm towards the door and he put a protection spell that locked him inside the basement, it's a protection spell that he can't undo himself only Ruslan can undo it or another witch that owns a book of shadows...it's the only way Kazi can be safe from him at this moment\*\*\*

Castiel: mother what have you done....

\*\*\*he said to himself and he sat down on the floor and he groaned as the thirst got really bad...then he got up quickly and he started



punching the wall over and over and over  
again\*\*\*

.

.

.

AT THE BNB

Ray: bros

Ruslan: I just got a call from Cass and he's in  
deep shit man

Ray: what deep shit

Ruslan: he said something about the Brethren  
finding him and Juana never existed and that he  
fed off a human

Ray: ooh shit!

Ruslan: he send me his location and he said  
he's scared he might kill that girl

Ray: then we must leave right away man

Ruslan: I was thinking I should leave now and I'll send you his location and you'll come once the ladies and boys are safely home

Ray: ok but don't leave without seeing the boys....Mpilo is busy asking if you'll join us, I can tell he misses you already

\*\*\*Ruslan smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: he is?

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: yeah bros you can tell he's even bored

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: he just loves it when I do a little magic for him

\*\*\* Ray laughed\*\*\*

Ray: ok we are already on our way

Ruslan: ok

\*\*\*they ended the call and he sighed then he

dialed Castiel's numbers and he answered on the third ring\*\*\*

Castiel: tell me you are close by?

\*\*\*he said with a different scary voice and Ruslan swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: is she still alive?

Castiel: I locked myself in the basement using the protection spell from the book of shadows it's the only way I can keep her safe

Ray: ok stay put im on my way

\*\*\*Castiel groaned and they ended the call and Ruslan went inside\*\*\*

Thandi: is everything ok?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat going closer to her\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah ummm its my brother

Thandi: your brother? you have a brother? I mean I didn't know you have a brother

\*\*\*she said surprised and Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah I do

Thandi: you never mentioned him before

\*\*\*He sat down next to her\*\*\*

Ruslan: well we....don't see eye to eye

Thandi: ooh

Ruslan: but he's my brother and he needs my help

Thandi: umm ok

\*\*\*he leaned closer and perked her lips then he stared into her eyes\*\*\*

Ruslan: he needs my help as in now

Thandi: wait you have to leave now?

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

Thandi: ooh

Ruslan: he needs my help amour

Thandi: I understand

\*\*\*she said looking down\*\*\*

Ruslan: hey look at me

\*\*\*she looked at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: three days tops....i just need to make sure he's fine

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: I love you ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he kissed the tip of her nose and he got up and she sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im gonna leave as soon as the boys come back and you'll go back with Ray and everyone else

Thandi: ok

\*\*\*he went to pack their things and they heard a knock on the door and Ruslan went to open and

Mpilo threw himself on him and Ruslan caught him and picked him up laughing\*\*\*

Ruslan: someone missed me

\*\*\*Mpilo nodded and Ruslan laughed again and he brushed Mpendulo's head\*\*\*

Ruslan: you didn't miss me champ

Mpendulo: uncle please im too old for that

Ruslan: ooh so you didn't miss me

Mpendulo: I did now can we stop

\*\*\*he said looking away shyly which made Ray and Ruslan to laugh\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok champ

\*\*\*Ray looked at Thandi who didn't look happy and he looked at Ruslan and Ruu sighed then he put Mpilo down\*\*\*

Ruslan: ummm boys I have to go somewhere meaning I won't be able to go back with you and

your mother but I'll come see you in three days'  
time ok

Mpilo: I wanna go with you

Ruslan: I know my pilot but not this time maybe  
next time ok

\*\*\*he sulked\*\*\*

Ruslan: look when I come back how about we  
go watch a movie just me, you and your brother

\*\*\*he smiled and nodded\*\*\*

Mpilo: and I'll choose the movie right

Mpendulo: oooh Lord save us

\*\*\*he said rolling his eyes and they laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: hei wena Mpendulo be nice to your  
brother hau

Mpendulo: mara mama he always picks boring  
cartoon movies

Mpilo: no I don't

Mpendulo: yes you do

Mpilo: no I don't

Ray: ok ok stop you two...now say goodbye to your new daddy and lets go eat

\*\*\*Thandi gave him a "wtf" look and he chuckled\*\*\*

Mpilo: our new daddy?....is uncle Ruu our new daddy mommy

\*\*\*Thandi looked at Mpilo and swallowed hard then she looked at Ray who was looking at her with a raised eyebrow\*\*\*

Ray: yah mommy is uncle Ruu their new daddy

\*\*\*he said with a smirk on his face and Thandi gave him a death stare\*\*\*

Thandi: umm boys well the thing is....

Ruslan: do you want me to be your new daddy my pilot



\*\*\*he saved Thandi by asking Mpilo that and Mpilo looked from Thandi to Ruslan and he frowned\*\*\*

Mpilo: but if I want you to be my new daddy you won't be my uncle anymore mos

Mpendulo: duh

\*\*\*he said rolling his eyes\*\*\*

Ruslan: yes but it wont change anything between us in fact it will mean some day we will live together you, me, Mpe and mommy in a big house with a swimming pool

Mpilo: and you'll drive me to school just like Kevin's daddy drives Kevin to school everyday

Ruslan: ummm yeah

Mpilo: ok I want you to be my new daddy

\*\*\*he said smiling and Ray laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: you do?

\*\*\*he nodded smiling and she looked at Mpendulo\*\*\*

Mpendulo: what ma

Ray: what about you?

Mpendulo: I know mom and uncle Ruu are dating....im no longer a little boy uncle Ray

Thandi: what?

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled shaking his head while Thandi was shocked\*\*\*

Mpendulo: I once saw you and uncle Ruu kissing duh...

\*\*\*he said with a bored tone and Thandi's heart began beating fast cause she wasn't ready to tell them yet well especially not like this \*\*\*

Ray: and you cool with that?

Mpendulo: no.... yuck

\*\*\*he said making a face\*\*\*

Mpendulo: it's not nice seeing old people kissing uncle...not nice at all, anyway im hungry

\*\*\*then he looked at a shocked Ruslan\*\*\*

Mpendulo: I'll see you when you get back uncle

Ruslan: ummm yeah

\*\*\* Then he walked out and Ray chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ray: mr pilot say bye too

\*\*\*he hugged Ruslan and Ruu put him down and he ran after Mpendulo\*\*\*

Ruslan: I.... didn't see that coming

Ray: me neither man...these kids grow up fast....anyway I'll see you later man

\*\*\*they fist bumped and he walked out and Ruslan closed the door and turned to Thandi\*\*\*

Ruslan: you ok?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: he saw us kissing Ruu

\*\*\*he went closer to her and he pulled her closer and kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: and he seems ok with us

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: isn't it too soon for them to know, I mean they just buried their father

Ruslan: they are both ok with us "dating" so we should be glad amour....imagine if they had a problem

Thandi: I guess

Ruslan: and I sense that you are unhappy

Thandi: I just don't want to teach them that it's ok to move from one relationship to another

Ruslan: and you right it's not and for your information you didn't move from one relationship to another remember I waited for you....i kept sending you love messages and

calling you

\*\*\*she looked down blushing and he chuckled then he stopped and sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you don't seem pleased that im leaving amour

Thandi: I think im becoming clingy Ruu...right now I feel like crying cause you leaving even though I understand that you have to help your brother

\*\*\*he smiled and pushed her face up and kissed her\*\*\*

Ruslan: now you know how I feel every time I have to leave you every night just so the boys don't find me in the morning

\*\*\*she smiled looking at him\*\*\*

Thandi: really?

\*\*\*he nodded and he perked her lips\*\*\*

Ruslan: im also clingy but im a man so sulking

about it will make me look like a pussy

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: but I have to go now amour....I'll call you every chance I get ok

\*\*\*she nodded and they hugged for some time then they pulled apart and kissed passionately until they broke it to catch their breaths\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*ON THE ROAD\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*Ray, Heath, Jabu, Naledi, Thandi and the boys were on their way home ....Ray, Thandi, Naledi and the boys where on one car and Jabu and Heath were on another car they rented since Ruslan used the other car when he left ....anyway Jabu's phone rang and it was Amo\*\*\*

Jabu: rato laka (my love)

Amo: Jabu your baby mama is here and she's busy causing a scene

\*\*\*she said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Jabu: o reng? (what)

Amo: yeah....i don't have the strength to deal with her Jabu ok...o busy o tlhaba mashata mo ( she's busy shouting) calling me names, a re im keeping her son away from her

Jabu: rato laka ke gona re tswang ka Limpopo so im gonna send some guys batlo ntsha tonki eo don't worry, wena don't open the door her ( my love we just drove out of Limpopo so im gonna send some guys to come and take out that donkey don't worry....just don't open the door for her)

Amo: ok

Jabu: kao rata wautlwa (I love you, you hear me)

Amo: I love you too

\*\*\*then they ended the call\*\*\*

Jabu: nx sfebe se sentlwaela masepa ( that bitch is pissing me off)

Heath: what's wrong?

Jabu: Amo a re Dipuo o ko dladleng obusy o tllhaba mashata ( Amo said Dipuo is at my house busy causing a scene)

Heath: wait Dipuo as in your crazy baby mama

Jabu: yah I swear tonki e le e tlo nnyela, not with my wife Mshikaro...ke tlo tllhaba sefebe kuku ka thipa nna nx ( yeah I swear im gonna deal with that donkey, not with my wife Mshikaro....im gonna end up stabbing a bitch's pussy with a knife nx)

\*\*\*he said dialing one of his boys' numbers\*\*\*

.

.



.  
\*\*\*\*AT JABU AND AMO'S HOUSE \*\*\*

Dipuo: ye wena sfebe ke re ( hey bitch) where is my son!

\*\*\*she said banging on the door....Amo only let her inside the yard cause she said she's Sbu's mother but when she started insulting her she left her outside and she locked herself, her daughter and Sbu inside the house and called Jabu....she knew Jabu doesn't like cops and he doesn't want them inside his yard so calling the cops on her was out of question\*\*\*

Sbu: mama im sorry about this

\*\*\*he said looking down ashamed and Amo went closer to him\*\*\*

Amo: hey

\*\*\*she said cupping his face\*\*\*

Amo: don't apologize for other people's crazy

behavior ok....she may be your biological mother but you are also my son ... so stop apologizing

\*\*\*Sbu nodded with tears in his eyes and she hugged him\*\*\*

Dipuo: Sbu!

\*\*\*she called out to him\*\*\*

Dipuo: Sbu baby its your mother!

\*\*\*Sbu broke the hug and he went to the door looking angry with Amo calling after him...he opened the door and he looked at his mother with a deadly look on his face\*\*\*

Dipuo: ooh my boy look at you....baby go inside and pack your clothes we are going home

Amo: home as in where exactly?

Dipuo: wena stay out of this nx

\*\*\*she said pointing at Amo\*\*\*

Sbu: dont talk to my mother like that Dipuo!

\*\*\*he said with an angry tone \*\*\*

Dipuo: your mother?....hey wena Sbusiso I gave birth to you wankutlwa, 19 hours of labour so oska mpotsa nyoso ( so don't tell me nonsense)...im your mother and not her

Amo: Dipuo or whatever your name is bona mo, giving birth doesn't make you a mother wankutlwa....where were you all this years, you knew Jabu was in prison but you never bothered to help Jabu's mother with Sbu and now you come here to my house o tlo tlhaba mashata busy saying my son my son...which son are you talking about!

\*\*\*she said shouting at her and Dipuo took a step closer to Amo and Sbu quickly stood between them\*\*\*

Sbu: touch her and you'll see

Dipuo: Sbusiso so you are defending this thing

against me your mother?

Sbu: I said touch her and you'll see

\*\*\*Dipuo laughed clapping her hands once \*\*\*

Dipuo: so you have poisoned my son against me you witch

\*\*\*Sbu grabbed her by her shirt tight and he pulled her closer to his face and Dipuo swallowed hard with her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Amo: ooh my God Sbu, baby don't please don't

\*\*\*she said shocked with what he just did\*\*\*

Sbu: listen here Dipuo....mom here is dad's wife, dad being Jabu and he will deal accordingly with anyone who insults or threatens her and im Jabu's son and have his crazy blood running through my veins so call her a witch once again and I'll forget that you once gave birth to me and I'll....

Amo: Sbu don't please baby don't...she's not

worth it

\*\*\*she interrupted him\*\*\*

Sbu: I don't want to go with you anywhere and I don't want to live with you.....I'll never forgive you for what you did and said to me that day I came to ask for money to buy school shoes...if it wasn't for uncle Heath I would have....

\*\*\*\*then he stopped cause he was getting more angry and emotional at the same time\*\*\*

Sbu: you are no mother to me Dipuo now get out of my father's yard and never set your feet here again

\*\*\*he let her go and took a step back\*\*\*

Dipuo: Sbusiso....

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Sbu: GET OUT DIPUO!

\*\*\*he roared which made Amo and Dipuo to jump a bit ...then a car parked outside the yard

and two scary looking guys got out of the car then one of the guys put his phone on his ear and seconds later he put his phone in his pocket then Amo's phone rang \*\*\*

Amo: babe

Jabu: open the gate for those two guys and go inside with Sbu

Amo: Jabu what's...

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Jabu: Amogelang now!.....please

\*\*\*she sighed and she went inside the house and opened the gate for them and she instructed for Sbu to get inside and she closed the door while Sbu went to the baby's crib and lifted Lile (Jabulile) up and he kissed her forehead and he took her bottle and went to sit down while feeding her....Amo smiled looking at them cause Sbu was protective of his little sister and it was cute, then she heard a car

driving away and she sighed, she prayed that they don't hurt her cause despite being an awful mother to Sbu and a mean human being Dipuo was still Sbu's biological mother nonetheless\*\*\*

.

INSERT.....08

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*INSIDE THE WOODS\*\*\*

\*\*\* Ruslan parked his car where the woods started, it was a cloudy day. He then crouched down and put his palm on the ground and he closed his eyes listening then he heard a banging sound on the ground and he opened his eyes and got up then he walked inside the woods for some time, he would crouch to the

ground every now and then to get the right direction to where the house is cause the gps coordinates shows he's somewhere inside the woods....he walked for some time until he got to some thick tall trees and grass and he could see that a spell is what is making them that thick and scary looking then he pointed his palm to them and his eyes changed color to gold and black and he chanted a spell and the thick trees and grass made a way for him to pass and he walked to the other side and he found the "scary like in a horror movie" abandoned house and he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: copy cat

\*\*\*then he went closer to the house and he stopped walking when he felt a figure watching him not far from him then he turned and his eyes changed to cloudy color and the weather changed....clouds gathered and lightings started



hitting all around but what the person didn't know was they were searching for him until one hit him and he fell from one of the tall trees and he groaned then Ruslan used his magic to lift the person up and brought him to where he is....he used his magic to hold him up right using an invisible magical rope to hold him tight as he floated on air\*\*\*

Ruslan: who are you and what do you want?

\*\*\*he asked with a thick and scary voice\*\*\*

Man: fuck... that hurt!

\*\*\*then he laughed a bit and Ruslan tightened the invisible magical rope that was holding him and he groaned\*\*\*

Ruslan: answer me!

Man: I can't believe you are also here man...damn

\*\*\*Ruslan tightened some more the invisible

rope around him and the man's skin started cracking\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh a full blown vampire how interesting

Man: ok ok im ready to talk....ummm look Castiel and I are buddies and im here to warn him about the Brethren, they found his location man

Ruslan: and who are you?

Man: Eden

\*\*\*then Ruslan chanted a spell that froze him and he let him fall on the ground hard and he picked up a stick and drew a circle around him and four signs of the witches' symbol and he chanted a trap spell that will keep him inside the circle then he faced the house and he lifted off the illusion spell that covered it and a beautiful house emerged and he went inside.... the banging sound wasn't heard anymore and

he remembered that Castiel said he locked himself in the basement and he searched for it and found it then he went down the stairs and he saw a magic spell covering the door then he lifted it off and he opened the door and found the room in shambles.... the walls had cracks and holes on them and everything was broken to pieces and Castiel was on the floor with his face buried between his thighs\*\*\*

Ruslan: damn

Castiel: is not as bad as it looks

\*\*\*he said with a scary voice and still with his face buried between his thighs\*\*\*

Ruslan: ummm yeah it does

\*\*\*then Castiel raised his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: shit I don't remember the last time I saw you like this man

Castiel: I didn't think you'd come

Ruslan: mmmmh I didn't think you'd call me for help too

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: where's your other half

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's coming

Castiel: thought as much

Ruslan: before I forget your vampire buddy Eden is outside looking for you

\*\*\*Castiel frowned and he got up\*\*\*

Castiel: I don't have a friend named Eden in fact I don't have friends...wait the only Eden I know is a Brethren

Ruslan: I knew I didn't trust him

Castiel: shit they found me

\*\*\*he said pacing up and down\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah looks like it now pull yourself

together and let's get out of here

\*\*\*he said walking out and he went upstairs with Castiel behind him....he got to Kazi's room while Cass went to his room to change his clothes and she was awake but still drowsy\*\*\*

Kazi: who...who are you?

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: its ok go back to sleep

\*\*\*then he put his open hand on her forehead and chanted a spell then she passed out and he carried her in his arms then Castiel got in\*\*\*

Ruslan: take important things and lets get out of here

\*\*\*he nodded and went out\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*they were outside and Castiel was standing next to Eden on the other side of the circle \*\*\*

Castiel: unfreeze him Madou

\*\*\*Ruslan did and Eden got up slowly breathing heavily\*\*\*

Eden: I knew it was you

Castiel: yeah so?

\*\*\*Eden chuckled and he tried to get out of the circle but a force stopped him\*\*\*

Eden: ooh I forgot that your bro is a wizard

Castiel: how many are you?

Eden: fuck you man....ooh you are so dead!

\*\*\*then he laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh I see he's a feisty one

Eden: you are all dead!

Ruslan: ooh really...I mean I killed your leader like a cockroach

Eden: and that's why your death is gonna be the most painful

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you clearly don't know me man....you should ask your buddy here what im capable of, now answer the question how many are you

Eden: enough to capture you and take you to the new leader

\*\*\*then he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: remove this spell so I can deal with this fucker Madou!

\*\*\*Ruslan put Kazi down on the ground gently and he went closer to the circle\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't piss me off man, you don't wanna see me when im mad

Eden: go to hell wizard

\*\*\*Ruslan's eyes turned black in color and suddenly it became a bit dark with dark clouds

gathering around and cold air filled the area\*\*\*

Eden: you don't scare me wizard

Ruslan: ኃጢአታ ቸውን ካሌተ ሊከቡ ጊዜው ሲመጣ

\*\*\*then Eden's body made cracking sounds as it stood straight upright and he screamed....Ruslan was controlling his body now\*\*\*

Eden: what the fuck man!

\*\*\*he said with a spooked tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ

\*\*\*he continued to speak using the forbidden language then Eden's left arm stretched forward\*\*\*

Eden: what are you doing to me man!

Castiel: answer us or he won't stop

\*\*\*Eden swallowed hard with his eyes popped\*\*\*



Eden: im not saying anything so go right ahead  
and kill me you bastard

\*\*\*he said breathing heavily\*\*\*

Castiel: ooh no he won't kill you..... just yet

Ruslan: ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምት ሻዋእት ላይ

\*\*\*then Eden's right arm reached for his left  
arm and it forcefully ripped his left arm off his  
ice cold body and he screamed out loud then he  
looked at his ripped out arm looking spooked  
and Ruslan made him throw it to the ground\*\*\*

Castiel: still won't talk?

Eden: go... go to hell!

Castiel: ok

Ruslan: ቢያስቀምጥ ጡትም እንኳ አያደርግህም

\*\*\*then Eden's hand went to his right eye and it  
plucked the eye out and he screamed out loud  
falling to the ground\*\*\*

Castiel: are you ready to talk because he can go on until there's nothing left to rip off your body man

Eden: fine...fine I'll talk...I'll talk

\*\*\*then Ruslan's eyes went back to normal after he spoke some forbidden language words and he went to pick Kazi up\*\*\*

Ruslan: talk!

Eden: there's...there's 5 of us and we are all searching this state or province as they call it here and I guess I found you first

\*\*\*Ruslan just shook his head and he chanted a spell and the spell on the circle got lifted off and he started walking\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's all yours after you done with him burn him to ashes along with the house

\*\*\*Then Castiel smiled wickedly and he jumped on him\*\*\*

.  
. .

\*\*\* he walked inside the gate and walked straight to the door and he banged the door hard\*\*\*

Woman: hei wena a se lebati la mmao kokota pila man ( hey that is not your mother's door knock properly)

\*\*\*a woman said inside the house and then the door opened wide and Dipuo's sister stood there with a smile forming on her face, she has always had a crush on him\*\*\*

Woman: Jabu hey....wow ge o dipapatlile so? (wow you look good)

Jabu: bitsa suster la gao (call your sister)

Woman: Dipuo told me gore you moved on le le yellow bone le lengwe.....why mara abuti Jabu

ke... (with some yellow bone....why brother Jabu when...)

Jabu: hai voetsek man Pelo, ke rile bitsa Dipuo!  
( hai piss off man Pelo, I said call Dipuo!)

\*\*\*he interrupted her and she sulked\*\*\*

Pelo: mxm wa bora ( you are a bore)

\*\*\*then she called Dipuo and she came to the door and swallowed hard when she saw Jabu, she couldn't believe how good looking he was....he even smelled extremely good and you could tell he was swimming in moola now, well Pelo went inside to continue watching Tv...the next thing Jabu grabbed Dipuo by her hair and he pulled her out of the house roughly\*\*\*

Dipuo: ahh Jabu wankgobatsa ( ahh Jabu you are hurting me)

Jabu: o zamang Dipuo....o nyaka bonang wena heh (what are you trying to do Dipuo....what do you wanna see huh)

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Jabu: o tla ko dladleng la ka and you insult my wife....my fucken wife! ( you come to my house and you insult my wife...my fucken wife)

\*\*\*he said shouting at her\*\*\*

Dipuo: Jabu askies

Jabu: o batlo nnyela Dipuo....o lapisitse ke liewe neh....o nyako boda heh? (you wanna shit yourself Dipuo....i see you tired of life .... I see you want to die)

Dipuo: im sorry Jabu

\*\*\*she said looking scared and she covered her face and Jabu let her go which surprised her cause the Jabu she knows would have slapped her or even punched her on her face \*\*\*

Jabu: e nne la bofelo you come to my house wankutlwa ( it should be the last time you come to my house you hear me)

\*\*\*he said pointing at her\*\*\*

Dipuo: I just wanted my son Jabu...she  
poisoned him against me

Jabu: hei...hei..hei....which son....which son  
Dipuo

Dipuo: I know I messed up but ke ngwanaka  
Jabu (he's my son)

Jabu: voetsek...voetsek jou hond....o khethile  
lerete (you chose a dick) over your own son and  
o re you messed up and my wife poisoned Sbu  
against you!

Dipuo: Jabu i....

Jabu: I said Voetsek!

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Jabu: my wife is off limits wankutlwa....o tla  
nnyela mo vroung ya ka, ke tla o tllhaba kuku ka  
thipa sfebe wankutlwa....by the time ke fetsa ka  
wena marago nyana a ma kima a a go tlatla ke

di ARVs le mokhaba wa go tlatsa ke di sperms  
tša go nkgā dipatji tša di bari di tla fela wa sala  
e kare o tshwere ke final stage sa AIDS  
wankutlwa

( my wife is off limits you hear me....you'll shit  
yourself when it comes to my wife, I'll stab your  
pussy with a knife bitch you hear me.... by the  
time im done with you that huge ass filled with  
ARV pills and that fat belly filled with sperms  
that smells like marijuana belonging to  
idiots/fools will perish and you'll end up looking  
like you are on a last stage of AIDS you hear me)

\*\*\*he said pointing at her\*\*\*

Jabu: o sa nyaka go ntlwaela masepa Dipuo  
(don't piss me off Dipuo) you know what im  
capable of so don't push me to my limits....bona  
mo Dipuo come at my wife again or insult her  
and you'll disappear without a trace.... you fokon  
shit nx

\*\*\* then he turned and walked to the gate  
leaving Dipuo sobbing and shaking with fear \*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*AT CASTIEL'S OTHER HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Kazi woke up after Ruslan lifted the spell off  
her and she looked around and found Ruslan  
looking at her\*\*\*

Kazi: please...please don't hurt me

\*\*\*she said looking scared\*\*\*

Ruslan: hey relax I wont hurt you...I wont hurt  
you ok

\*\*\*he said with a warm smile and she nodded  
slowly and he helped her sit properly on the  
couch\*\*\*

Kazi: where...where am i



Ruslan: Castiel's other house

Kazi: Castiel is...is here?

\*\*\*she asked with a shaky voice looking around\*\*\*

Ruslan: relax he won't do anything to you or else I'll fuck him up pretty bad

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: even though he's a ticking time bomb and an asshole most of the time but he saved your life...so that must mean he's not that bad right

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ruslan: im his younger brother Ruslan and you must be Kazi right

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: will he ever let me go

Ruslan: yeah I'll make sure of it ok

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: are you also a...

\*\*\*she couldn't even say it and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: no and he was born like this so he didn't ask to be a hybrid vamp

Kazi: what's a hybrid

Castiel: a half human half vampire

\*\*\*she froze\*\*\*

Castiel: don't act shocked you did see the fangs, skin and eyes I mean my skin now is still pale so

Ruslan: will you just shut it and go punch a wall or something

\*\*\*he showed Ruslan the middle finger and went to the kitchen\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's a special case don't mind him please

Kazi: how come you are not a...

Ruslan: same mother different fathers

\*\*\*she nodded and Castiel came back with a glass full of blood and he was drinking with a straw\*\*\*

Ruslan: really Cass

Castiel: what?

Ruslan: what the fuck is wrong with you huh...you gonna drink that in front of her

Castiel: my house man

\*\*\*Ruslan just shook his head and looked at Kazi\*\*\*

Ruslan: you are going back home tomorrow

Castiel: whoa....stop right there

Ruslan: I wasn't asking for your permission  
Cass

\*\*\*he said with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: I own her Madou so don't get involved

\*\*\*he said taking a step forward\*\*\*

Ruslan: how much

Castiel: huh?

Ruslan: how much for her release since you suddenly love money so much

Castiel: she's not for sale now stay out of this Madou it doesn't involve you in any way

\*\*\*Ruslan got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: maybe I should let the Brethren kill you so she can be free....i mean you once chose a pussy over me so that shit might as well run in the family

Castiel: wow

\*\*\*then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: so what is it gonna be brother

Castiel: fuck you Madou nx

\*\*\*then he walked away looking pissed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you going home tomorrow ok

\*\*\*Kazi nodded and she breathed a sigh of relief then Ruslan's phone rang he got up and went to another room\*\*\*

Ruslan: bros

Ray: you still at the same location

Ruslan: no we were made, I found a Brethren there

Ray: fuck no

Ruslan: yeah so I'll send you a new location

Ray: ok send it now im on the road

Ruslan: ok...are you ok man you sound down

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: Pedro dos Santos is dead

Ruslan: what? damn....umm why do you sound hurt that he is

Ray: cause Celine her daughter is taking over from him man

Ruslan: ooh...shit

\*\*\*he said rubbing his head\*\*\*

Ray: and Mateo just called me and said she set up an appointment with me to discuss our contract...worse part she's coming here

Ruslan: shit!

Ray: im married now man and we both know what she really wants....that contract is important and that bitch might....

Ruslan: don't say it

\*\*\*he interrupted him\*\*\*

Ray: this is not only about me Ruu....Mateo and Diego depend on this contract...they have families they need to take care of....Serine's hospital bills are expensive and.... that bitch will give me a condition I know it....it might not be

on this meeting im about to have with her but I know she will one of this days

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: maybe she over that man

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: she's been after my dick for as long as I can remember and the only reason I didn't give in even though she would threaten me every now and then that she will lie and tell her father that she's pregnant for me is because Pedro warned me not to or else he'll stop doing business with us

Ruslan: shit!

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: just get here and we will figure a way out

Ray: ok

\*\*\*then they ended the call\*\*\*

Ruslan: this is bad

\*\*\*then he got up and went to make a drinkable  
potion for Kazi's internal wounds to heal fast  
and another one for Castiel to minimize his  
thirst and he waited for Ray\*\*\*

.

INSERT.....09

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*soon Ray arrived and he went inside and he  
greeted Kazi and him and Ruslan went to the



dining room \*\*\*

Ray: where is he?

Castiel: right here

\*\*\*Ray turned and smirked looking at him\*\*\*

Ray: damn you look like shit

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: you asshole you have been here all along  
and you couldn't even call to say hi...piece of  
shit

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: I've been busy man

\*\*\*then they got closer to each other and they  
bro-hugged then Castiel broke it off quickly and  
took a step back\*\*\*

Castiel: careful I can see and hear your pulse on  
your neck pumping blood man and even though  
I have a feeling that your blood is bitter as fuck

but im thirsty so....

\*\*\*Ray laughed and Castiel joined him\*\*\*

Ray: you good

Ruslan: yeah he's good and annoying now let's go sit down so he can tell us what the fuck is happening

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed tone\*\*\*

Castiel: wow but I thought all is forgiven between us brother

Ruslan: fuck off Castiel

\*\*\*Ray laughed and Castiel shook his head.....anyway they went to sit in Castiel's study room then Castiel started narrating everything Juana said and by the time he was done Ruslan was angry as hell and hurt so they let him go outside to cool off\*\*\*

.

.

.  
\*\*\*\*A DAY LATER AT MENZI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Menzi and Buhle's parents were sitting in the lounge, Buhle's parents called this meeting after Kazi's ex-friend and Buhle's cousin Lele told them about Menzi and Kazi's affair thinking that's why Buhle committed suicide\*\*\*

Menzi: ok now that we are all here.... what is this meeting all about?

Buhle's father: Ngcobo we just heard from Lele about you cheating on our daughter, is that why she killed herself?

\*\*\*he asked with an angry voice\*\*\*

Menzi: ang'zwanga (excuse me)

Buhle's mother: you killed my daughter ngo bufebe bakho nja ndini ( with your whoring ways you dog)

\*\*\*she said with a pained and angry voice\*\*\*

Buhle's father: hai man Khethiwe

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Khethiwe: ubulale indodakazi yam baba ka Buhle (he killed my daughter)...my daughter is gone and he killed her

\*\*\*she said crying and Menzi got up as he was getting angry\*\*\*

Menzi: get out of my house

\*\*\*he said with a low tone\*\*\*

Buhle's father: heh?

Menzi: ngithe phumani ni phele emzini wami! ( I said get out of my house)

Buhle's Father: Ngcobo the meeting is not yet done

Menzi: what meeting....first of all you don't even know what happened and you are here in my house busy calling me names....your precious daughter is a killer she killed innocent children

because of mere jealousy

Khethiwe: unamanga....you are lying....you're just trying to shift the blame to Buhle cause she's not here to defend herself

\*\*\*he just went upstairs and soon came back with her suicide letter and he threw it at Buhle's father\*\*\*

Menzi: that good for nothing daughter of yours killed my unborn kids just because she couldn't handle me wanting a second wife....i forgave her for fucking my father years back and getting pregnant by him and she....

\*\*\*he stopped talking as he was getting angrier and he went to pour himself a drink breathing heavily\*\*\*

Khethiwe: she didn't write this....my daughter would never do something like this

\*\*\*she said after she read the letter and she threw it on the floor\*\*\*

Buhle's father: what do you mean she slept with your father....on the letter she apologized for....

\*\*\*he couldn't even finish it\*\*\*

Menzi: why do you think she was hospitalized that time...ooh I remember she lied and told you that she was mugged right?

\*\*\*then he chuckled bitterly\*\*\*

Khethiwe: you are lying man!

\*\*\*she shouted at him\*\*\*

Menzi: well I found her in bed with my father fucking and I beat the shit out of her....i wanted to kill her so bad but then I thought of my child....then three months later she found out she was pregnant and months later she gave birth to a baby girl and I did a DNA test and I wasn't the father but guess what my father was \*\*\*buhle's mother started crying again with her hands shaking\*\*\*

Menzi: I only kept quiet of all this because of my kids so don't come to my house and accuse me of bullshit!

\*\*\*then he got up\*\*\*

Menzi: now please leave my house....you can even bury her cause im not interested in burying someone who killed my unborn babies and tell that cousin of hers that she's fired nx

\*\*\*then his phone rang and he stood up and walked away leaving Buhle's parents shocked and in an bad emotional state\*\*\*

Menzi: yah

Man: she's here man....Kazi is here at the police station

Menzi: heh?

\*\*\*he said as he stopped walking with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Man: she was just found outside the police

station yard passed out...she's still alive and an ambulance is on its way here

Menzi: she...she's there

\*\*\*he asked making sure he heard him correctly\*\*\*

Man: yeah man, she's here...your Kazi is here

Menzi: fuck...ummm.... im on my way...im on my way

\*\*\*he dropped the call and quickly went to grab his car keys and wallet and he rushed out leaving Buhle's parents still sitting in the lounge\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*AT THE HOSPITAL \*\*\*

\*\*\*Kazi slowly opened her eyes and she



scanned the room and she cleared her throat and Menzi quickly turned and when he saw that she was awake he rushed to her\*\*\*

Menzi: hey you are awake

\*\*\*he said smiling with tears in his eyes\*\*\*

Kazi: Me...Menzi?

Menzi: yes baby it's me....you're safe baby...I can't believe you're here...I thought I'd never see you again...I searched for you everywhere but it's like you disappeared into thin air

\*\*\* he said that and kissed her forehead but she didn't say anything she just blinked looking lost\*\*\*

Menzi: who took you...who dared me sthandwa sam?

\*\*\*he said looking into her eyes but she continued to blink looking lost\*\*\*

Menzi: Ntandokazi?

Kazi: i...I was kidnapped?

\*\*\*Menzi frowned\*\*\*

Menzi: what do you mean by that?

Kazi: I remember parking my car after talking to you on the phone and I felt like someone or something was watching me so I decided to turn and go back to the car and wait until you arrive then I heard a loud bang and I fell feeling pain on my stomach and the next thing I felt like someone or something was holding me and we were moving at a very high speed and I passed out and I just woke up now

\*\*\*he looked at her worried\*\*\*

Menzi: ummm ok let...let me go see your doctor I'll be back ok

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead and walked out....he found a nurse and asked her to call for Kazi's doctor and she did and soon he arrived and shook hands with him\*\*\*

Menzi: what's wrong with her doc, I mean she can't remember that she was kidnapped for days

Doctor: I suspect that she's suffering from Transient global amnesia or it could be retrograde amnesia or anterograde amnesia which is bad kind of amnesia

\*\*\*Menzi brushed his head roughly\*\*\*

Menzi: ok simple english doc

Doctor: ok...ummm with Transient global amnesia is a sudden temporary loss of memory for events during, after and sometimes before the event that caused the amnesia and retrograde amnesia is the inability to retrieve information that was acquired before a particular date of an accident or operation or even during an accident

Menzi: ok how long will it take for her to regain her memory back

Doctor: well a therapist is the right doctor to give you a proper diagnosis about her type of amnesia but what I know is we should pray that she's suffering from Transient global amnesia cause it gets resolved within a short period of time

\*\*\*Menzi swallowed hard\*\*\*

Doctor: I have assigned her a good therapist and she'll be here tomorrow around 11 am and she will give you a proper diagnosis

Menzi: ok... umm she was shot

Doctor: ooh yes and whoever took her treated her wound like a professional....she doesn't have any infections and the wound is healing very well and fast

\*\*\*Menzi clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Menzi: she...she was pregnant so is....

\*\*\*the doctor sighed\*\*\*

Doctor: yes I meant to tell you about that but I was quickly called to the ER... ummm whomever took her also professionally cleaned her womb and luckily no damage was done to it

\*\*\*Menzi clenched his jaws getting emotional\*\*\*

Menzi: ummm ok thank you

\*\*\*the doctor nodded\*\*\*

Doctor: my advice is don't force her to remember what happened to her, give her time and let a professional help her the right way cause forcing her to remember may do more damage, just be patient with her and also be there for her and get her the help she needs

\*\*\*Menzi nodded and the doctor left then Menzi sighed heavily and went back to her ward and found her eating slowly\*\*\*

Menzi: hey

\*\*\*she looked up and he smiled faintly at her as he walked closer to her bed\*\*\*

Menzi: im glad you safe

\*\*\*he said and kissed her forehead and she looked down\*\*\*

Kazi: how...how long was I gone?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: a few days

Kazi: who...who shot me and why

\*\*\*then her eyes popped out and her hand went to her stomach\*\*\*

Kazi: my babies....my babies...are they ok?

\*\*\*she said with tears in her eyes looking at Menzi with her hands shaking and Menzi swallowed hard getting emotional\*\*\*

Kazi: Menzi are my babies ok?

Menzi: im sorry but they...

\*\*\*\*she shook her head repeatedly with tears running down her cheeks and her bottom lip shaking\*\*\*

Kazi: no no no

Menzi: im sorry sthandwa sam....im sorry

\*\*\*she let out a heart wrenching cry and Menzi held her tight as she let it all out with his own tears running down his face\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\* later at night Menzi was sleeping on the couch inside Kazi's ward while Kazi was sleeping on the hospital bed ...on the far corner of the room Castiel was standing in the shadows since the lights were deemed watching her sleep, then his eyes went to Menzi and he clenched his jaws and his eyes changed

color but then he calmed himself down because he didn't wanna cause a scene cause the brethren are on his trail.....then Kazi moved a bit and his eyes went back to her and he continued to watch her sleep until around 4 in the morning then he apparated from that room to the parking lot \*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*TWO DAYS LATER\*\*\*\*

Celine: hey thanks for seeing me...I know you're a busy man

\*\*\*she said shaking his hand\*\*\*

Ray: mmmmh

\*\*\*he said sitting down\*\*\*

Celine: are you still the whiskey guy or now you into beer or gin



Ray: im good...im cutting off any kind of alcohol....health reasons

\*\*\*he lied....he just didn't trust her and well her eyes popped out in a surprised manner then she chuckled\*\*\*

Celine: wow that's a first so a cup of tea will do for you huh?

Ray: just say what brought you here Celine

\*\*\* she laughed and took a sip of her drink\*\*\*

Celine: aren't you gonna say your condolences

Ray: ok my condolences Celine.... now why am I here

Celine: wow cold much....anyway you are here because of our business together

Ray: im listening

Celine: well im reviewing contracts my father made when he was still alive and im gonna cancel those I think are more of a liability to us

than an asset

Ray: ok and?

Celine: ok La Parca are you always this cold?

Ray: im not your friend Celine and this is not a social meeting so just say what you wanna say and stop wasting my time

Celine: jeez fine

\*\*\*she leaned back on her seat and looked at him\*\*\*

Celine: well im not happy with the arrangement you had with my father... Que su alma descansa en paz (may his soul rest in peace)

Ray: go on

Celine: I checked our books and your contract and it seems like you benefit as much as we do on this deal but we do most of the work

Ray: and what makes you say that

Celine: the trucks that are used are ours and the men are also ours but you get 50 percent that's not right La Parca....we do all the work

Ray: the contact is mine and im the one paying for bribes and I also make sure the cargo and your men gets to your father safely so don't say shit you know nothing about

Celine: our men's life are the ones that are always in danger and if those trucks get seized it will be our asses on the line not yours

\*\*\*Ray chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: so?

Celine: so we lower your own share of the percentage to 40 percent or the deal is off

\*\*\*Ray laughed then his phone rang, it was Mbali and he let it ring until it stopped\*\*\*

Ray: you must be drunk

Celine: excuse me

Ray: you heard me

\*\*\*then his phone rang again and it was Mbali again and he let it ring and he decided to put his phone on silent mode\*\*\*

Celine: so you think the percentage you are getting is fair

Ray: lady do you think we are running a beauty salon here

Celine: please don't insult me or you will not like what I will do

\*\*\*Ray leaned forward\*\*\*

Ray: don't make a mistake of threatening me Celine...I don't take it lightly

\*\*\*he said looking straight into her eyes and she saw his eyes change colour quickly and she moved her eyes and she looked down briefly\*\*\*

Celine: I didn't come here to stain my expensive dress with some dirty blood La Parca im here

for business

Ray: then tell your sniper or bodyguard that when he takes that shot he shouldn't miss cause if he does nc nc nc

\*\*\*then he got up\*\*\*

Celine: sit down im still talking!

Ray: listen here Celine, if you can't play with the big dogs say so but don't come here and tell me rubbish...the contact is mine and I only know him and his location so if you can't handle how things are done then say so and I'll go look for another willing partner

Celine: no one has the same roads as we do La Parca you need us as much as we need you but you need us more so rethink what you are about to do

Ray: don't you have an adviser or something cause if you don't then you need one...your thinking is premature and if you're not carefully

you'll run daddy dearest's legacy to the ground...and remember your father's enemies are waiting for you to fuck up so they can still your clients and if you're not careful I might be the first one they steal

Celine: so do we have a deal La Parca

\*\*\*she said ignoring him and Ray shook his head and he took his car keys from the table\*\*\*

Ray: call me once you done with your menstruation circle Celine so we can discuss some serious business and not this nonsense....i would say it was nice seeing you but it's not so safe trip back home

\*\*\*he then fastened his suit jacket and he walked to the door of the restaurant and out he went and Celine banged the table frustrated\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*later at night he was in bed with Mbali after they put Saint to sleep....she had her head on his chest while he played with her hair\*\*\*

Mbali: how was your day?

Ray: it was ok

Mbali: mmmmh so you were at the office all day?

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Ray: yeah why?

Mbali: you sure about that?

\*\*\*he pushed her off him slowly and he looked at her\*\*\*

Ray: what is it that you really wanna ask me my flower?

Mbali: fine...who was that woman you were having lunch with?

\*\*\*Ray raise his eyebrow looking at her\*\*\*

Ray: and how do you know I was having lunch with some woman

Mbali: just answer me Ray

Ray: and I asked you a question

\*\*\*he sat up straight and she did too\*\*\*

Ray: are you having me followed Mbali?

Mbali: are you gonna answer my question or not  
Ray

Ray: you having me followed aren't you...

\*\*\*he chuckled and got out of bed\*\*\*

Ray: you are having me followed Mbali?

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Mbali: why are you making it a big deal Ray you also have men keeping tabs of me and im not complaining

Ray: its for your safety damn it...what's your excuse!



\*\*\*he said raising his voice and she kept quiet\*\*\*

Ray: I asked you a fucken question

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Mbali: we...we can't have sex Ray cause I haven't healed properly and you love sex

Ray: so?

Mbali: I cant give it to you and sometimes when I want to blow you you stop me so what am I supposed to think huh

\*\*\*Ray chuckled while shaking his head getting angrier\*\*\*

Ray: so that little brain of yours thinks im cheating right

Mbali: please don't insult my brain Ray ok just answer me...who's that woman you were having lunch with

Ray: you know what im not doing this with you

Mbali

\*\*\*he said wearing his sleepers and she got out of bed\*\*\*

Mbali: where are you going?

Ray: I need some air

Mbali: so you're going to walk out on me when im talking to you

Ray: first of all we are not talking but you are accusing me of useless shit so im gonna go out for some air before I say something I know I'll regret

\*\*\*then he walked out and Mbali sat down on the edge of the bed and tears ran down her cheeks....the following morning Mbali walked in the kitchen and Ray was standing leaning on the counter staring into space with a cup of coffee on the counter next to him....he only came back to his senses when she greeted him\*\*\*

Ray: hey

\*\*\*he greeted back and he drank his coffee and Mbali started making a cup of coffee for herself\*\*\*

Ray: im gonna come back a bit late tonight

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ray: im talking to you

Mbali: I heard you

\*\*\*she said with a lace of annoyance in her voice and Ray shook his head and he put his cup down and he went closer to her and attempted to kiss her cheek but she moved her face\*\*\*

Ray: really now?

\*\*\*she didn't say anything and he chuckled and he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: I should be the one who's mad for having me followed

Mbali: first of all im not having you followed, I went out to have lunch with Kalu cause I wanted to get out of this house for a couple of hours and I saw you with her when I was passing by some fancy restaurant...I called you and you looked at your phone and ignored my call

Ray: didn't it occur to you that maybe that was an important business meeting

\*\*\* he said getting pissed and she chuckled\*\*\*

Mbali: you always answer my calls Ray...you even once answered my call while you were in the middle of an arms deal meeting

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Mbali: I just hope she's worth it...the only reason that I cant have sex with you is because I haven't healed so if waiting for me to heal is not worth it then just know that once I have proof that you are cheating on me Ray even Saint

being angry at you will be the least of your problems

Ray: im not cheating on you what the fuck is wrong with you huh....your insecurities are starting to piss me off Mbali....i have a lot that im dealing with so I don't need to deal with your shit right now

\*\*\*he shouted at her with an angry voice\*\*\*

Mbali: ok

\*\*\*she moved away from him and attempted to walk away but then she stopped and turned to look at him\*\*\*

Mbali: all this baby fat will go away once I hit the gym Ray and my new stretch marks will disappear with a laser treatment and I'll go do my hair and nails and I'll be myself again....so if this "ME" is turning you off even though im like this because of your son I carried in my womb and almost died while giving birth to him then

shame on you....you no longer shower with me, you don't want me to even give you a blow job anymore, we hardly spend time together and now you avoid my calls when you are having lunch with other women....

Ray: are you done being dramatic

\*\*\* he interrupted her and she looked at him with tears in her eyes\*\*\*

Mbali: wow ok...just so you know there are men who would give up their wealth just to tap this ass

\*\*\*she said grabbing her ass\*\*\*

Mbali: so don't think you are doing me a favour by being with me...like I said i will go back to my old self so yah don't think you're doing me any favours Raymond nx

Ray: what did you just say?

\*\*\*he said with a scary frown on his face and

she walked away\*\*\*

Ray: MBALI!

\*\*\*he called after her but she ignored him and he stood there replaying what she just said and he chuckled angrily\*\*\*

INSERT.....11

.

.

.

\*\*\*\* AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* La Parca looked at Ruslan who now was on his one knee and his head bowed \*\*\*

La Parca: እምም ሞትንያታ ልላ ልይህ (you summoned me...why)

Ruslan: ብዙጊ ዜያቸንእንዲ ያሳ ልፉ እናደርጋለን ( your

carrier's life is in danger)

\*\*\*La Parca looked from Saint to a terrified Mbali then he hit his scythe on the floor and Mbali fell and collapsed on the floor and he looked at Saint and he hit his scythe on the floor again and Saint turned to his original form\*\*\*

La Parca: ደንቦችን ስለ ጣሱ እና ደንቦችን (demon on your knee)

\*\*\*Saint slowly went on his knee looking at a passed out Mbali and he bowed his head\*\*\*

La Parca: ደግሞ ሞትን ያ ታል (who dared me)

\*\*\*Ruslan cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ruslan: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው, እናም እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው ( no one dared you great one, it was just a fight that turned ugly)

\*\*\*La Parca looked at Saint\*\*\*

La Parca: ሰዓቱ ሲመጣ ጥሩ ጋኔን ይፈጥርለታል,



በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይ  
(what are you doing outside associating  
yourself with human squabbles demon)

\*\*\*Saint didn't say anything his head was bend  
to the left a bit while he bowed his head looking  
at a passed out Mbali\*\*\*

La Parca: አዎ ንእርሱ ታላ ቅኝ ውአዎን (im talking to  
you demon!)

Saint: ጊዜ ውሲመ ጣላነፍሳቸው እመጣለሁ (he hurt  
my carrier's mother)

La Parca: ጊዜውሲ መጣ ላነፍሳቸው እ መጣለሁ ጊዜው  
ሲመጣ ላነፍሳቸው እመጣለሁ (isn't my carrier your  
carrier's father)

\*\*\*Saint didn't say anything for a bit\*\*\*

Saint: እሱ ጠን (he is)

La Parca: ሳይሆ (and?)

Saint: ያሳ ልጅ እናደ ርጋለን ብዙያሳልጅ እናደ (he  
shouldn't have touched her)

La Parca: ደንቦ ችንስ ለጣሱእናተ ወዳጅተወዳጅ ከሆኑ  
(and you shouldn't have touched him!)

\*\*\*then he hit his scythe on the floor and Saint  
felt like he was being choked as he struggled  
to breathe\*\*\*

Ruslan: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ, ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም  
ኃጢአታችውን ካሌተ ( great one please stop you'll  
also kill his carrier)

\*\*\*he said with a panicking voice\*\*\*

La Parca: ንስሏ ካ ሌገባችሁ ናሁለንምኃጢ (and I care  
because)

Ruslan: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ, ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም  
ኃጢአታችውን ካሌተ ከዚህም በተጨማሪ, ንስሏ  
ካሌገባችሁና (great one please your carrier won't  
survive it if he wakes up and finds his son  
dead...please)

\*\*\*he pleaded some more and after a while La  
Parca let Saint be and he fell on the floor and he  
got up and knelt on the floor again with his head

bowed and a deadly look on his face\*\*\*

La Parca: ያ ስፍራው በጣም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምት ችዋእት ላይ ቢያስቀምጡትም እንኳ አያደርጉትም እምመጤ ይህ ጥሩው አስማተኛ, ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲያስተምረው, ስለዚህ ሊወለድ የነበረው የአጥንት ቅዱስ ስብዕናለመያዝ ይችላል ከዚህም በተጨማሪ, ንስሊ ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም ኃጢአታቸውን ካሌተሊከቡ (demon don't think you are indispensable and untouchable just because you're attached to a child's soul, threaten my carriers life again and I'll take you to hell myself and your torture will continue from where it was left of...now don't dare me cause that boy's life means nothing to me so tread carefully)

\*\*\*he warned him and Saint didn't say anything instead he kept on looking at a passed out Mbali and La Parca hit his scythe on the floor and Saint was hit by a hard force and he fell back \*\*\*

La Parca: እመጣታሆሁ (Demon!)

\*\*\*he said hitting his scythe again on the floor and the ground shook\*\*\*

Saint: ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም ኃጢአታ (I heard you great one)

La Parca: ያ ስፍራው በጣም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምት ችዋእት ላይ ቢያስቀምጡትም እንኳ አያደርጉት (you are walking on thin ice so next time I come out because of you im taking you straight to hell and Belphegor will torture you himself for eternity)

\*\*\*Saint swallowed hard and La Parca hit his scythe on the floor and Saint went to his black smoke form and La Parca looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

La Parca: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው, እናም እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው (she's too weak to handle seeing me in my full form)

Ruslan: ጣጥጥ ጋኔን ይፈጥርለታል, በጨለማው አለም

ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል (I'll wipe off her memory from when you showed yourself great one)

La Parca: ጠንካራ (good)

\*\*\*then he hit his scythe on the floor and strong winds filled the room and black smoke covered La Parca completely and lightning hit around the black smoke for some time, then the lightning stopped and the black smoke came down to the floor and then it disappeared and Ray was now on the floor passed out and Mbali gasped as if someone just filled her lungs with air and she coughed a bit and she opened her eyes then Ruslan rushed to her\*\*\*

Ruslan: take it easy...don't get up...don't get up

\*\*\*then he touched on both side of her head with his fingers and his eyes changed colour and they became gold then he did what he had to do and she passed out again and he

sighed\*\*\*

Saint: you should've let me deal with him instead of calling La Parka, now I know where your loyalty lies

\*\*\*then he disappeared\*\*\*

Ruslan: shit...shit...shit

\*\*\*he picked Mbali up and took her to one of the bedrooms downstairs and he put her on the bed and covered her with a throw blanket and he went to the bathroom and wet a towel and he went to clean up her face off all the blood and he went to check on little Kalu and he was awake now....he picked him up and Kalu started crying his lungs out, he took his bottle and tried to feed him but he refused it\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh cut it out Saint, Kalu need to feed, stop your stupid nonsense or I'll command the La Parca to come out again

\*\*\*Kalu stopped crying and he blinked and

looked at Ruslan with his beautiful sapphire eyes and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: if it wasn't you Saint doing this I would say 'cute' but since it's you then fuck you for using a child to get to me

\*\*\*Kalu laughed with his baby laugh and Ruslan laughed too\*\*\*

Ruslan: you demon dickhead

\*\*\*Kalu laughed again and Ruslan chuckled and he went to the lounge with him in his hands and he pushed a fluffy ottoman chair next to Ray and he sat down and fed Kalu\*\*\*

Ruslan: Ray!

\*\*\*he called out to him but he didn't move\*\*\*

Ruslan: RAY WAKE UP MAN!

\*\*\*still nothing....then he shook him using his foot and he starred a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: WAKE UP MAN!

\*\*\*he starred again and groaned\*\*\*

Ruslan: come on wake up!

\*\*\* he opened his eyes and frowned and groaned in pain\*\*\*

Ray: shit!

\*\*\*he said with his hand on his lower back\*\*\*

Ruslan: take it easy

\*\*\*he groaned again as he tried to sit up\*\*\*

Ray: fuck!

\*\*\*he said touching his head and closing his eyes a bit when a headache hit him\*\*\*

Ruslan: I said take it easy

Ray: fuck.... what happened?

Ruslan: La Parca happened

Ray: what?

\*\*\*he said looking at Ruslan with a frown on his



face he was now sitting up\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah you are still alive because of him

\*\*\*he looked around\*\*\*

Ray: Mbali...where is Mbali?

\*\*\*he said panicking \*\*\*

Ruslan: relax she's ok....she passed out and I took her to the bedroom downstairs

Ray: and Saint?

Ruslan: La Parca set him straight don't worry about him

\*\*\*then he looked at Kalu\*\*\*

Ruslan: right you demon dickhead

\*\*\*he chuckled and Kalu cried\*\*\*

Ray: cut it out man, don't call my son that

Ruslan: im not calling your son that, im talking to Saint

\*\*\*Ray tried to get up and Mbali's phone rang....Ruslan got up and checked who was calling and it was Jay...he let it ring\*\*\*

Ray: who's that?

\*\*\*he said getting up and he groaned when he felt a sharp pain on his back\*\*\*

Ray: fuck!

Ruslan: it's her brother Jay

Ray: I don't have strength to deal with him

\*\*\*he groaned again when he tried to walk\*\*\*

Ray: fuck.... I think that demon dickhead broke my back

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: I thought you said I shouldn't call him that

Ray: well he broke my back

Ruslan: and you hit his mother a tit for a tat

....anyway lets go to the basement La Parca needs to sleep even if it's for a few hours

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: do you think she'll leave me

Ruslan: I don't know man but what I know is once his brothers know about what you did to her, the chances of this marriage working will be zero to none....we both know how the brothers feel about you especially Jay, Snakes and her father

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I didn't know about the baby man and I swear I have never slept with Celine

Ruslan: then who's the baby mama

\*\*\*Mbali's phone rang again and this time it was Snakes and they let it ring again\*\*\*

Ray: the woman I used to fuck back then was Consuelo Rodrigues

\*\*\*Ruslan raised an eyebrow at him\*\*\*

Ray: she's Celine's cousin

Ruslan: Amen!

\*\*\*he said shaking his head\*\*\*

Ray: she's also the woman I cheated on Mbali with on the early stages of our relationship but she never told me about no baby so....

\*\*\*he groaned with pain and Ruu shook his head and he got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: let's go to the basement like I said La Parca need to rest even if it's just for a few hours

\*\*\*he walked away disappointed at Ray and Mbali's phone rang again, Ray looked at who's calling and he clicked his tongue and walked away following Ruslan feeling like shit\*\*\*

.

.

.  
\*\*\*\* NIGERIA\*\*\*\*

Kev: do a fake suicide attempt

\*\*\*Mj frowned at him\*\*\*

Mj: nawa oh! ah ah this boy.... you dey craze....are you mad

\*\*\*Kev chuckled\*\*\*

Kev: relax ok, I said FAKE suicide attempt....FAKE

Mj: abeg fake or not suicide is suicide man....do I look like someone who would kill himself or attempt to

Kev: do you want my help or not

Mj: look man don't let the devil use you, don't let it use you to make me commit suicide man

\*\*\*Kev sighed shaking his head\*\*\*

Kev: can you get serious just once in your life

man

Mj: im dead serious man....im too fine to associate myself with suicide man....and what if I die for real man

Kev: dude come on

\*\*\*Mj shook his head\*\*\*

Mj: you no dey hear word man..... God and satan are busy fighting over me and now you want me to give the devil the upper hand no man no

\*\*\*Kev laughed shaking his head\*\*\*

Kev: fine but listen to my plan first before you dismiss it

Mj: fine im listening

Kev: ok fine....you drink three sleeping pills and stage the scene by scattering a few pills on your side drawer and go empty the container and put it on the side drawer along with an empty glass of water and you'll thank me later

\*\*\*Mj gave him a “wtf” look\*\*\*

Mj: are you high man?

Kev: trust me man it will work and your dad won't do anything to you and your brothers will get more angry at chief for threatening you and they'll blame him for it

\*\*\*Mj kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Kev: it will work man

Mj: how do you know huh....what if I don't wake up

Kev: well I did....it's only three sleeping pills man

Mj: you no be God Kevin, what if this is the only way the devil will get me huh

Kev: look this plan once worked for me and I got away with crashing dad's brand new Benz after I took it without his permission and went on a date with that high fly girl I once told you about and on my way back I crashed it

Mj: what? why don't I know about this man

Kev: my dad said I shouldn't tell anyone about it especially about me trying to "commit suicide" ....imagine chief Peters son in hospital for a suicide attempt

Mj: damn

Kev: mmmmh and I got no ass whoopin, nothing bro....all I got was being yelled at my mom and dad about how suicide is not an answer and that my life is more important than a car

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Mj: you sneaky little bastard

\*\*\*they laughed again\*\*\*

Kev: so that's my plan man

Mj: fine but if something goes wrong and I die know that I'll come back as a ghost and haunt you until you kill yourself too



\*\*\*Kev laughed\*\*\*

Kev: relax nothing will happen to you

.

.

.

\*\*\*\* AT THE MALL\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*Kazi was walking around inside a boutique shopping for new clothes....she lost a bit of weight so her clothes were a bit loose so after a lot of convincing Mazwi let her come to the mall but with some guards ofcourse since he had a meeting to go to..... She saw a nice summer dress and she put it inside the basket she was carrying and she continued to look, then on the corner of her eye she saw some guy looking at her and she moved to another row of clothes cause his stare made her feel some tupa way and she searched for more clothes to buy...

Then she saw the guy on the corner of her eye again and he was staring then she looked around for her two guards and they were by the door and she sighed and when she attempted to move he was standing right in front of her and she freaked out a bit \*\*\*

Man: relax I mean no harm

\*\*\*he said in a calm manner and the guards quickly moved to her and grabbed the man and the man chuckled\*\*\*

Guard1: are you ok mam.....is he giving you trouble?

Kazi: ummm

\*\*\*she said looking at the guy and his face seemed familiar \*\*\*

Man: I just wanted to say hi that's all...like I said I mean no harm

Guard2: shut up!

Kazi: ummm its ok....let...let him go guys

Guard1: are you sure?

\*\*\*Kazi nodded and they let him go\*\*\*

Guard2: don't try anything funny or you'll regret it

Man: mmmh noted

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head then the guard went to stand not far from them\*\*\*

Man: hi

Kazi: hey ummm...im sorry about that.... ummm you look familiar especially your eyes, do I know you from somewhere

Man: yeah, we met inside an elevator at Summer Glaze hotel and you almost fell but I caught you before you could, remember

\*\*\*she frowned then her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Kazi: the guy with cold hands and creepy

eyes....yeah I remember you

\*\*\* the man laughed a beautiful laugh while  
Kazi just smiled\*\*\*

Man: the name is Castiel by the way....Cass for  
short

\*\*\*he said stretching his hand out for a  
handshake and Kazi shook his hand and she  
frowned looking at their hands\*\*\*

Kazi: im Ntandokazi...Kazi for short...damn your  
hand is cold

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled and he pulled his hand back  
and put both his hands inside his pockets\*\*\*

Castiel: I get that a lot

Kazi: is it a condition or...

Castiel: ngilala ngingunu that's why ( I sleep  
naked that's why)

\*\*\*Kazi's eyes popped out and Castiel  
laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: you didn't just say that

\*\*\*Castiel laughed again\*\*\*

Castiel: ngiya dlala man ( im kidding man), it's some sort of a..... condition

\*\*\*she chuckled shaking her head\*\*\*

Castiel: you good

Kazi: mmmmh why?

Castiel: ummm guards

\*\*\*he said pointing at the guards and she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: I was kidnapped weeks back so my boyfriend is just being careful...well too careful I must say

\*\*\*Castiel clenched his jaws looking down then he faked a smile looking at her\*\*\*

Castiel: a boyfriend huh?

Kazi: yep

\*\*\*then her phone rang\*\*\*

Kazi: speak of the devil

\*\*\*she then answered it\*\*\*

Kazi: hey

Menzi: who the hell is that Ntandokazi?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: someone I know

Menzi: someone you know....Kazi have you forgotten that you were kidnapped weeks back, why haven't I heard about this guy since we met

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Kazi: Menzi relax will you, I have guards with me and this guy once ummm helped me so im sure he means no harm

Menzi: I don't care if he once took a bullet for you, I don't know him so he's a threat....entlek what is that fool's name

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes and Castiel chuckled, he could hear the conversation between them since he has super hearing abilities\*\*\*

Kazi: his name is Castiel Menzi now can you stop

Menzi: I won't stop cause your safety is my priority Ntandokazi

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: ok Mapholoba I hear you, let me finish up with my shopping and I'll go home, how's that?

Menzi: good that's what I want to hear...I love you ok

Kazi: I know, shap

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: ngithe ngiyakuthanda Ntandokazi ( I said I love you Ntandokazi)

Kazi: ey bhuti you are still in mourning so ngiyeke tuu(so let me be please)

\*\*\*Menzi laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: shap I'll get you

Kazi: bye

\*\*\*she ended the call and breathed out\*\*\*

Kazi: sorry about that

Castiel: mmmmh I should get going... I guess I'll see you around

Kazi: ummm yeah sure

\*\*\*he walked away looking angry and he gave the guards deadly looks as he walked passed them\*\*\*

\*\*\*OUTSIDE THE SHOP\*\*\*

Castiel: shit!...she can't be falling for that son of a bitch...she cant!

\*\*\*then he took out his phone and dialed Ruslan's numbers\*\*\*

Ruslan: Cass



Castiel: look im on my way to Pretoria I need to talk to you about something so I need a place to crash, im not hundred percent ok so staying in a hotel is a no no

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine you can stay at a house I bought for Thandi and the boys, its being renovated

Castiel: ok thanks bro.... wait, are you ok you sound a bit off

Ruslan: Ray and his wife fought and La Parca and Saint came out so you can imagine what happened

Castiel: oooh shit.... ummm ok im on my way ok

Ruslan: ok

\*\*\*then they ended the call and he sighed, he wondered what triggered La Parca to come out\*\*\*

Woman: hi

\*\*\*Castiel turned and he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: yeah what is it?

Woman: ummm are you Josh

Castiel: do I look like a Josh to you

\*\*\*he said with a straight face and she chuckled nervously\*\*\*

Woman: umm no actually I hoped you were a Josh so I won't look this embarrassed in front of such a handsome guy...im Nelly by the way

Castiel: and im not interested

\*\*\*he walked away leaving the lady with her mouth hanging\*\*\*

Nelly: mxm you're too tall for me anyway  
sdididi( fool) nx

\*\*\*she walked away sulking\*\*\*

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*NIGERIA....AT THE OWOH-MASDEN  
RESIDENCE\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* it's been two hours since Mj drank those sleeping pills and they have already knocked him out and everything else was done the way Kev said, right now Patience (his step mother) was back from her woman's league meeting and she was busy calling him, she wanted to ask him what she should cook for dinner tonight . She always asks him cause he likes her food and she has gotten used to him telling or rather asking nicely that she should cook what he's craving for that night so she was calling him for that but he didn't respond and it wasn't like him to keep quiet when he's being called....she knew he was back from "seeing his friends" cause the house help confirmed that he's back..... she called him a couple of times but there was no response, so she went

upstairs to his room to check on him....she  
knocked on his door but there was no response  
from Mj again and she started getting  
worried\*\*\*

Patience: Junior!

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

Patience: fine then im coming in

\*\*\*she opened the door and saw that he was  
lying on the bed sleeping\*\*\*

Patience: Junior!

\*\*\*she walked closer to the bed and she looked  
by the bed side drawer and saw the empty  
container and her heart started beating fast\*\*\*

Patience: Junior...Junior

\*\*\*she said shaking him but he didn't respond  
and she put her hands on top of her head\*\*\*

Patience: ooh God what has this boy done

\*\*\*she shook him again and roughly this time\*\*\*

Patience: Junior...Junior don't do this to me ooo

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and he still didn't move and tears ran down her face\*\*\*

Patience: Junior wake up...what have you done...wake up please my boy don't do this to me

\*\*\*She said crying and still he didn't move then she quickly took out her phone and she called for an ambulance after that she called her husband\*\*\*

Michael Senior: my love you wont believe what that boy Junior did... I swear today im going to kill him with my bare hands

\*\*\* he said with an angry voice and Patience cried\*\*\*

Michael Senior: honey what's wrong...why are

you crying...did that bastard call you too

Patience: it's Junior he...he....he's not moving  
Michael, I think he overdosed on pills

Michael Senior: WHAT!

Patience: an ambulance is on its way... get here  
now Michael

\*\*\*then she dropped the call and she sat on the  
edge of the bed and pulled his upper body up  
and she held him crying then she heard what  
sounded like a snore....she stopped crying and  
looked at him but he was still passed out cold  
\*\*\*

Patience: Junior...my boy...wake up....wake  
please

\*\*\*she said slapping him gently on his cheek  
then..... Mj Snored again and louder this time  
and she froze and frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Patience: Junior

\*\*\*he continued to snore\*\*\*

.

.

INSERT.....12

.

.

.

\*\*\* The door opened and Snakes, Jay and Jase walked in and they found Ruslan laying on the couch with his eyes closed and on his back with a wet cloth on his forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't make noise Kalu is asleep

Snakes: how did you....you know what never mind.....where is Mbali?

Ruslan: sleeping on the bedroom downstairs

\*\*\*Snakes and Jay rushed there while Jase stood there looking at Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruslan: you've got something on your mind Khumalo?

Jase: what happened?

Ruslan: with what?

Jase: you know what im talking about....what happened?

Snakes: yeah answer him mthakathi what happened to Mbali....why isn't she waking up and what happened to her face

\*\*\*he asked with an angry look on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: well she was having a normal couple's argument with her husband when Saint, the original one woke up and attacked his father because of mommy....shit happened and he came out on his full form and I had to protect Ray....Mbali fainted and I summoned La Parka....



Snakes: what?

\*\*\*He asked with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruslan: then La Parca put Saint in his place and that's about it....Mbali will wake up soon and Ray is in the basement inside a coffin putting La Parca to sleep

Them: a what?

Ruslan: mmmmh that's how La Parca goes to sleep..... you know ya'll give the guy a hard time not knowing what he has to go through to put La Parca to sleep....what he went through to put La Parca to sleep that time he went to save your sister

\*\*\*The Khumalo's kept quiet and sat down\*\*\*

Jay: what I want to know is what happened to Mbali's face...qa

Ruslan: well you can ask her what happened to it when she wakes up.....look I have a bad

headache so wait for the Owoh-Masdens to wake up and you can question them

Jay: how can you say that....La Parca and Saint woke up and our sister was there so don't tell us shit

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Jase: Nkosenye yehlisa umoya man (Nkosenye calm down man)

Jay: ungazontshela ukuthi ( don't tell me that) I should calm down.... Mbalenhle was in front of those things and....

Ruslan: careful man the original Saint is restless and La Parca is not yet asleep so they can see you and also hear you

\*\*\*Ruslan interrupted him\*\*\*

Snakes: w...what?

\*\*\*He asked looking around alarmed by what Ruslan just said\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

\*\*\*all this time he was laying there with his eyes closed\*\*\*

-----

AT A HOUSE RUSLAN RENTED FOR THANDI  
AND THE BOYS

\*\*\*Thandi woke up from her sleep disturbed by her ringing phone\*\*\*

Thandi: hello

\*\*\*She said with a sleepy voice\*\*\*

Voice: hey Thandi its Jackson....James' brother

\*\*\*Thandi frowned and she sat up straight\*\*\*

Thandi: why are you calling me Jackson?

Jackson: can we meet up...I need to talk to you about something important

Thandi: you can tell me over the phone mos.... we don't have to meet

\*\*\*she said with an annoyed tone\*\*\*

Jackson: please Thandi

Thandi: well I can't meet up with you especially after what you and your family did and said to me

Jackson: look im sorry about that.... I also want to apologize for that

Thandi: bona mo Jackson .... i have a headache and I don't have time for your nonsense.....it's either you say what you want to say now or I'll drop the call

\*\*\*Jackson sighed\*\*\*

Jackson: fine then tell me where you are and I'll come to you since you're not feeling well

Thandi: that won't be necessary just talk so I can go back to sleep motho wa batho

\*\*\*Jackson sighed\*\*\*

Jackson: now I understand why James used to

say you're stubborn as hell

\*\*\*He then chuckled but Thandi just kept quiet\*\*\*

Jackson: ok look I just wanted to tell you that I have a way that will make the family to change their mind about disowning you and the boys

Thandi: askies?

Jackson: yeah so now can we meet so I can tell you all about my plan

\*\*\*Thandi kept quiet a bit....she didn't care about them hating her and banning her from ever entering the Mashaba household but she was worried about her sons....one day they gonna have children and those children might need to be introduced to the Mashaba ancestors and since they are disowned that won't happen....she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: why would you do that for me and the boys and don't say you care because you don't

Jackson: I actually do Thandi

Thandi: ooh please stop lying Jackson ok

Jackson: look I do care.... sometimes family can make you do things you don't want do and you end up doing them cause you don't wanna lose them

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Jackson: look I feel bad about what happened and I wanna help

\*\*\*she continued to keep quiet then she spoke\*\*\*

Thandi: fine I'll get back to you about when and where we should meet

Jackson: I was actually thinking about today since im around Pta

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I'll call you back, let me think about it first

\*\*\*she then dropped the call and sighed then she dialed Ruslan's numbers..... she didn't want to seem like she's ungrateful and she also didn't want to do things behind his back cause she tasted what real love and being worshiped by your man feels like and she doesn't wanna do anything stupid that might make her lose Ruslan....Anyway Ruslan took out his phone as it was ringing and he opened his eyes to see who was calling and he sat up and stood up answering the phone\*\*\*

Ruslan: amour

\*\*\*He said walking away\*\*\*

Thandi: hey

Ruslan: hey.....is everything ok, you sound down

\*\*\*Thandi sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I was asleep maybe that's why I sound down

Ruslan: ok but I can tell something is on your mind...talk to me

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Ruslan: what is it amour....is it the boys or the ba...

\*\*\*he stopped talking and he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ruslan: what's wrong?

Thandi: I got a call from Jackson....James elder brother

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet for a bit with a frown on his face and clenched jaws\*\*\*

Thandi: babe...Ruu did you hear me?

Ruslan: yeah.....what did he want?

Thandi: to talk....

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: to talk about Mpendulo and Mpilo



Ruslan: go on

Thandi: he said he has a way he can make his family to change their minds about Mpilo and Mpendulo

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I hope you told him to go to hell

\*\*\*She kept quiet\*\*\*

Ruslan: Thandi?

Thandi: i...I told him I'll get back to him

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: are you fucken kidding me

\*\*\*He said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruu im thinking of Mpe and Mpilo's future....what if when they grow up and have kids of their own then it comes a time when the kids will need to be introduced to their ancestors

Ruslan: didn't I say I got this and that family will change their minds whether its by force or willingly!

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't you trust me now Thandi

Thandi: I do Ruu im just scared

Ruslan: if you trust me then why don't you let me handle this then huh

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I trust you Ruu im....

Ruslan: well it doesn't seem like that from where im standing

Thandi: Ruu

Ruslan: you know what, the boys are yours

Thandi so do what you think is right for them.... i have to go

\*\*\*Then he dropped the call and he almost

threw his phone against the wall but he stopped himself....Meanwhile Thandi couldn't believe Ruslan dropped the call on her, tears welled her eyes and they ran down her cheeks with her bottom lip trembling..... She laid down again and she hugged her pillow as she sobbed silently, after sometime she calmed down and she dialed Jackson' numbers\*\*\*

Jackson: wow that was quick

Thandi: look Jackson I thought about it and im not interested in whatever plan you have.....you and your family insulted me and my family and disowned my sons...your own nephews because I stood up to you all so take your stupid plan and shove it down your ass and fucken never call me again nxa

\*\*\*then she dropped the call and she even blocked his numbers and she lay there feeling sad and hurt by Ruslan's reaction\*\*\*

-----  
\*\*\*Ruslan called Castiel's numbers and he answered the call on the third ring\*\*\*

Cass: Madou

Ruslan: have you arrived yet

Cass: a hi Cass....how are you and how was your trip would have been nice

Ruslan: not now Cass im not in the mood

\*\*\*he said with a cold tone\*\*\*

Cass: ok when Madou is not in the mood then someone provoked him....give me his name and I'll deal with him

Ruslan: no this one is mine to deal with so have you arrived?

Cass: yeah and you have a nice crib here

Ruslan: ok now I need you to bring me something from there

Cass: ok what?

Ruslan: my crystal ball...its in the study and the door is locked by a protection spell

Cass: ummm ohk..... so where should I bring it?

Ruslan: Ray's house I'll send you the gps coordinates

Cass: ok cool

Ruslan: its inside its bag and when you get here behave...the Khumalo's are here

Cass: ok why are you telling me to behave... those Khumalo shitheads means shit to me

Ruslan: cause im sure some of them will piss you off like they do to me and I don't want drama I have a headache

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Cass: ok bro I'll see you when I get there

Ruslan: cool

\*\*\*they ended the call and Ruslan sighed then he dialed Thandi's numbers and she answered on the fourth ring\*\*\*

Thandi: hey

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im sorry

\*\*\*she kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: im sorry I overreacted amour.... im just pissed off that you're entertaining that family even after all the shit they put you through

Thandi: I called him back and basically told him to fuck off

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: you did?

Thandi: yeah.... I don't know what I was even thinking...im sure whatever plan he has I won't like it and it might even make us fight and i...

Ruslan: I love you amour.... a lot and believe me when I say that those people will come and beg you to forgive them..... I don't want you to stress in anyway just focus on our boys

\*\*\* "and girl" he thought\*\*\*

Ruslan: and let me handle everything else please

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: and thank you for letting me know about the call...im sorry I overreacted ok

Thandi: ok im sorry too for almost considering meeting up with him

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: now you make me wanna come there and eat that pussy up

Thandi: Ruu!

\*\*\*he could tell she was blushing and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?

Thandi: you know what let me get back to my beauty sleep bye

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: wait....Te amo amour

Thandi: Te amo too

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: what....i know what Te amo means from one of Rihanna's songs but I don't know what too means in ....its Spanish right?

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah....i'll see you tomorrow ok and I want you to meet my brother...he's in town so its better I introduce you two than to have him introduce himself

\*\*\*she laughed a bit\*\*\*

Thandi: so you two are good now



Ruslan: well my blood doesn't boil anymore  
whenever I even think of him so....

\*\*\*Thandi laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: mmmmh

Ruslan: ok go back to sleep....i love you

Thandi: I love you too...bye

\*\*\*They ended the call and Ruslan sighed and  
he smiled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: damn I scored myself a gem with her

\*\*\*then he went back to the lounge\*\*\*

-----

NIGERIA

Patience: JUNIOR!

\*\*\* She said shaking him roughly and he  
moved\*\*\*

Mj: mmmmh

Patience: I can't believe this....Junior wake up!

\*\*\*He moved again\*\*\*

Mj: mh mh leave me alone

\*\*\*he said moving from her turning to look away with his head on the pillow now\*\*\*

Patience: mxm this stupid boy

\*\*\*then she slapped his head and he groaned and he turned his head again\*\*\*

Patience: WAKE UP!

\*\*\*he groaned and opened his eyes slowly then he scanned his surrounding with his eyes squirmed and they landed on an angry looking Patience then his heart started beating fast and he faked a cough a bit but Patience didn't move\*\*\*

Mj: am I in heaven

\*\*\*Patience continued to look at Mj with that angry look\*\*\*

Mj: are you an angel....am I in heaven?

Patience: SHUT UP AND SIT UP NOW!

\*\*\*she said pulling him up and he faked being in pain and he screamed out loud\*\*\*

Patience: what is it...what's wrong?

\*\*\*she said worried now\*\*\*

Mj: p...pain

Patience: where?

\*\*\*He pointed on his stomach and he screamed again\*\*\*

Patience: ok baby lie down....lie down

\*\*\*She said helping him to lie down slowly\*\*\*

Patience: let me tell the driver to come and help me take you to the hospital ok

\*\*\*She said already calling the driver forgetting that she already called an ambulance and Mj sighed relieved....After Patience's call he

groaned totally faking being in pain and  
Patience Quickly held him brushing his belly  
panicking\*\*\*

Patience: its ok baby...its ok...im here all will be  
well

\*\*\*tears ran down Mj's face cause he was  
feeling like shit for worrying Patience cause she  
was genuinely worried about him and he was  
faking it all.....then the door opened and the  
house help walked in\*\*\*

Helper: madam the ambulance people are here  
and they say somebody called them from this  
house ooo....ooh my God Junior, is he ok

Patience: TELL THEM TO COME IN HERE NOW!

Helper: ok sorry ooo...

\*\*\*she rushed out and seconds later the  
paramedics pushed the stretcher in and  
Patience told them what's wrong with Mj then  
they put him on the stretcher and pushed him

out with Patience running behind them\*\*\*

## AT THE HOSPITAL

\*\*\*Patience got up when she saw her husband rushing towards her and they hugged tightly and she sobbed\*\*\*

MJ.Senior: what happened?

Patience: I don't know...I came home from my shop and I called out to him and when he didn't answer I went to his room then I found an empty container of pills and some scattered on top of the bed and he wasn't moving and when he woke up he was crying saying he's feeling pain inside his stomach....i...I think he was trying to commit suicide but failed

Mj.Senior: I can't believe this

\*\*\*He said sitting down\*\*\*

Patience: I thought....i thought...

\*\*\* he got up and held her tight\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: its ok....he's gonna be ok....he's gonna be ok

\*\*\*they sat down and Mr Owoh-Masden called Ray but his phone send him to voicemail then he called Heath and told him about Mj's attempted suicide and the call he received concerning what Mj did then Heath told him he'll tell Ray and Jabu and he'll catch the next available flight and after their call they waited for the doctor....

Soon a doctor came to them and greeted them\*\*\*

Doctor: sir...madam

\*\*\*He shook their hands\*\*\*

Patience: how is he doctor?

Doctor: he's gonna be fine...we didn't find high dosage of pills in his system so he'll be fine....we did run some tests and we waiting for the result but im sure they'll also come back

saying he's fine

\*\*\* Mr and Mrs Owoh-Masden sighed with relief\*\*\*

Patience: are you sure doctor?

Doc: im sure Mrs Owoh Masden he's gonna be just fine.... but I'll keep him here for the night just for observation for the stomach cramps

\*\*\* they nodded and Mj's father sighed\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: thank you doctor

\*\*\*he said shaking his hand\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: can we see him?

\*\*\*the doctor nodded\*\*\*

Doctor: ofcourse Chief....right this way

\*\*\*they followed him\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Mbali opened her eyes and she scanned around the room and she noticed that it was one of the bedrooms downstairs then she sat up and held her head and closed her eyes for a bit and she opened them and sighed as she remembered her fight with Ray and Saint attacking him then it all goes blank from then on....she can't remember anything else that happened after that....she sighed again then she got out of bed and went out of the room and she heard voices in the lounge and the voices sounded familiar....she went there and found her brothers there with Ruslan laying on the couch on his back with a wet cloth on his forehead....they turned and saw her and they quickly got up and went to her and they hugged her\*\*\*

Snakes: are you ok?

\*\*\*she nodded while biting her lower lip....she was trying by all means not to cry\*\*\*



Jase: kwenzakaleni Mbali? (What happened Mbali?).... uMelusi called us sounding distressed astshela ukuthi (and he said) we should check up on you, that all is not well

\*\*\*She swallowed hard and looked down\*\*\*

Mbali: im ok bhuti....Ray and I had an argument and Saint involved himself

Snakes: uthi you are ok...bheka ubuso bakho Mbali, ingathi idemoni lakfahlaza ngempama ( look at your face Mbali, its as if a demon slapped you)

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone and Mbali sighed and she looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

Mbali: Ruu where is Kalu

Ruslan: sleeping inside his cot and I must add that all this noise will wake him up and he's not in a good mood today

Mbali: ummm and....and Ray?

Ruslan: he went to calm himself and La Parca down

\*\*\*She swallowed hard and sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: ok....ummm thanks for....for looking after Kalu

Ruslan: no sweat

\*\*\*He said still with his eyes closed \*\*\*

Snakes: what the hell happened Mbali?

Mbali: didn't Ruu fill you in khanti

\*\*\*she said moving to where her son was and he was still sleeping....she bit her lower lip looking at him and her eyes got filled with tears but she fought them back then she went to the kitchen and she took out bottled water and drank....Anyway in the lounge the Khumalo brothers got up and followed Mbali then Ruslan's phone rang\*\*\*

Ruslan: Ezeudo

Heath: bros how far? ( hey)

Ruslan: I dey fine Ezeh ( im fine Ezeh)

Heath: good...look im trying to call big Ray and his numbers aren't going through so I thought I should call you first before I call his flower

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: well Saint and La Parca woke up and shit happened so he's going to put him back to sleep

Heath: WHAT?

Ruslan: relax he's fine in fact everyone is fine

\*\*\*Heath sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: look he's fine so relax

Heath: shit...ummm ok when he's back tell him to call me

Ruslan: ok I'll tell him

Heath: and Ruslan tell him Mj was caught with

some chief's daughter in a motel and he managed to run away but when he got home he attempted to commit suicide

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Heath: ah ah this guy...this no be a laughing matter ooo ( this is not a laughing matter)

Ruslan: well it is cause the Mj I know would never try to kill himself

Heath: look I know that but he's scared man cause the chief said Mj forced himself on his daughter

Ruslan: shit!

Heath: yeah so maybe he did it out of fear

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet for a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: nah....that crazy boy once tried to kill that ex of yours that almost killed Naledi and killed your son and he know his brothers will do anything for him or to save him and even if the

old man was gonna give him an ass whoopin  
but its better than going to jail so attempted  
suicide nah....not MJ

\*\*\*Heath kept quiet for a bit\*\*\*

Heath: that little piece of shit

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's definitely an Owoh-Masden

\*\*\*he laughed again\*\*\*

Heath: I swear when I get there im gonna  
personally whip his black ass

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: well I must say im impressed, that boy  
has a sharp mind and even though ya'll are not  
aware but he's learning from ya'll especially  
Jabu.... he always got an ace up his sleeves....he  
shot that girl and he went about his business as  
if it wasn't him and if Jabu's guy didn't call,  
believe me none of ya'll wouldn't know that it

was him

\*\*\*Heath sighed worried\*\*\*

Heath: I don't want him to live the life we're living man

Ruslan: that boy has a little Ray and a little bit of you and Jabu in him so you need to watch him closely....he's learning from ya'll without your knowledge

Heath: nx i swear this boy is gonna give me grey hair and he's not even my son

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled and Heath sighed\*\*\*

Heath: let me get going.... tell big Ray to call me when he's back

Ruslan: yeah I will and take it easy on him....he's an Owoh-Masden after all

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed and they ended the call\*\*\*

IN THE KITCHEN

Jay: Mbali

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: bhuti

Jay: what the hell is going and ungazostshela ngo Ruslan cause sbuza wena ( and don't tell us about Ruslan cause we're asking you)

Mbali: like I said bhuti....Ray and I had an argument and Saint came out and attacked him

Snakes: then what the hell happened to your face

Jay: yeah what the hell happened and don't you dare lie to us

\*\*\*she swallowed and looked away trying to find a suitable lie to tell them\*\*\*

Ruslan: like I told ya'll shit happened....Saint got angry and it was windy and shit everywhere and she tried to stop him but he was mad angry and she got caught in the cross fire

\*\*\*he said standing by the kitchen entrance with the wet cloth on his hand\*\*\*

Jay: I didn't ask you I asked her now stay out of this

Ruslan: well im telling you.... you know...

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: your sister here saw a demon face to face for the first time ever and that demon is attached to her son's soul....even though the demon attacked her husband but she cant hate it cause its part of her son....she's traumatized, stressed, hurt, angry and conflicted but ya'll don't give a damn about that right

\*\*\*The Khumalo's kept quiet and Mbali looked down and Ruslan just shook his head looking at the brothers\*\*\*

Ruslan: some brothers you are mxm

\*\*\*Then he turned to walk away when a doorbell



rang and he went to open cause he could tell it was Castiel\*\*\*

Snakes: mthakathi is right....im sorry my princess

\*\*\*Mbali's eyes got filled with tears and when Snakes hugged her she just let it all out\*\*\*

IN THE LOUNGE

Castiel: this is a nice crib damn

\*\*\*he said looking around\*\*\*

Ruslan: and how did you get inside the yard cause you didn't call to tell me to open the gate for you

Castiel: what kind of a stupid question is that....im a vampire man

Jay: you're a what?

\*\*\*he said with a shocked face and Castiel looked at him\*\*\*

Castiel: I said a vampire

Ruslan: CASTIEL!

\*\*\*he warned him\*\*\*

Castiel: what...what did I do?

\*\*\*he said looking at Ruslan who was giving him a deadly look\*\*\*

Jay: he's kidding right

\*\*\*he asked Ruslan\*\*\*

Castiel: and why would I be kidding beast....im not ashamed of what I am

\*\*\*Ruslan just shook his head and he walked to the couches with the bag Castiel brought for him and he sat down\*\*\*

Jay: you a Vamp...pire?

\*\*\*Castiel opened his mouth and his eyes changed colour and his fangs grew longer\*\*\*

Castiel: see

\*\*\*he said showing him\*\*\*

Jay: the fuck!

\*\*\*he said moving back and Castiel's eyes and fangs went back to normal and he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: pussy....i mean you have a beast but you're shocked to see a vampire..... Madou im disappointed man

\*\*\*he shook his head and went to sit down\*\*\*

Ruslan: if you're disappointed about his reaction then you should imagine how im feeling about your little drama you just pulled now

Castiel: mxm kill joy

Jay: Ruslan who the fuck is this and what the hell is he doing here

Castiel: im his elder brother Castiel....don't mind him looking older than me, I stopped aging at age 33 and he ages slowly, he's actually sixt....

Ruslan: CASTIEL!

\*\*\*He gave him a stern look to warn him to shut up and he quickly did\*\*\*

Castiel: oooh it's a.....damn ok

\*\*\*he kept quiet and started whistling as he sat back\*\*\*

Ruslan: you're a pain in the butt you know that

Castiel: you mean a good pain in the butt right

\*\*\*Ruslan showed him the "fuck you" sign and Castiel laughed while Jay stood there still shocked\*\*\*

INSERT.....14

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please im sorry...im sorry I didn't

mean it I was just angry

Ray: you went out there wearing a skimpy dress showing my yellow thighs to hungry horny motherfuckers in the mall right!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please

\*\*\*he pushed the tip and half of it went in and she screamed with tears coming out\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray it hurts please stop

\*\*\*she said crying then the lights started flicking\*\*\*

Ray: go back to sleep Saint or I'll let La Parca out and he'll fucken deal with you!

\*\*\*he shouted but the lights didn't stop flicking\*\*\*

Ray: I SAID GO BACK TO SLEEP NOW SAINT BEFORE I FUCKEN GET ANGRY...THIS IS BETWEEN MY WIFE AND I NOW FUCK OFF!

\*\*\*he roared\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please im sorry...please stop it hurts

\*\*\*He pushed the rest of the tip in and she screamed again trying to move forward and he tightened the grip around her waist with his right hand while his left hand was pressing her head down on the bed\*\*\*

Ray: you gonna disrespect me again

Mbali: no...no I promise...im sorry

Ray: will you ever threaten to give other men what belongs to me

Mbali: no...no I'll never do that

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Ray: will you ever threaten to leave me again

Mbali: no...please stop, it hurts Ray

\*\*\*she said crying with the lights still flicking because of Saint\*\*\*

Ray: if you ever cheat on me Mbali I'll fucken kill you you hear me....i'll fucken kill you and kill myself you sabi (you understand)

Mbali: yes yes

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit then he pulled out and he pulled her up and turned her around and she was still crying\*\*\*

Ray: why are you crying huh...you wanna wake Saint up so he can come here and stick his demon nose in our business huh?

\*\*\*she shook her head no quickly....he bottom lip was even trembling\*\*\*

Ray: listen here.... I fucked up and you have every right to be angry and shit but I wont tolerate being disrespected Mbali ok

\*\*\*she nodded again\*\*\*

Ray: now wipe that shit off your face before I give you a real reason to cry!

\*\*\*she quickly wiped her tears off with her shaky hand and he stood there looking at her....he was angry and it took everything in him not to fuck her hard and roughly until she passes out as punishment but he knew it will traumatize her for life and he cant have that, maybe if it was one of the woman whom he used to fuck before he met her who liked that kind of shit but this was his wife so he's not gonna do that to her even though he thinks she deserves it..... He then picked her up and he went back to their bedroom and he put her on the bed and he got her under the covers and went to check on Kalu inside his baby crib and he was sleeping\*\*\*

Ray: you better not wake my son up Saint or you'll fucken regret it

\*\*\*and Mbali swallowed hard cause this was a different side of Ray she hasn't met before....Anyway he went back to bed and he



got in and laid on his back\*\*\*

Ray: come!

\*\*\*she didn't want him to touch her but she didn't wanna make him more angry than he already is so she rested her head on his chest and he held and they stayed like that for some time without saying anything to each other\*\*\*

Mbali: just so you know you're not forgiven with your cheating and lying

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I know

Mbali: and tomorrow you gonna know how much you're not forgiven

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ray: as long as you don't leave me then I'll take it like a man

Mbali: mmmmh we shall see

Ray: im serious, you better not be thinking of leaving me Mbali or all hell will break lose

\*\*\*she didn't say anything, she just closed her eyes\*\*\*

Ray: Mbali

Mbali: leave me alone im trying to sleep

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: im not playing with you

Mbali: can I sleep in peace please....i have a headache and my ass hole hurts

\*\*\*he kept quiet\*\*\*

Ray: "she better not be thinking of leaving me"

\*\*\* He thought..... Anyway in the morning Ray woke up to sounds of glass breaking and a sound of something being hit hard and he quickly looked beside him and Mbali wasn't there, he then got panicked and he went to check on Kalu and he was still sleeping and he

frowned then he quickly wore his boxers and he rushed downstairs calling Mbali's name\*\*\*

Ray: MBALI....MY FLOWER WHERE ARE YOU.....MBALI!

\*\*\*he got to the garage cause that's where the sound was coming from and what he found shocked him to the core..... he stopped and froze with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Mbali: that's for putting you huge ass dick in my ass without my permission

\*\*\*then she walked past him with a baseball bat on her right hand and a butcher knife on her left hand and she walked back inside swaying her ass with an angry look on her face, she was still in her birth suit ( she was naked)....as for Ray he couldn't believe what he was seeing, his three weeks old brand new 2019 metallic-black Maserati GranTurismo ( the devil's fork) was covered in blue paint and both the front

windshield and the rear windshield were smashed and so was all the windows of the car and it had dents all over it and its tires were slashed with a knife\*\*\*

Ray: fuck nooo... nooo... no no no

\*\*\*he said with his hands on top of his head and a horrified look on his face\*\*\*

Ray: my car....my baby.....my fucken baby!

\*\*\*he shouted with his hands on top of his hand\*\*\*

-----

NIGERIA

\*\*\*Mj woke up to someone shaking him and he found Heath and Jabu standing next to his bed\*\*\*

Mj: brother Heath and brother Jabu....  
you...you're here

Heath: drop the fucken act Mj

Mj: huh?

Jabu: hai fosek man jou rubber neck.... a gona a hidden camera mo so tlogela go e ketsa Mr bean (Piss off you rubber neck....there no hidden camera here so stop acting like Mr bean)

Mj: i....i

\*\*\*he stuttered\*\*\*

Jabu: fotsek....wa bona wena le leretenyana kao bona o nagana gore o clever neh, well Mshikaro le nna we gonna show you gore re chunang to di bari tsa go iketsa diclever( piss off.... you see you and your small dick you think you're clever, well Mshikaro and I we gonna show you what we do to fools who think are clever)

Heath: mo chaele Mjava....die boy thinks re di bari ( tell him Mjava.... this boy thinks we are fools)

Mj: what.... no...no

Jabu: wa jaja gore uncle le vrou ya gae ba worried byang heh ( are you aware that uncle and his wife are worried)

Mj: um let me explain bros please

Heath: do you sometimes think Mj huh.... aunt Patience is fucken blaming herself for your shit....she thinks if she knocked off early maybe she would have stopped you from taking the pills

Jabu: and a go na suicide ya nex mo.... o tletse ka masepa fela wena ( there's no suicide here....you're just full of shit)

Mj: I was scared and desperate ok...I didn't mean for things to get out of hand

Jabu: fotsek desperate ya masepa....o dlala ka go boda wena heh?....( you're playing with death huh?)

\*\*\*Mj didn't say anything\*\*\*

Heath: by the time im done with you Mj heh  
heh....

\*\*\*he said shaking his head\*\*\*

Heath: na death you dey want abi ( its death you  
want right)

Mj: no bros I know I dey mess up big time but I  
no have another plan to avoid an ass whoopin  
abeg no vex, I was just desperate

Heath: well you dey wish you got that ass  
whoopin by the time we are done with you

Mj: w...what? no ooo....ah ah I cannot survive  
suicide and avoid an ass whooping from dad  
only to get beaten to death by you ooo

\*\*\*he said panicking\*\*\*

Heath: shut up!

Mj: bros I dey mess up big time I know but im  
your little bro

\*\*\*he pleaded with Heath\*\*\*

Heath: so just because im your big brother it means I must let you stress out dad and aunty and also let you mess up our family name huh?

Mj: no but im still your little bro

Jabu: tshwara (take) and get dressed

\*\*\*He threw the bag at him\*\*\*

Mj: but im....

Heath: you're discharged so get up and get dressed

Mj: but ma said she'll come pick me up

Heath: well we volunteered to come pick you up so get dressed before you make me angry

Mj: but...

Heath: ah ah I swear this boy can talk for Africa  
Mjava..... mxm I said get dressed jorr!

\*\*\*He said interrupting him looking pissed\*\*\*

Jabu: apara o tlogele go re gotolela matlho jou



fokon hond ( get dressed and stop staring at us  
you fucken dog)

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard and he slowly got out of  
bed\*\*\*

Jabu: tlogela go act(a) e kare o tshwere ke  
mogwete and make it quick ( stop acting like  
your ass is painful and make it quick)

\*\*\* then a nurse walked in\*\*\*

Nurse: Junior I see you're ready to go home  
mmmmh

Mj: yeah

\*\*\*he faked a smile\*\*\*

Nurse: are these your brothers

Heath: ey make it snappy Mj we don't have all  
day

Nurse: umm hey guys im Vanessa....i must say  
your brother here is a character...a funny one at  
that

\*\*\*she said stretching her hand out for a handshake with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Jabu: and we are happily married

Nurse: ummm I was just introducing myself

Jabu: we are not illiterate meaning we can read your name tag nx le smile sa masepa ( with a shitty smile)

\*\*\*Heath chuckled\*\*\*

Nurse: wow ummm

Heath: just leave Vanessa cause once he starts he won't finish

\*\*\*she looked at Mj\*\*\*

Nurse: go well Junior it was nice meeting you

MJ: ummm yeah thanks

\*\*\*then she walked out\*\*\*

Mj: that was unnecessary bros....she promised me her numbers before I leave

Jabu: voetsek! o isa kae dinumber tsa  
sgogwana sele...o sa batlo ntlatsa phinya Mj  
now get dressed! (what do you want with that  
old woman's numbers.... don't make me angry  
Mj now get dressed)

\*\*\*Mj sulked \*\*\*

Mj: fine now can you give me some privacy to  
change then

Jabu: wannyela re go tlhakotse o le ngwana o  
nnya masepa amagreen and nou o tlo re botsa  
ka privacy ( you must be crazy we used to wipe  
your ass when you were still a baby with your  
green shit and now you're telling us about  
privacy)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: apara man o tlogele go re senyetsa nako  
jou rubber neck ( get dressed and stop wasting  
our time you rubber neck)

Mj: I swear ma is gonna know about this

treatment im getting from you two mxm

Jabu: apara o tlogele go ova masepa ( get dressed and stop talking nonsense)

Mj: mxm

-----

\*\*\*they were now walking out of the hospital going to the car when Heath took out his phone and dialed someone\*\*\*

Heath: is everything ready

Man: yeah man but what do you want to do with these frogs man

Heath: I want to teach some mumu a lesson

\*\*\*Mj looked at him with a frown until he finished with the call\*\*\*

Jabu: keng ekare o bone lesilo ntwana ( what's wrong it's as if you've seen a ghost boy)

Mj: what lesson are you talking about bros?

Heath: you'll see

\*\*\*he said unlocking the car and out of the blue Mj ran away as if he was being chased by a dog and Jabu and Heath stood there shocked then they busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

-----

AT THE HOUSE RUSLAN BOUGHT FOR THANDI AND THE BOYS

\*\*\*Castiel and Ruslan were having breakfast catching up when Ruslan's phone rang and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: amour

Thandi: hey you good

Ruslan: I am now and you

Thandi: im ok I just miss you

Ruslan: I miss you too baby but don't worry I'll see you in..... four hours' time

Thandi: ooh ok then

\*\*\*she said sounding excited\*\*\*

Ruslan: so how are my boys?

\*\*\*"and girl" he thought and Castiel chuckled as he read his mind\*\*\*

Castiel: you fucken sly dog

\*\*\*Ruslan threw a spoon at him and he ducked laughing\*\*\*

Thandi: they are good, they also miss you

Ruslan: don't worry I'll see them later

Thandi: ok...ummm Ruu

Ruslan: my love

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Thandi: ummm he send me a message with a different number

Ruslan: who

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Thandi: Jackson

\*\*\* he huffed with a pissed off look on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: what did he say?

Thandi: umm I'll forward it to you

Ruslan: ok

Thandi: you ok?

Ruslan: as long as you're always this open to me about things that happen without my knowledge and you're not entertaining him then I'll always be ok

\*\*\*she breathed out relieved\*\*\*

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: I hope you had your breakfast its already 11am

Thandi: ummm im about to have it now

Ruslan: why now....you're supposed to eat when you wake up Thandi

\*\*\* " why are you starving my daughter" He thought and Castiel laughed again as he read his mind again\*\*\*

Thandi: well I woke up 20 minutes ago and I just finished taking a shower

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh

Thandi: yeah and don't say anything....this days im always tired and I don't know why

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I wasn't planning on saying anything  
amour

Thandi: mxm

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: go and feed my d....umm go and eat



before you pass out please

Thandi: o sambora tuu ( don't bore me please)...i wont pass out hao

Ruslan: what was that?

Thandi: nothing you should know....ok shap let me go eat

Ruslan: just so you know im gonna get you for that.....I love you

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: I love you too

\*\*\*they ended the call and Thandi forwarded him the message she got from Jackson and Ruslan hit the table hard and he got up looking angry\*\*\*

Castiel: calm down man

Ruslan: I knew he wanted her....that son of a bitch wants my woman Cass!

Castiel: who

Ruslan: some piece of shit

Castiel: well at least your woman is not entertaining him....my own woman is falling for the piece of shit

\*\*\* he said getting up and Ruslan gave him a confused look on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: you have a woman in your life...I thought Juana is dead

Castiel: fuck you

\*\*\*he said pushing a laughing Ruslan\*\*\*

Castiel: I mean Kazi man

Ruslan: so she's your woman huh

\*\*\*he said mocking him\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck off man can you just get serious

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed and he stopped\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok im serious now

\*\*\*Castiel huffed and he went to sit down and Ruslan followed and sat down too\*\*\*

Castiel: I think she's falling for that hitboy....i mean he doesn't even qualify to be called a hitman in my book....fucken shit

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: you and that Juana said I must court her the right way and shit and now I have to compete with that boy...imagine

Ruslan: what is it, are you suddenly becoming a chicken man

Castiel: you didn't just call me a chicken Madou

Ruslan: im asking....i mean what if she is falling for that guy

\*\*\*he didn't say anything he just clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ruslan: wait a minute....damn you're falling for her or you already have

Castiel: fall for who....don't be ridiculous man

\*\*\*he said getting up and he went to the fridge to take out bottled water and he drank from the bottle and Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: wow the kidnapper who fell in love with his victim

\*\*\*then he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: shut up man, I haven't fallen for anyone

\*\*\*he said being defensive\*\*\*

Ruslan: then why is it painful to see her falling for another man huh?

Castiel: that thing is not a man ok he's a fucken boy

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im sure he's a man to her if you know what I mean

\*\*\*Castiel kept quiet looking angry\*\*\*

Ruslan: my advice bro is first admit that you have fallen in love with the lady then everything will fall into place

Castiel: mxm what do you know, im sure you just smiled at Thandi and she fell into your arms and I must say its fucken creepy that you can get angry one second and within another second you switch to laughing and making jokes....that shit I creepy as fuck Madou

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: and you know what they say about people like that.....serial killers

\*\*\*Ruslan threw a fork at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: your mama and your dracula father mxm infact your entire vampire ancestors you shithead

\*\*\*Castiel laughed out loud\*\*\*

Castiel: Ray ruined you with his pidgin accent

Ruslan: fosek

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: and he knows fosek too wow

\*\*\*Ruslan shook his head chuckling\*\*\*

Castiel: ok ok on a serious note how did you meet Thandi

Ruslan: well she was still married to some fucker who's dead now when I met her and no I didn't kill the fucker

\*\*\*Castiel looked at him with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck no

Ruslan: yeah and look now she's all mine so stop complaining cause your girl is not even married to the "hitboy" as you call him

Castiel: well im not in love with her

Ruslan: and you're not a vampire boo hoo

\*\*\*he said with a bored tone and Castiel showed him the middle finger\*\*\*

Ruslan: just admit it and in no time she'll be yours or watch her fall deep in love with that guy.... its as simple as that

Castiel: I own her so no matter what she belongs to me

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: continue denying your feelings and that's if vampires have feelings and that "hitboy" as you call him will fuck her, impregnate her and wife her

Castiel: that will never happen

Ruslan: nothing is impossible Cass I mean look at Ray, who would have thought he'll settle down and actually love the woman so...

Castiel: shut up man....Kazi will never....

\*\*\*Castiel interrupted him\*\*\*

Ruslan: will never what?

\*\*\*Ruslan interrupted him too\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck you

\*\*\*he said walking out\*\*\*

Ruslan: stop denying your feelings man and she'll be yours

Castiel: golo lakho Madou (your cunt Madou )

Ruslan: if it's an insult then you too you bloodsucking motherfucker.....and you better behave when Thandi gets here!

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*after Ray mourned the death of his Maserati he went back to the house ready to deal with Mbali....he checked for her everywhere in the house but he couldn't find her and as he was about to go check in the backyard he saw the sliding door leading there opened and he



walked out and saw Mbali standing a bit far from the braai stand with flames and smoke coming out of it, she had Kalu strapped on her back...he wondered what she was doing there so he walked to them \*\*\*

Ray: what are you doing?

Mbali: teaching you a lesson

Ray: what?

Mbali: a lesson to never in your life threaten to kill me

\*\*\*then she started walking away\*\*\*

Ray: what are you talking about?

\*\*\*she stopped and looked at him\*\*\*

Mbali: your lucky pair of boxers and one of your favourite vintage vinyl record are burning in there

Ray: WHAT?

Mbali: mmmmh and your oldest whiskey bottle in your collection is now in the sewage pipes and that husband dearest is for cheating on me

Ray: te...tell me you kidding Mbali.....do you fucken know how much that bottle cost!

\*\*\*he said getting worked up with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmmh 50 year old THE BALVENIE and you said it costs R699 999 right

\*\*\*his hands started shaking as he looked at her shocked....angry and panicking \*\*\*

Ray: no...no...no you didn't...tell me you didn't Mbali!

\*\*\*he said suddenly looking pale\*\*\*

Mbali: breakfast is ready now come and eat

\*\*\*she said walking away and he just sat down on the ground as he felt his knees giving up on him....his hands were still shaking and his heart

was beating fast....he felt like he was about to pass out\*\*\*

-----

NIGERIA

\*\*\*they drove around until they found Mj...he was sitting on a rock with sweat all over his face breathing heavily...he got up when he saw them ready to continue running\*\*\*

Mj: don't come out of that car or I'll scream....i swear I will

Jabu: hebanna nchaele mo Mshikaro die kind o thuntshitse dai cheri Lerato byang a tshwere ke June-July so nou ( tell me here Mshikaro how did this kid shoot that chick Lerato when he's shaking like this now)

Heath: beats me Mjava

\*\*\*then he peeped out of the window\*\*\*

Heath: get in the car Mj

Mj: that's not happening

Heath: ok then since you got no money and no cellphone on you then say hi to malaria-filled mosquitos at night, ritualists, mad people and ghosts at night for me

Mj: wh...what?

Heath: mmmmh so if you change your mind meet us here tomorrow morning....enjoy the street life

Mj: WAIT....ARE YOU MAD HOW CAN YOU LEAVE ME HERE....YOU KNOW SOMETIMES I WONDER IF YOU'RE MY REAL BROTHER MXM

\*\*\*he said walking to the car with a serious look on his face and Heath and Jabu busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

...13

.

.

.

NIGERIA

\*\*\* Patience ran to Mj and she kissed his forehead\*\*\*

Patience: thanks God you're ok baby

Mj: im glad too mom

\*\*\*he said with a low voice and Patience smiled widely\*\*\*

Mj: im...im sorry for trying to kill myself....i was just scared

Mj.Senior: scared of what!

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Patience: my love don't please

Mj.Senior: no Patience he should tell us why he was scared

Mj: "shit"

\*\*\*he thought\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: we are waiting Junior!

Mj: ummm....ummm I met...met up with some chick....i mean girl in a motel and ummmm.... then we messed around a bit then his father walked in with his big goon bodyguard and they beat me up and he threatened me and called Nomvula names and he even insulted me so I pushed him hard and he fell on the floor and I ran away cause he was even threatening to kill me and he kept on saying I raped his daughter so when I got home i....i got scared and drank some pills

Mj.Senior: where did you even get the pills

Mj: "shit"

\*\*\*he thought....he knew he can't say they are Patience's cause when they get home she will find her pills\*\*\*

MJ: ummm they...they were Nomvula's

\*\*\*he said with a low tone\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: I give up with you Mj

Patience: my husband please don't....don't say that

Mj.Senior: what should I say then Patience, I was insulted because of this boy's reckless behavior and now that piece of shit will blackmail me into doing what he wants just because he knows I'll never allow my son to go to jail

Mj: he can't do that dad

Mj.Senior: he can and I know he will.....see your life now Mj....see how your reckless behavior is going to cost me now heh....you see now!

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard as his father was shouting at him\*\*\*

Mj: then I should have died

Patience: shut up....how can you say that

Mj: what else can I say mom....first of all I know

I messed up but I didn't force myself on that girl, and secondly im a horny teenager and peer pressure is around me all the time and that girl just threw herself at me and....

\*\*\*he kept quiet a bit cause he was now raising his voice and he knows never to raise his voice while talking to his father\*\*\*

Mj: im sorry

\*\*\*he said looking down\*\*\*

Mj: she's the one that suggested we meet somewhere private before we even started dating and I agreed cause im a teenager and ...

Mj.Senior: we know you're a horny teenager!

\*\*\*he snapped at him and Patience gave him a disapproving look\*\*\*

Mj: look dad when he found us we were sitting on the edge of the bed talking about next year....i wanted us to go study in South Africa



but her parents are against it they want her to study in the UK and she was trying to convince me to go with her but I told her I couldn't....i didn't force myself on her and I'll even get testimonies from all the guys she slept with, it's not even the first time she met a guy at a hotel or motel

Patience: if so then why did you even follow her to a hotel Junior?

Mj: cause im a teenager and she's a beautiful girl with a beautiful body and....

Mj.Senior: shut up!

\*\*\*Mj kept quiet\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: you're a disgrace Junior.... I have overlooked every shit you did in the past but...

\*\*\*Patience interrupted him\*\*\*

Patience: Michael don't....your son tried to kill himself because he was scared, if he didn't care

he would have looked you in the eye and lied  
but he's here in hospital apologizing

\*\*\*Mr Owoh-Masden kept quiet\*\*\*

Patience: and that stupid chief if he doesn't  
wants to deal with me then he better not come  
after you or my son and you'll not say words to  
you son you can't take back because of that  
useless piece of thing called chief what what

Mj: yes mom tell him

\*\*\*Patience looked at him with a scary frown on  
her face\*\*\*

Mj: tell him what....did I say you should talk!

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mj: I just...

Patience: quiet!

\*\*\*Mj kept quiet and he looked at his dad\*\*\*

Patience: and you young man this has better be

the last time you try to kill yourself or I'll personally wake you up and kill you myself you hear me

\*\*\*Mj nodded looking scared and Mr Owoh-Masden was just shocked by this side of Patience he's never seen before\*\*\*

Patience: and if you ever I mean ever do things that will make my husband question his parenting skills Junior you'll regret it you hear me!

\*\*\*Mj nodded quickly\*\*\*

Patience: look I understand that you are still young and you're gonna make mistakes as you grow up but baby, make sure you never do things that might catch up with you in the future and ruin things for you hear me

Mj: yes mam

Patience: good

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Patience: now rest, I'll come back during night visiting hour and I'll bring you toiletries and pyjamas ok

Mj: yes mam

Patience: good

\*\*\*she kissed his forehead and walked out then it was silence\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: ok what just happened?

Mj: your wife has a scary side and I swear I'll never do anything to piss her off

\*\*\*his father laughed\*\*\*

Mj: im sorry dad I know I messed up but I swear I didn't force myself on that girl

\*\*\*his father didn't say anything\*\*\*

Mj: you know I once dated chief Okwonko's daughter Mercy and i had a talk with someone

about it and she made me realize that if she's not worth me fighting with my family or losing them then she's not worth it at all so I broke it off.....what im trying to say is I do think sometimes before I make decisions but sometimes I don't so don't give up on me dad im far from perfect I mean im Nomvula's son so....

\*\*\*His father chuckled while shaking his head\*\*\*

Mj.Senior: you sure are

Mj: ah ah what's that supposed to mean

Mj.Senior: exactly that

\*\*\*he said walking out laughing and Mj laid there sulking then a smiled appeared on his face\*\*\*

Mj: damn it worked....fuck yeah

\*\*\*he punched the air and he laughed\*\*\*

-----  
AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Mbali, Snakes and Jase walked in the lounge and Castiel got up with a smile on his face as he looked at Mbali\*\*\*

Cass: and who's this beautiful mamasita

Snakes: ey voetsek that's my sister jou moer

Mbali: bhuti!

\*\*\*Cass turned and looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

Cass: did this fool just swear at me Madou

Ruslan: what did I say to you over the phone

Cass

\*\*\* then Castiel chuckled shaking his head and he looked at Snakes with a creepy smirk on his face and he walked over to Mbali\*\*\*

Cass: Cass is the name

\*\*\*he said stretching his hand for a handshake

and Ruslan spoke\*\*\*

Ruslan: and she's Ray's wife Mbali

\*\*\*he pulled his hand back and took a step back with a smile on his face\*\*\*

Cass: damn....umm yeah, got it!

\*\*\*then he looked at Mbali\*\*\*

Cass: nice to finally meet the woman that tamed my boy.... damn you're beautiful

\*\*\*Mbali didn't even know what to say all she could do was smile a bit looking at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: his flower that's my crazy unmannered brother Castiel

Castiel: he forgot to say his elder brother

Snakes: heh?

\*\*\*Mbali frowned\*\*\*

Mbali: you look younger than Ruu how can you be his elder brother

Castiel: good genes my lady...good genes

Jay: good genes my foot

\*\*\*he said and sat down and Snakes looked at him frowning and he could see Jay knew something they didn't know\*\*\*

Mbali: wow you have good genes indeed

\*\*\*she said still amazed by how young he looked\*\*\*

Castiel: and you're beautiful even with your red and swollen cheek

\*\*\*Mbali looked away embarrassed\*\*\*

Jase: enough man!

Snakes: iyadelela lemfene nx (this baboon is disrespectful)

Castiel: imfene uyihlo (a baboon is your father)

Snakes: uthini? (what did you say)

\*\*\*He said getting up and Jay held his arm\*\*\*



Jay: myeke Mamba (leave him Mamba)

Ruslan: Castiel what did I just say

Castiel: I will not stand here and be disrespected by this boys Madou....is it a sin to talk to Ray's wife

Ruslan: calm the fuck down!

\*\*\*he warned him\*\*\*

Mbali: wow ok

\*\*\*she went to Kalu and picked him up, he was still sleeping and she kissed his forehead with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Mbali: it was nice meeting you Cass

\*\*\*Castiel nodded and she walked away\*\*\*

Castiel: what's your problem man

\*\*\*He said to Snakes\*\*\*

Snakes: I don't like stupid niggas speaking to my little sister... that's what's wrong

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: well good luck with that cause Ray is my brother from another mother so I'll be talking to your little sister some more

Snakes: golo lakho ( your cunt)

Castiel: nawe ( you too)

Ruslan: are you two done

Castiel: when is Ray waking up I need to leave here before shit gets real

\*\*\*Ruslan ignored him and as he was about to stand up his eyes turned black and he quickly sat down and when Snakes saw his eyes he quickly got up and moved away\*\*\*

Snakes: what the fuck?

Castiel: Madou what's going on?

\*\*\*Ruslan didn't say anything, he just moved his eyeballs around and his head as if he's looking around \*\*\*

Jay: what's wrong with him?

Castiel: Madou what is it that you seeing

Ruslan: eles estão em sua casa incendiada e eles sabem Aden estava lá (they are at your burned down house and they know Aden was there)

Castiel: shit!

\*\*\*he said brushing his head and he sat down next to Ruslan\*\*\*

Jase: what is he talking about?

\*\*\*he asked Castiel because he knows Portuguese and Castiel ignored him\*\*\*

Castiel: são todos eles? (is it all of them?)

\*\*\*Ruslan nodded and Castile swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: eles parecem frustrados porque não sabem para onde ir a partir daí (they look frustrated cause they don't know where to go

from there)

\*\*\*Castiel didn't say anything he just sat there quiet until Ruslan's eyes went back to normal and he sighed and he sat back\*\*\*

Jase: what's going on man?

Castiel: it's a family thing that doesn't want your involvement

Jase: ooh is it

Castiel: yeah so butt out

\*\*\*Ruslan got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: guys don't mind him ok....apparently he fell with his head the day he was born so he's not ok upstairs

\*\*\*he said walking away\*\*\*

Castiel: really Madou!

\*\*\*the Khumalo's laughed except for Jay\*\*\*

Ruslan: order something meaty to eat, Ray will

be mad- hungry when he waked up

Snakes: bafo what it is?

Jay: he's a vampire

Snakes: what...who?

Castiel: im sure he's talking about me

Snakes&Jase: WHAT?

Jay: yeah he showed me his fangs and his eyes even changed colour

Snakes: ithi uyadlala Nkosenye ( say you're playing Nkosenye)

\*\*\*he said with a frown on his face....he was now sitting down\*\*\*

Castiel: he's not

\*\*\*Then his eyes changed colour and he showed them his now long fangs and Snakes got up quickly from the couch and he moved away with a look you can't explain with simple

words on his face\*\*\*

Snakes: hai hai...hai

\*\*\*He said shaking his head and Castiel chuckled and his eyes and fangs went back to normal\*\*\*

Jase: how is that possible when you're Ruslan's brother?

Castiel: Father was a Dracula, he seduced our mother and fucked her hard then I was conceived

\*\*\*Jase and Snakes looked at him with disturbed looks on their faces and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: relax I won't feed on ya'll....i heard beasts blood tastes like shit

\*\*\*Jase and Jay looked at each other then they both looked at Castiel\*\*\*

Jay: what the hell do you know about beasts?

Castiel: you have beasts inside of you right

Jase: how did you....ofcourse Ruslan nx

Jay: snitch ass motherfucker

Castiel: don't call my brother that dog

\*\*\*Jay chuckled\*\*\*

Jay: or what bloodsucker

\*\*\*Castiel's face got serious as he looked at Jay\*\*\*

Snakes: whoa whoa yimani kancani ( wait a minute) ....did you say fe...feed on us?

Castiel: yeah Vampires drink blood man

\*\*\*he said smirking at Snakes...he could already tell he wasn't a fan of supernatural things\*\*\*

Snakes: hell no.... RUSLAN....RUSLAN...EH MFOWETHU RUSLAN....RUSLAN!

\*\*\*he called Ruslan and Ruu came out of the kitchen with a cup of coffee on his hand\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?

Snakes: talk to your brother man...

\*\*\*Ruslan looked at Castiel who had a smile on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: what the hell did you do now?

Snakes: he's a vampire....a fucken vampire....why the hell didn't you tell us man!

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he gave Castiel a disappointed look cause he clearly told him to behave \*\*\*

Castiel: sorry bro

Ruslan: yeah he's a half breed vampire and no he won't suck your blood out so you can relax

\*\*\*he said sitting down\*\*\*

Snakes: relax....uthi relax....entlek what the hell is happening in this world....kuna amademoni...bathakathi manje kuna namavampire and bathi ama half breed what



what ( there are demons...witches/wizards and now there are vampires and they call them half breed what what)

Jase: Nhlaka calm down before you suffer a heart attack

\*\*\*Snakes took out his phone ignoring Jase and he dialed Ntombi's numbers\*\*\*

Ntombi: sthandwa sam ( my love)

Snakes: lalela la Ntombi (listen here Ntombi)...i want you to go to checkers hyper and buy as many garlic as you can and hhayi lezo zepowder I want the ones you chop with a knife and look for Ibhayibheli lam lowo enginikezwe ngumama, ngiyeza manje (and look for my bible the one that was given to me by mom, im on my way)

\*\*\*Castiel laughed and Ruslan, Jay and Jase looked down holding their laughs in\*\*\*

Ntombi: ummm baby kwenzakalani? (baby

what's going on)

Snakes: sthandwa sam please do as I say...  
please

\*\*\*Ntombi sighed\*\*\*

Ntombi: ok I'll go buy them but I want you to tell  
me what's going on

Snakes: I'll explain when I get home I promise

\*\*\*Castiel laughed louder\*\*\*

Ntombi: who's that is laughing ingathi  
uyahlanya ( as if he's mentally disturbed )

Snakes: God's reject....even no satan akamfuni  
sthandwa sam so angazi nokuthi ngithi yini nje  
( even satan doesn't want him so I don't even  
know what he is)

\*\*\*the twins busted out with loud laughter and  
Castiel kept a straight face\*\*\*

Snakes: go and buy lezo garlic and I'll see you  
when I get home

Ntombi: ai ok...ngiyakthanda yezwa ( I love you ok)

Snakes: uthandwa yimi sthandwa sam ( you're loved by me my love)

\*\*\*Ntombi blushed\*\*\*

Snakes: bye sthandwa sam

Ntombi: bye

\*\*\*they ended the call\*\*\*

Castiel: uzonya for what you just said to your wife about me

Snakes: angikhulumi nabantu abafile mina ( I don't talk to dead people) go and talk to La Parca im sure he'll be happy to talk to his long lost brother

\*\*\*he said moving and he went to the kitchen leaving the twins laughing their asses off then Cass got up and Ruslan stopped him\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't even think about it...he's Mbali's

brother and Ray will fucken kill you if you make his flower cry like that

Castiel: he's busy insulting me Madou

Ruslan: he's like this man just let him be

Castiel: you don't know what he said man

Jay: you shouldn't have showed him your fangs in the fucken first place so it's your fault

Jase: mmmmh you shouldn't have

\*\*\*he said laughing\*\*\*

Ruslan: mmmmh now suck it up...you started this whole shit

Castiel: mxm

\*\*\*after some time Snakes came back with two butter knives tied with a string together in a cross " + " shape and Ruslan and the twins busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Castiel: now he's going too far Madou

Snakes: udlalele kude nami wena lesilo ( play far away from me lesilo) uyangizwa and im not playing or else I'll burn you with the blood of Jesus unye nyi

\*\*\*laughter filled the room and Castiel got up and went towards the kitchen shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: this is gonna be a fucken long day nx

-----

LATER AT NIGHT

\*\*\*the Khumalos left and so did Castiel and Ruslan after Ray woke up....him and Mbali haven't said anything to each other and it was just tense in the house.... Later Mbali and Kalu went to sleep while Ray was in his study lying on the couch...he kept replaying his fight with Mbali over and over in his head and the disrespect he felt, then his mind went to Mbali's cries especially when he slapped her....he

clenched his jaws thinking about it.... he couldn't believe he did that to his own flower then he sighed and he got angry thinking about Celine and that all that happened is because of her....

After three hours he got up and switched off the lights and he went to check if all the doors were locked and he also switched off the lights and he went upstairs....he got there and found Mbali sleeping with Kalu next to her on the bed and he sighed, as he was about to lift Kalu up Mbali spoke\*\*\*

Mbali: leave him

Ray: he needs to sleep in his crib

Mbali: you know what its fine I'll go sleep with him in the guest bedroom

\*\*\* she said pulling off the covers\*\*\*

Ray: why would you do that....you're my wife  
Mbali

Mbali: so?

\*\*\*he looked at her and she looked away\*\*\*

Ray: is this how things will be from now on?

\*\*\*she got out of bed and she walked to Kalu' side and Ray stopped her\*\*\*

Ray: we need to talk about this my flower

Mbali: there's nothing to talk about Ray....i think you should move out

Ray: that's not happening you hear me

\*\*\*he said getting worked up\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please

Ray: im not going anywhere and neither are you!

Mbali: so you gonna force me to share this house with you

Ray: im your husband damn it.... I paid your fucken bride price

Mbali: fine then since money is suddenly an

issue...how much did you pay and I'll tell my brothers to pay you back.... with interest

\*\*\*Ray looked at Mbali with a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Mbali: get out of my way Ray

\*\*\*he didn't move\*\*\*

Mbali: move Ray

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and Ray moved closer to her\*\*\*

Ray: I love you Mbali and I messed up big time but im not losing you

Mbali: move Ray

Ray: I love you you hear...I love you

Mbali: you know what fine, you'll sleep with Kalu and if he gives you trouble you can bring him to me

\*\*\*she turned and walked out and Ray sat down



on the bed and he rubbed his head roughly and he sighed\*\*\*

\*\*\*in the middle of the night Mbali heard the door open and she switched the lights on and Ray was standing there naked with his dick hard pointing north with veins popping\*\*\*

Mbali: what the h...

\*\*\*she said that and swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ray: I couldn't let you give me a head or want to see you naked cause I was stressed out and I knew if I get naughty with you im gonna end up traumatizing you..... I tend to lose control Mbali and I become a monster that's why back before I met you I would never go for an innocent nice girl ever cause ya'll take things into heart and you never forget and gets traumatized easily

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ray: and about the baby she's older than our relationship and marriage if you calculate

correctly

\*\*\*she looked down\*\*\*

Ray: and I didn't know about her until yesterday when Celine send me a picture and a message

\*\*\*she continued to look down\*\*\*

Ray: about me cheating....well it happened on the early stages of us dating and for the first time ever I felt like shit after sleeping with another woman and I've never cheated ever and I vowed to myself to never do that again

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them\*\*\*

Ray: I know I hurt you and shit got out of hand and im sorry for laying a hand on you but...

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Ray: you disrespected me Mbali....you fucken embarrassed me in front of my friend

Mbali: well you deserved it

Ray: I deserved it?

Mbali: yeah you did

\*\*\*she said looking at him and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: you think you know me huh? you think you got me figured out is that it

\*\*\* he moved closer to the bed and by now his dick was dripping pre cum and she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ray: the only person in this whole fucken world who knows me better than I know myself is Ruslan and he knows I hate being disrespected in any way!

\*\*\*She swallowed hard because he looked scary now\*\*\*

Ray: I tried to protect you from experiencing a dark sexual side I have and you had the fucken guts to tell me shit saying there are men out there who would give up their wealth just to tap

that ass huh

\*\*\*He got really close and he roughly pulled her covers off her\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray what are you....

\*\*\*she didn't finish as Ray grabbed her roughly and pulled her towards him and he pulled her from the bed and she stood next to him looking scared\*\*\*

Ray: and not only that but you laid your fucken hands on me....is that what your grandmother taught you huh....have you seen her lay her hands on her husband?

\*\*\*he said grabbing her pyjama shirt and he ripped it apart and her breath hinged as she looked shit scared\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray

Ray: you wanna see the other side of me right? you wanna see me lose my shit and fucken

traumatize you for life...is that it

Mbali: n...no

\*\*\*he pulled her pyjama shorts off and she wasn't wearing an underwear and he roughly turned her around \*\*\*

Mbali: Ray don't please I haven't healed completely

Ray: you wanna give other men what belongs to me right and you've suddenly become the husband in our marriage abi....you have a dick now Mbali is that it!

Mbali: Ray look ok I... listen we....

\*\*\* he bend her roughly and pressed her head on the bed hard and he opened her legs\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please stop...don't do this

Ray: im a fucken bad man Mbali but I chose to become a good man just for you....yes I once cheated but I chose to change for you and you

fucken disrespected me in front of my friend!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and she started crying\*\*\*

Ray: shut up!....or else this time around I'll let La Parca deal with Saint as you watch

\*\*\*she muffed her cries\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please

\*\*\*he moved the tip of his dick on her other hole (ass) lubricating it with his pre cum and she moved forward with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Ray: who said you should move...did I say move!

\*\*\*he said with a firm voice\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray please I have never done anal sex before

Ray: I want to make sure you never give other fuckers out there what belongs to me....after this hole then next it's the honey pot when you're healed....im gonna fucken teach you a

lesson you'll never forget...

\*\*\*he pushed the tip in and she screamed moving forward and he pulled her back and held her in place as she cried\*\*\*

INSERT.....15

.

.

.

\*\*\* Mbali was sitting on the couch eating while playing with Kalu who was lying next to her....she was tickling him and he was laughing while kicking his legs and moving his hands and Mbali was chuckling too....it was a nice sight to see but Ray wasn't here for that...he was angry\*\*\*

Ray: where the fuck is my signed NBA basketball

\*\*\*Mbali looked at him with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Mbali: and how will I know where it is

Ray: don't fuck with me Mbali im not in the fucken mood, now where the fuck is it?

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Mbali: maybe I stabbed it with a knife and burned it to ashes or maybe not

Ray: what?

\*\*\*He said with his heart beating fast\*\*\*

Mbali: I said "maybe"

Ray: Mbali fuck with me anyhow you want but not with that ball....you know it holds sentimental value to me something that is irreplaceable and I can't fucken replace it even if I want to so where the hell is it

Mbali: I don't know



\*\*\*She said not even looking at him and he stood there looking at her, he wanted to grab her by her hair and drag her to the basement and beat the shit out of her until she tells him where it is but he couldn't for obvious reasons\*\*\*

Ray: so it has gotten to this huh..... I mess up and you burn, break and throw away my shit huh

Mbali: would you have preferred I divorce your ass then Raymond?

\*\*\*He looked at her with clenched jaws\*\*\*

Mbali: you said you'll take it like a man so take it like the man you are

\*\*\*she continued eating and he chuckled which was a clear indication to Mbali that he's angry\*\*\*

Ray: so threatening to leave me is the only hold you have on me so I don't bust your fucken

teeth out right

Mbali: I don't have your stupid ball Raymond  
now leave me alone

Ray: well that stupid ball had better not have  
even a single scratch on it or by the time I'll be  
done with you even your father won't recognize  
you nx

\*\*\*He then walked away and Mbali swallowed  
hard cause his tone and his threatening words  
shook her a bit and she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: mxm there's nothing that you can do to  
me that will beat you cheating on me and  
breaking my heart.... nx rubbish

\*\*\*She said and continued eating....well she hid  
the ball somewhere safe, she knew it meant  
everything to him cause one of the signatures  
on it belongs to his all-time favorite late  
basketball player so if she burns it then he can  
never replace it like he can with the things she

destroyed cause the guy passed on 6 years ago\*\*\*

-----

## ON THE ROAD

Thandi: so you still won't tell me where we're going

\*\*\*Ruslan looked briefly at her with a smirk on his face and he looked back at the road\*\*\*

Ruslan: will you just relax....you'll know in due time

Thandi: mmmh...so wherever we are going im going to meet your brother huh?

\*\*\*he nodded\*\*\*

Ruslan: and I must warn you, he's a bit too much, he doesn't think before he talks and he's a pain in the ass and..... he's also a flirt and...and...and....

\*\*\*Thandi laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: wow

Ruslan: mmmmh he's too much amour so don't be shocked by him you'll get used to him

Thandi: ok

\*\*\*Then Ruslan sighed and he put his hand on her thigh and he squeezed it a little\*\*\*

Ruslan: so is it safe for us to start making love again

\*\*\*Thandi blushed cause she missed him like that too\*\*\*

Thandi: ummm yeah I guess....gogo cleansed me and 10 days has passed since his death so im good

\*\*\*He smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: good cause I want you so bad my love

\*\*\*she smiled blushing some more and she looked away biting her lower lip\*\*\*

Ruslan: wow and she's blushing

\*\*\*he said laughing and Thandi smiled\*\*\*

Thandi: mxm.....anyway I hope there's food  
where were are going cause im hungry

Ruslan: yeah ofcourse....Cass and I cooked

\*\*\*She smiled\*\*\*

Thandi: and to think you two didn't see eye to  
eye

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: I guess sometimes blood is really  
thicker than water

Thandi: true

\*\*\*he took her hand and kissed the back of it\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you amour

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Thandi: I love you too

\*\*\*Then Thandi's phone rang and she took it out of her bag, she didn't recognize the numbers but she answered anyway\*\*\*

Thandi: hello

Jackson: please don't hang up..... please

\*\*\*She swallowed hard with her body tensing\*\*\*

Thandi: ka bona o susu these days neh, akare kgaogana le nna? ( I see you're deaf these days, didn't I say stay away from me?)

Jackson: can we meet up please.....i want to explain the text I send you....im really in love with you Thandi im not playing games with you

\*\*\*She closed her eyes getting angry then she opened them again and Ruslan noticed\*\*\*

Ruslan: what's wrong amour and who's that?

\*\*\*He asked cause he could see she was getting angry and she looked tensed but she didn't say anything, she just gave the phone to

Ruslan\*\*\*

Jackson: hello Thandi....Thandi are you still there?

Ruslan: who the hell is this?

\*\*\*He asked with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Jackson: I should be asking you that question....where is Thandi....just give her the damn phone!

\*\*\*Then Ruslan remembered the voice and he chuckled getting pissed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh it's you you piece of shit

Jackson: so you're the bastard that's making Thandi to refuse to meet up with me

\*\*\*He said with an angry voice and Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: tell me here boy, why would my fiancée agree to meet up with another man huh?

\*\*\*Thandi looked at him surprised that he said that and Ruslan winked at her\*\*\*

Jackson: wh...what?

Ruslan: yeah....I popped the question and she said yes so you can go hang yourself now

\*\*\*Thandi held her laugh\*\*\*

Jackson: you're lying you fucken bastard!

Ruslan: you wanna ask her yourself....she's here next to me looking fine as ever

\*\*\*He could hear Jackson breathing heavily over the phone\*\*\*

Jackson: Thandi will change her mind I know she will....she loves her boys and she won't be able to live with herself knowing that she had an opportunity to make sure the boys know their roots and all and she chose a useless dick instead

Ruslan: well the boys will know their roots and



you and your evil family members will bow down to her and the boys asking for forgiveness one of these days

Jackson: you son of a bi....

\*\*\*Ruslan interrupted him\*\*\*

Ruslan: listen here boy....i don't fight with small boys and Thandi doesn't fuck with small boys anymore so if you know what's good for you then never call Thandi ever again or I'll make your nightmares a reality....i hope we understand each other

\*\*\* He said with a stern voice and he dropped the call and gave Thandi the phone\*\*\*

Ruslan: block that number amour

\*\*\*she did and they drove in complete silence until Thandi spoke\*\*\*

Thandi: im sorry baby I swear there's nothing going....

\*\*\*Ruslan held her hand and kissed it\*\*\*

Ruslan: relax I know amour

\*\*\*She sighed with relief\*\*\*

Thandi: then why were you silent like that

\*\*\*He smirked looking at her briefly\*\*\*

Ruslan: so a man can't think now huh?

\*\*\*he said with a smirk on his handsome face\*\*\*

Thandi: what is it that this man is thinking about then?

\*\*\*she said poking him on his upper arm\*\*\*

Ruslan: your delicious pussy..... I want you so bad so I was debating with myself on whether to stop the car and park then have you or to just keep on driving

Thandi: bathong Ruu

\*\*\*He laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: what...im being honest

\*\*\*She just shook her head blushing\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you ok

\*\*\*he said kissing the back of her hand\*\*\*

Thandi: I love you too

-----

\*\*\*They finally arrived and they got out of the car and walked to the door with Ruu holding her hand\*\*\*

Thandi: wow this house is huge and beautiful baby

Ruslan: you like it?

\*\*\*She nodded looking around the yard\*\*\*

Thandi: mmmmh

\*\*\*he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: im glad you do

Thandi: is this your brother's house?

Ruslan: no

\*\*\*he said opening the door for her and then she slowly walked in and her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't mind the mess, the interior designers aren't done yet

\*\*\* the house wasn't even dirty it's just most of the furniture was covered with white sheets.....well her eyes wondered around, the interior design was beyond beautiful and she noticed that its one of the designs she once saw on a magazine and she remembers showing Ruu the pictures and she told him the day she'll buy her boys a house she'll do the exact designs inside her house and now the magazine pictures are right in front of her eyes and she can't believe it\*\*\*

Ruslan: you look flushed amour are you ok

\*\*\*he said with an amused voice\*\*\*

Thandi: ummm yeah im ok it's just I once saw the exact designs in a magazine....i even remember showing them to you

\*\*\*Ruslan pulled her closed and he kissed her\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah I remember you once did....anyway let me go call Cass so we can get this over and done with

Thandi: ummm ok

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead and he followed Cass's dark aura and it let him to the study while Thandi was moving her eyes around still captivated by the interior design.... Anyway with Castiel, his aura wasn't good at all despite him being a Vampire....it was like he was angry or something....Anyway Ruslan opened the door and he found Castiel staring at his crystal ball and it was showing Kazi and a guy, they were in

bed cuddling and laughing\*\*\*

Ruslan: Cass

\*\*\*he didn't move or look up at him\*\*\*

Ruslan: Cass!

Castiel: they were making out Madou....he was touching her and shit and she let him

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice, he was even breathing heavily and Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: she can't be having sex now, I mean she hasn't healed completely

Castiel: I didn't say they were fucking man!

\*\*\*He snapped at him and Ruslan chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: and he says he's not in love with her

\*\*\*he shook his head looking at an angry

Castiel\*\*\*

Ruslan: anyway Thandi is here come and say hi

\*\*\*he walked to the door\*\*\*

Ruslan: and you better be in a jolly mood when you come out

\*\*\*then he walked out and Castiel clicked his tongue\*\*\*

-----

Ruslan: took you long enough

\*\*\*He said looking at Castiel as he walked to them\*\*\*

Castiel: chill will ya it takes long to look this good ok

\*\*\*Then he smiled at Thandi\*\*\*

Castiel: damn and how the hell did you convince such beauty to be yours

Ruslan: piss off man

\*\*\*Castiel laughed and Thandi just smiled shyly\*\*\*

Castiel: Castiel is the name.....Cass for short and damn you are beautiful mami?

\*\*\*he said shaking her hand and Thandi frowned a bit cause his hand was ice cold\*\*\*

Ruslan: I'll bust your balls man don't fuck with me!

\*\*\* He warned him and Castiel laughed ignoring him\*\*\*

Castiel: don't mind my cold hand its some kind of a.....condition I have

\*\*\*he said letting go of her hand and he remembered Kazi once asked if he has a condition and he said no that its because he sleeps naked....he swallowed hard thinking about Menzi and Kazi kissing with Menzi touching her perfect body then he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Thandi: ooh ok...it's nice to finally meet you Cass



Castiel: likewise soon to be Mrs Monteiro and im the elder brother by the way while he's my little bro

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: good genes amour

\*\*\*he said annoyed by Castiel\*\*\*

Thandi: wow ummmm ok

Castiel: damn you're beautiful

\*\*\*he said trying to annoy Ruslan some more and Thandi blushed\*\*\*

Ruslan: stop it man, only im allowed to make my woman blush!

\*\*\*He said warning Castiel and Cass laughed not believing what he was witnessing while Thandi was shocked by Ruslan's possessiveness towards her\*\*\*

Castiel: damn man I swear I've never seen you this possessive towards any woman

Ruslan: im not possessive I just don't want other men touching or making amour blush

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled then Ruslan mind-communicated with Castiel \*\*\*

Ruslan: "you good"

\*\*\*he asked him cause he could still feel the dark aura around him\*\*\*

Castiel: " yeah I'll be fine don't worry"

\*\*\*he answered him back then he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Castiel: excuse him our wife that's what happens when an old man falls in love and be loved back truthfully for the first time

Ruslan: will you just shut up please!

\*\*\*he warned him and he raised his hands in surrender\*\*\*

Castiel: fine whatever....anyway welcome to the family Thandi

Thandi: thank you

\*\*\* she said smiling then Castiel looked at Ruslan and he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: damn you got it bad man

Ruslan: I'll fucken hit you Castiel continue and you'll see

\*\*\*Castiel laughed and he looked at Thandi who was holding her laugh\*\*\*

Castiel: our wife your crazy man here and I cooked so I hope you're hungry

Thandi: im famished

Castiel: great let me go dish up for us then

\*\*\*he walked away happy that his little brother finally found the one....then his face got hard and his eyes changed colour as he got angry thinking about Kazi and Menzi kissing and touching each other\*\*\*

Castiel: Nxa

\*\*\*He said as soon as he got inside the kitchen  
\*\*\*

Castiel: no more Mr nice guy

IN THE LOUNGE

Ruslan: sorry about that amour

Thandi: it was nice seeing you that jealous

\*\*\*she said smiling at him and he smirked  
shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: don't get used to it

Thandi: ah ah why not

Ruslan: cause it will got to your head and you  
might end up doing shitty things that will make  
me act crazy just cause you wanna see me  
jealous again

\*\*\*Thandi laughed and Ruslan got up smiling  
and he switched the TV on then he kissed her  
forehead\*\*\*

Ruslan: let me go help him ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he went to the kitchen\*\*\*

Thandi: wow ok.....damn I wonder who owns this beautiful house

\*\*\*she said running her hand on the expensive looking table in front of her\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\* Well after their lunch meal Ruslan ended up telling Thandi about the house, that he bought it for her and the boys and he even gave her the tittle deed and the house was in her name.....she cried not believing that Ruslan did that for her and the boys, she cried until she finally calmed down and as for Castiel he was amazed with Thandi's reaction towards Ruslan's surprise.....seeing her genuine reaction made him to fully accept Thandi into their lives cause these days the world is full of opportunists and gold diggers so seeing Thandi that emotional to

a point that Ruslan had to hold her until she calmed down just because he bought her a mere house made him see that she's not in it for the money....

Anyway now Ruslan and Thandi were lying in bed with Thandi's head on his chest while Castiel went back to stalking Kazi using Ruslan's crystal ball\*\*\*

Thandi: thank you Ruu for the house..... yoh I cant believe you did that, im still shocked

\*\*\*Ruslan kissed her forehead and he smiled\*\*\*

Ruslan: you haven't seen nothing yet amour

\*\*\*she raised her head and looked into his eyes\*\*\*

Thandi: you do know im not about the money right

Ruslan: trust me I know

\*\*\*she sighed and rested her head back on his

chest\*\*\*

Ruslan: talk to me

Thandi: why didn't I meet you before I met James mara

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: all I can say is it's better to suffer now than later in life amour....you have suffered and now its your time to be truly happy and loved unconditionally

\*\*\*She snuggled closer and he held her tight\*\*\*

Thandi: I love you Ruu

Ruslan: I love you too my love

-----

\*\*\*They were now kissing and soon the kiss got heated and Ruslan got between her legs and they continued kissing hungrily and as soon as Ruslan grabbed her right breast Thandi winced in pain\*\*\*

Thandi: ouch, careful they are sensitive baby

Ruslan: sorry my love

\*\*\*he whispered to her and they continued to kiss then Ruslan's hands went to her ass and as soon as grabbed her ass cheeks she winced again\*\*\*

Thandi: ouch

\*\*\*He stopped and looked at her\*\*\*

Ruslan: what's wrong?

Thandi: it's nothing serious.....four days back I went to the clinic and i started on contraceptives and the nurse that gave me the injection I think she's a heartless woman, the area she injected me on is swollen and painful

\*\*\*Ruslan quickly got off her with a look she can't explain plastered on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: you...you did what?

Thandi: ummm I...i went to get a shot four days



back

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: tell me you're joking Thandi

\*\*\*he called her by her name\*\*\*

Thandi: why would I joke with that Ruu....you said you'll never use a rubber with me so I went and got a shot

Ruslan: HOW CAN YOU FUCKEN GET A SHOT WHILE YOU PREGNANT!

\*\*he said getting out of bed\*\*\*

Thandi: what?....me?..... Ruu im not pregnant

Ruslan: YOU ARE DAMN IT!

\*\*he snapped at her and she jumped a bit looking scared\*\*\*

Ruslan: get up and wear your shoes im taking you to see a doctor!

\*\*\*he said wearing his shoes but she didn't

move\*\*\*

Ruslan: I said get up Thandi, don't make me tell you again!

Thandi: why are you shouting at me huh.....im not pregnant ok I was on my periods and so I went for a shot.....i would know if I was pregnant!

\*\*\*she snapped at him too and he stood there with a deadly look on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: you were on what?

Thandi: my periods

\*\*\*he went to her and put his hand on her stomach and his eyes changed color and they turned cloudy and Thandi froze looking at Ruslan with her eyes popped out.... Anyway Ruslan commanded the fetus to move and the small bean moved a bit which made Thandi to have a weird feeling inside her stomach and luckily he could hear the heartbeat loud and

clear then his eyes went back to normal and he sighed with relief and when his eyes landed on Thandi's he saw a shocked look on her face....he sighed then he got out of bed... her seeing his eyes changing was the least of his problems now\*\*\*

Ruslan: wear your shoes Thandi....im taking you to the doctor....my child's life might be in danger!

\*\* he commanded her but she didn't move\*\*\*

Ruslan: Thandi!

\*\*\*he said raising his voice\*\*\*

Thandi: im not pregnant ok and what happened to your eyes....they....

\*\*\*Ruslan interrupted her\*\*\*

Ruslan: I SAID WEAR YOUR SHOES AND LET'S GO!

\*\*\*he roared and she just sat there not moving with a frown on her face.....Ruslan looked at her

with a pissed off look but she wasn't moved at all in fact she was hurt and angry at him for raising his voice at her\*\*\*

-----

## IN THE STUDY

\*\*\*he was drowning his sorrows with alcohol...the crystal ball was now back in the bag and he was laying on the couch humming an ancient song his late mother used to sing for him when he was young....then he heard a voice\*\*\*

Voice: don't give up on her my night rider

\*\*\*he stopped humming the song and he frowned sitting up\*\*\*

Castiel: you again....and stop calling me that

Voice: you love her and its ok..... and he loves her too and it's still ok but you need her Cass and she might not know it but she needs you

too

\*\*\*Castiel huffed\*\*\*

Castiel: ooh shut the hell up Juana or whatever your name is....just stay out of my fucken business!

Juana: you love her.....admit it and everything will fall into place

Castiel: come out and say that to my fucken face and you'll see what I do to you.....nx I don't fucken love her!

\*\*\*he shouted\*\*\*

Juana: you have fallen for her and it ok

Castiel: you know what FUCK YOU....YOU DEAD BITCH....FUCK YOU NX!

\*\*\*he got up and walked out.... then a pissed off Ruslan and an angry Thandi walked down the stairs and he stopped with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: is everything ok

Ruslan: yeah

\*\*\*he said and he walked passed him and Thandi followed without saying anything and Castiel concentrated on reading Thandi's mind and all she was thinking was;

“ I know my body and im not pregnant”

..... “ entlek fuck him....ukhuluma nam kanjani lo, heeh akangazi shem....eeh tsotsi e gae nkitsi pila shem nx” (I know my body and im not pregnant” .....you know what fuck him....how dare he talks to me like that, heeh he doesn't know shame....eeh this thug doesn't know me shame “)

And she went on;

“ heh he shouts at me....o omanyana nna Thandi, nna Tee wa go tshwara tsotsi ka lerete until a thepa out, shem this guy doesn't know me he should asks James shem cause nna a ka

rapelwa in fact a ka apeswa phuwana so ke gafa strong nx” ( heh he shouts at me... shouts at me Thandi, me Tee who grabbed a thug’s balls tight until he taps out, shame this guy doesn’t know me he should ask James shame cause im one not to be messed with cause im crazy like that) \*\*\*

Castiel: holi shit....

\*\*\*he said with his eyes popped out... then he laughed surprised by that side of Thandi forgetting that he was angry a minute ago.....he then heard the car driving out and he sighed shaking his head then he took out his phone and searched for her numbers and he dialed them.....they rang for some time then she answered with her sweet voice\*\*\*

Kazi: hello

\*\*\*he clenched his jaws \*\*\*

Kazi: hello

Castiel: hey Ntandokazi

Kazi: hi.... ummm who's this?

Castiel: Castiel...the guy with ice cold hands

\*\*\*she kept quiet for a bit \*\*\*

Kazi: ooh ummm how did you get my numbers  
cause I don't remember giving them to you

Castiel: let's just say I have my ways

Kazi: ooh

Castiel: yeah..... look Ntandokazi im too old to  
play games so im gonna be straight with you

Kazi: huh?

\*\*\*she said confused and he breathed out\*\*\*

Castiel: im attracted to you

Juana: "attracted" really Castiel?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat stopping himself from  
swearing at Juana voice\*\*\*



Kazi: wait what?

Castiel: yeah and tell that boyfriend of yours that he has competition now and I don't like to lose

Kazi: woah Castiel...stop right th....

\*\*\*he interrupted her\*\*\*

Castiel: I want you and im gonna have you Kazi and yeah I may have all the time in the world but im a very impatient man so tell that boy of yours that he better start mourning for your little relationship as of now

\*\*\*Kazi just kept quiet shocked\*\*\*

Castiel: and I don't care who saw you first and whatnots, what's important is who you'll end up with, and again always remember that you'll earn a strike each time you let him touch what belongs to me and like I said I have all the time in the world and soon so will you, so tread carefully cause im one crazy son of a bitch

Kazi.....I may end up punishing you for eternity for letting boys touch what's mine that's how crazy I am .....now that's out of the way enjoy the rest of your day

\*\*\*then he ended the call and Kazi swallowed hard still shocked by the phone call.....Then Menzi walked in from the en-suit bathroom and sat next to Kazi on the bed and he kissed her exposed shoulder and that's when she came back to earth\*\*\*

Kazi: ummm hey you back

\*\*\*Menzi frowned\*\*\*

Menzi: yeah...are you ok?

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Kazi: yeah.... what about you?

\*\*\*he chuckled and he kissed her shoulder again and he laid back\*\*\*

Menzi: I'll live, angithi bathi ( they say) good

things comes to those who wait

\*\*\* she chuckled and he kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Menzi: so tell me here sthandwa sam, ngizolinda iskhathi esingakanani for ikhekhe lakho ( so how long do I have to wait for your pussy my love)

\*\*\*she faked a chuckled shaking her head\*\*\*

Kazi: wow failing to wait already Mr?

\*\*\* she laid her head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around her and he kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Menzi: never! bengibuza nje sthandwa sam.....so uthi ngizongena nini esibayeni sam? (never! I was just asking my love.....so when will I enter my kraal?)

\*\*\*she swallowed and she faked a laugh and Menzi laughed too\*\*\*

Kazi: hai shem I give up with you

\*\*\*They continued to laugh..... but Kazi was troubled by that phone call and she wondered if she should tell Menzi about it\*\*\*

INSERT.....16

.

.

.

NIGERIA

\*\*\*They arrived at some building and Jabu and Heath sat still not getting out of the car\*\*\*

Mj: what...what are we doing here bros?

Heath: you'll see

\*\*\*Mj swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mj: I hope you two are not here to sell me to ritualists ooo

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Heath: and if we are?

\*\*\*Mj quickly tried to open the car door but it was locked\*\*\*

Mj: open this door....open it I want to get out!

Jabu: ey blei stel man or keng o thomile go gafa?  
( sit still or what have you started going crazy)

Mj: brother Ezeh please don't do this.....God is watching ooo he's watching and he no like wetin you dey do ....abeg open the door, shame the devil and open this door abeg

\*\*\*he said looking scared\*\*\*

Heath: mxm I swear Mj if I hear "phem" from your mouth again, I'll deal with you

\*\*\*he warned him and Mj kept quiet keeping himself from speaking but eish it was hard....then two scary looking guys came to the car and Heath unlocked the door and they

opened Mj's door and grabbed his arm pulling him out of the car and he screamed\*\*\*

Mj: ey wetin you dey do ( what are you doing) ... brother Heath help me.. don't let them take me im begging you

\*\*\*then one of the guys injected him on his neck and he passed out\*\*\*

Guy: we should put him in bros?

Heath: yeah but I'll put the frogs in myself

\*\*\*they nodded and carried him away\*\*\*

Jabu: kao chaela Mshikaro die kind o inyela ge a tsoga ( im telling you Mshikaro that boy will shit himself when he wakes up)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Heath: we need pictures for big Ray

\*\*\*they laughed again\*\*\*

-----

## INSIDE RUSLAN'S CAR

\*\*\*Thandi was looking outside the window with tears running down her cheeks while Ruslan was just sitting there staring into space....They just got out of the doctor's office with conformation that Thandi is in fact pregnant and the bleeding wasn't periods but spotting that usually happens to most women on their first trimester, the baby was ok and the heartbeat too was strong..... Well Ruslan didn't understand why Thandi was mad and why she wasn't happy that she was pregnant, he was in fact disappointed by her reaction\*\*\*

Ruslan: so you're not gonna say anything about the fact that you're pregnant

\*\*\*She kept quiet wiping her tears off and she continued to look outside the window.....they were still parked outside the Doctor's surgery\*\*\*

Ruslan: Thandi?

Thandi: did you get me pregnant on purpose?

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet looking at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: why would you ask me that?

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Thandi: im asking so I expect an answer from you

\*\*\*she said with a serious tone too and Ruslan chuckled a bit\*\*\*

Ruslan: and if I did?

\*\*\*she turned and looked at him with a serious look on her face\*\*\*

Thandi: did you or did you not

Ruslan: I said what if I did

\*\*\*she breathed in and out loudly\*\*\*

Thandi: is that why you refused to use a



condom even after I told you im not on any  
contraceptives

Ruslan: no

\*\*\*he said still looking at her\*\*\*

Thandi: then how the hell did you know I was  
pregnant and come to think of it you began  
touching my stomach few days after we had  
sex

Ruslan: we made love!

\*\*\*he said correcting her and she gave im a  
deadly look but he wasn't moved\*\*\*

Thandi: how did you know Ruslan?

Ruslan: does it matter though amour

Thandi: YES IT DOES!

\*\*\*she said shouting and he raised an eyebrow  
at her\*\*\*

Ruslan: tone it down before you piss me off!

\*\*\*he said warning her...he was still as chilled as ever but his voice was filled with so much authority...he only had a serious look on his face\*\*\*

Thandi: mxm

\*\*\*she looked outside the window and Ruslan just continued to look at her\*\*\*

Ruslan: why are you acting like this amour?

Thandi: wena how did you know I was pregnant

Ruslan: I just knew ok

Thandi: let me guess it has something to do with your eyes changing colour right

\*\*\*Ruslan kept quiet a bit then he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: let's just go home and we will talk there

\*\*\*she didn't say anything and he started the car and drove away\*\*\*

-----

## AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Mbali and Kalu were taking a nap upstairs and Ray was tired from searching the entire house for his precious ball, he couldn't find it and that made him angrier and more frustrated....he then went to the kitchen and he took out bottled water and drank from the bottle then he searched for what he could eat in the fridge and he found a plate with untouched food in it , then he saw pots on the stove and to him it meant Mbali cooked and that plate was probably his.....Anyway he took the plate and heated the food in the microwave and he sat down and started eating like a hungry animal ....record time he was finished and he downed the food with some beer, he washed the plate and as he was about to walk out of the kitchen his stomach grumbled and he stopped walking and he held his stomach\*\*\*

Ray: mmmmh

\*\*\*he groaned as he started feeling some cramps...he moved again and the feeling got worse and he groaned again, then he thought maybe is gas so he tried to release some but yeses instead he released more than gas....he quickly tightened his butt cheeks together and he ran to the toilet that is downstairs and the moments he sat down, gwa nyewa blaen (shit happened)\*\*\*

\*\*\* It's been an hour and he was still busy in the toilet...he was covered in sweat and his eyes were red and he was now shirtless and his ass hole was on fire..... Well another hour passed and he was now sitting on the cold tiled floor waiting for his stomach to start acting up again, he was weak and sweating and he felt like shit....anyway it looked like he was done shitting so he got up balancing himself with the wall and he walked out slowly...he went upstairs and when he got inside the bedroom he found Mbali

sitting up on the bed busy on her phone....he ignored her and just went straight to the bathroom and soon Mbali heard the shower running\*\*\*

Mbali: I hope that Epsom salt (magnesium sulfate compound) ikhiphe bonke ubufebe out of his system nx ( I hope that Epsom salt took out all his whore ways out of his system nx)

\*\*\*she said to herself and she continued to concentrate on her phone.... after sometime the shower stopped running and soon she heard Ray groaning loud inside the bathroom and she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmmh bukiphe bonke sthandwa sam....bonke nje ( take it all out my love... all of it)

\*\*\* soon the toilet flushed and the shower ran again\*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry sthandwa sam soon you'll be

all clean and new and free of ivirus yobufebe  
and we will work on our marriage

\*\*\*after some time Ray walked out naked and  
shame he looked flushed, he also looked weak  
and pale....he went to his underwear drawer and  
he took out some clean ones and wore them\*\*\*

Mbali: ummm are you ok

Ray: im fine!

\*\*\*he snapped at her\*\*\*

Mbali: jeez sorry for giving a damn then

\*\*\*she said and got out of bed and she walked  
to the door\*\*\*

Ray: im sorry.... I didn't mean to snap

\*\*\*she turned and looked at him\*\*\*

Ray: I think I ate something bad or it's a  
stomach bug.... I just don't know

\*\*\*He said sitting down on the edge of the bed

looking down\*\*\*

Mbali: ooh what did you eat?

\*\*\*she said sounding worried and he groaned holding his stomach but the pain subsided quickly\*\*\*

Ray: I found a plate with cooked food in the....

\*\*\*he stopped talking and his eyes popped out and he swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mbali: what?

Ray: no...nothing

\*\*\* " no she wouldn't....would she?....well she's nighthawks daughter so.....damn would she?" is what he thought\*\*\*

Mbali: it must have been the mixed vege's I cooked then, maybe I didn't wash them properly or something....i mean I didn't eat them cause you know I hate greens maybe that's why im ok

\*\*\*Ray swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ray: ummm yeah maybe

Mbali: ok I'll be back let me bring you pills that will stop the diarrhea

Ray: yeah

\*\*\*she walked out going downstairs to the medicine cabinet and he quickly reached for his phone and he dialed Ruslan's numbers\*\*\*

Ruslan: ey man can I call you back i....

\*\*\*Ray interrupted him\*\*\*

Ray: she's trying to kill me man

\*\*\*he was whispering\*\*\*

Ruslan: wait what?

Ray: I think she put something in my food and I can't stop shitting man....my ass is on fire...you need to help me man

Ruslan: who and what are you talking about

Ray: Mbali....i think she wants me dead man....i



can't stop shitting and it all started after I ate the food she cooked

Ruslan: ummm where are you?

Ray: im home man you need to come and save me man I can't stop shitting man

\*\*\*Ruslan held his laugh and Ray rushed to the toilet and he continued "shitting" .....Ruslan heard Ray groaning and weird sounds coming from the end of the line and he cleared his throat trying by all means not to laugh\*\*\*

Ruslan: are you ok man

Ray: im dying man....you need to come and save me man im fucken dying

Ruslan: you're not dying so stop acting up....you'll be fine.... don't you think I would see your death coming from miles away

Ray: I don't care im dying and my murderer is in this fucken house with me and worst part is I

sleep next to her every fucken night!

Mbali: babe you ok in there?

\*\*\*Ray jumped a bit\*\*\*

Ray: yea...yeahh I'll be out in a minute

Mbali: ok

Ray: she's even calling me babe....i swear she's going to kill me man

\*\*\* he whispered and Ruslan laughed....he tried to hold himself but he just couldn't and Thandi gave him an annoyed look cause she was still sulking from finding out she's pregnant....Ruslan drove inside the yard and he parked the car and Thandi opened the door and got out going inside and Ruslan stopped laughing when he saw Thandi walking inside looking pissed and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: look man Mbali will never want you dead, maybe she's just teaching you a lesson

remember she's a woman scorned man and those are dangerous.... they are even worse than lucifer himself

\*\*\*he groaned again as he relived himself again\*\*\*

Ray: you're not helping man....i swear if I die it's all on you....all on you!

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and Ruslan busted out with laughter.....anyway Ray finished doing his business and he flushed and washed his hands and he got out....he found her sitting on the edge of the bed with a box of pills and bottled water\*\*\*

Mbali: shame....come and sit my love

\*\*\*he swallowed hard looking at her and he sat down\*\*\*

Mbali: take two they'll quickly stop the diarrhea

\*\*\*he took the box and read the instructions

then he opened the bottled water and he sighed with relief that it was sealed and he drank the pills.....she then helped him get under the covers and she kissed his forehead and took Kalu and she went downstairs.... Ray then took his phone and send Castiel a message and it read;

“I think Mbali is trying to kill me man...I know I cheated and hurt her but to kill me.....look if anything happens to me tell my brothers I love them and I love you and that asshole Ruslan too”

\*\*\*then he tried to sleep while lying on his stomach\*\*\*

-----

AT THANDI'S NEW HOUSE

\*\*\*Castiel rushed in the lounge putting on his jacket and he found Ruslan and Thandi\*\*\*

Castiel: im rushing to Ray's house...his wife is....ummm he's not well man

Ruslan: relax he'll be fine....Mbali is just showing him flames for fucking up

Castiel: wait he called you?

Ruslan: yeah he fucked up so he should take it like a man

Castiel: ooh but damn he sounded...

Ruslan: he'll be fine man but you can go check on him for moral support.... I'll go see him later

Castiel: ooh ok

\*\*\*then he mind-communicated with him\*\*\*

Castiel: " are you two good"

Ruslan: " yeah"

Castiel: " she's pretty pissed off so be careful"

Ruslan: " wait did you read her mind"

\*\*\*Thandi just looked at them as they looked at each other speaking with their eyes and she frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: “yeah but when ya’ll where leaving earlier and dude she was mad-angry”

\*\*\* he mind-communicated laughing then he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Castiel: ok guys later

\*\*\*he walked to the door\*\*\*

Ruslan: don’t eat anything she gives you

\*\*\*Ruslan said and he chuckled and Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: im on a.... “bloody” diet anyway

Ruslan: CASS!

\*\*\*he laughed walking out then Ruslan cleared his throat turning his focus back to Thandi\*\*\*

Thandi: mmm a re utlwe ( talk)

Ruslan: huh?

Thandi: start talking

Ruslan: you know I can also choose to speak in

my mother tongue

\*\*\*she kept quiet and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine... look im sorry for not telling you that you're pregnant...I just wanted you to find out on your own amour that's why I didn't tell you

Thandi: how you knew that im pregnant is what I want to know cause now that I remember you started touching my stomach the same week we started being intimate

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: are you sure you want to know

Thandi: I wouldn't be asking if I wasn't

Ruslan: don't be cheeky with me Thandi

\*\*\*she kept quiet looking at him with a raise eyebrow and Ruslan chuckled and he sat back\*\*\*

Ruslan: once I tell you how I knew I won't be

able to.... “untell you” just so you know

Thandi: untell really?

\*\*\*she said with a bored look on her face and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: damn you're beautiful amour and I can't wait to see our little girl, I pray she comes looking like you in fact Im sure she'll look like you.... I can't wait to hold her in my arms and to spend the rest of my fucked up life protecting her and our boys

Thandi: im waiting for my answer Ruslan

\*\*\*she said ignoring what he just said and he laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok then since you can't let this go....here it goes, I have powers....special powers

\*\*\*she continued giving him the bored look\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine since you're like Thomas from the



bible then look at that couch

\*\*\*he pointed at the couch and Thandi looked at it and Ruslan's eyes changed colour and he moved his index and middle finger from left to right and the couch moved\*\*\*

Thandi: wait...did that just happen

\*\*\* she said frowning and he moved it back to where it was and Thandi jumped back\*\*\*

Thandi: what the!

\*\*\*she said with her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruslan: clam down please

\*\*\*he said looking at her, he could see she was freaked out\*\*\*

Thandi: how did you...how is that possible...I mean did that couch move....i mean what just happened defies the laws of physics...what the hell man!

Ruslan: like I said I have special powers....im a

wizard Thandi

\*\*\*she gave him a shocked look...it was like she was frozen on the spot\*\*\*

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: that's how I knew you were pregnant that early

\*\*\*she kept quiet trying to process everything....it became silent for some time\*\*\*

Ruslan: say something amour

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: say something please

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Thandi: ho...how?

Ruslan: mother was a witch....one of the best ever lived....she was American while my father was a normal African man from Guinea Bissau

\*\*\*she swallowed again\*\*\*

Ruslan: I also have a PhD in Parapsychology, it's a study of supernatural phenomenon.... I wanted to learn and gain more knowledge about the powers I inherited from my mother and I must say I aced it ....arg it's a long ass story and I'll tell you all about it some day

\*\*\*she just looked at him with her jaws dropped...he then got up and went to sit next to her and he kissed her cheek\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you amour and I hope you won't leave me because of this

\*\*\*he then put his hand on her belly\*\*\*

Ruslan: even if you decide to, we both know I won't let you go so.....

\*\*\*she swallowed hard blinking too much and they kept quiet for some time until she spoke\*\*\*

Thandi: a witch huh?

Ruslan: a wizard my love

Thandi: its 6 and 9 same shit

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: well im a wizard who has a PhD amour  
so there's a difference

\*\*\*she swallowed and looked at him as he had  
a cute smile on his face \*\*\*

Thandi: well that PhD doesn't make the "wizard"  
part disappear Ruu

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: im a proud one amour and I wouldn't  
change it for anything.... look I don't fly on  
brooms or loafes of bread or any of those shits  
overnight witches do out there.... I don't have  
what you call tikoloshi's under my bed and any  
other shit those useless witches do out there

\*\*\*he then thought about his zombies and he  
cleared his throat...he couldn't tell her about  
that cause he might end up traumatizing her for

life\*\*\*

Ruslan: I just have immense powers and I use them for good

\*\*\*she sighed with her heart pounding hard\*\*\*

Ruslan: please calm down amour your BP is raising

Thandi: ooh so you can also tell when my BP is raising mmmh?

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: I can hear your heart beating fast

Thandi: you can hear it

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah but only when im this close

\*\*\* a normal person would have to put his ear on her chest to hear her heart beating fast but Ruslan was sitting next to her and not even close close but he could heart it\*\*\*

Thandi: ooh God!

\*\*\*he pulled her closer and kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Thandi: so your “magic” is actually you using your powers

Ruslan: yeah

Thandi: I cant believe this

Ruslan: don't think too much about this amour...im still the same Ruslan who loves you unconditionally

Thandi: does Ray, Heath and Jabu know

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah Ray has known for years and Heath and that crazy brother of yours Jabu knew not long ago and if I was an evil man they wouldn't have let me be even an inch closer to you or the boys

\*\*\*“yes he's right they wouldn't” she thought....

then silence filled the room\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you amour so much

\*\*\*she didn't say anything\*\*\*

Ruslan: and this doesn't change anything amour  
this only means you know more about me more  
than any other woman I've been with knew  
about me or knew me

Thandi: so I should be happy that my fiancé is a  
wizard

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: no you should be happy that now you  
can be able to deal with people that messes  
with you using my spells

\*\*\*he thought she would laugh but she didn't  
instead she got off his hold and she stood up  
and looked at Ruslan with her hands on her  
waist\*\*\*

Thandi: ok...ok enough about you being a

witch/wizard and me being pregnant cause it is what it is and I cant change any of it... but what I can change or better yet what I want to know is, what possessed you to shout at me like that earlier on

\*\*\*she said giving him a “ you better answer me” look\*\*\*

Ruslan: what?

\*\*\*he said confused\*\*\*

Thandi: ke ra sebeta Ruslan sa go omaya nna  
Thandi o se tseya kae ( im saying the gut to shout at me Thandi where did get it)

Ruslan: amour look i...

\*\*\*she interrupted him\*\*\*

Thandi: ema pele abuti o sa ntsena moganong  
assomblief (wait a minute bro don't interrupt me please)...all I want to know from you is, the liver ke ra se..be..te Ruslan to shout at me like



that where did you get it heh.....first of all I didn't know I was pregnant so I want to know gore where did you get the liver, the audacity kera sona se..be..te to talk to me like that

\*\*\* She said with an angry look on her face and Ruslan just looked at her shocked to the core\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Castiel arrived and he asked to see Ray and Mbali went to wake him up and the first thing he said when he saw Ray was " damn you look like shit" ....anyway they now just walked inside his study room and as soon as the door closed Castiel busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Ray: mxm so Ruu told you

Castiel: a little but reading your wife's mind just painted a clear picture of what happened to you

\*\*\*he said laughing\*\*\*

Ray: mxm

Castiel: damn your wife is gangster man

\*\*\*Ray sighed and went to sit down then his eyes landed on his signed basketball nicely placed on his custom made bookshelf and he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

\*\*\*he just went to it and there was a note attached to it ...he took the note and it read;

“ im ready to fix our marriage now unless you want round 2 of the whole shit then im game my love”

\*\*\*he sighed shaking his head and he ended up chuckling then Castiel took the note from him and read it then he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: so are you ready to fix things or you want round 2?

\*\*\*he said laughing\*\*\*

Ray: its not funny man

Castiel: it is cause you met your fucken match man.... its true when they say dynamites comes in small packages....damn she's gangster and I like her in fact im glad you married her

\*\*\*Ray put the letter down and he went to sit down and he clicked his tongue\*\*\*

Ray: you don't know what I've been through so stop praising her barbaric act Castiel

\*\*\*then there was a knock on the door and Mbali walked in with a tray....she walked to them and she put the tray down and it had two plates of food\*\*\*

Mbali: I ordered your favourite food from your favourite restaurant

\*\*\*she said with a smile\*\*\*

Ray: thanks but im not hungry

Mbali: don't be silly baby you need to eat so you

can gain some strength haw cause you look a bit pale sthandwa sam

Castiel: mmmmh he does

\*\*\*Ray gave him a deadly stare\*\*\*

Mbali: see even Cass agrees with me now eat up

Castiel: don't worry I'll make sure he eats

Mbali: thank you

\*\*\*she said smiling at him\*\*\*

Mbali: ok then call me if you need anything else ok

Castiel: we will our wife

\*\*\*she laughed and she kissed Ray's cheek and she walked out and as soon as the door closed Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Ray: im not eating that food....i love her with everything in me but im not ready to die....im not

eating!

-----

NIGERIA

\*\*\*Mj moved a bit with his eyes still closed, he felt something on his lips and he groaned...his hand automatically went to his mouth and it touched something soft then that thing moved to his left eye making noise and that's when he got alarmed...he quickly slapped it off his face and he opened his eyes sitting up straight and what he saw made his heart to skip a beat then continue beating at a fast pace....he moved back looking scared with his eyes moving around and he could see he was in a small room filled with frogs with a small window that brought in some light and the worst thing is he has a phobia of frogs\*\*\*

Mj: no...no...no

\*\*\*he said looking at the frogs jumping around

the small room making noise\*\*\*

Mj: SOMEONE HELP ME...HELP  
MEEE....PLEASEEE OOO

Voice: since you like going around shooting people and causing your mama and papa heart attacks then this will be your prison for the time being to calm the fuck down and think about your life and the frogs will be your cell mates....

\*\*\*the voice spoke from the other side of the door\*\*\*

Mj: please ooo please man I dey learn my lesson abeg let me out

\*\*\*he begged still rooted on his spot with his eyes on the frogs\*\*\*

Voice: next time it will be a real police cell with real cell mates who would tear that ass up....so think about your life ooo! anyway be nice to your cell mates and don't mind them cause they tend to be noisy

\*\*\*the guy chuckled and walked away with Mj shouting and begging him to open the door while crying\*\*\*

Guy: you two are cruel man....he's freaked out in there man he's even crying

Heath: bros water pass garri ( bro things have reached a breaking point) this boy need to learn man...Mj is too spoilt and im afraid one day he'll do something that will ruin his life....he always do shit cause he knows we will bail him out of it but one day he's gonna mess with the wrong people and bros mmmmh...

\*\*\*he said shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: yeah imagine if that girl was a daughter of one of those chiefs that have influence in high places heh....or the chief was some heartless motherfucker and when they walked in on them fucking he put a bullet on his head instead of beating him up

Guy: I don't hear bro ( I hear you bro)

Heath: he maybe a teenager but next year he's going to varsity and varsity is no child's play man....that place can become hell for you if you're not focused...yes it's fine to enjoy yourself and make new friends but that's where you also make enemies man, that's where you shape your life and future or ruin it completely and with Mj thinking he's above anything and everyone.... I'm afraid cause I'm sure he'll make sure every freaken person knows he's our brother

Jabu: mmmh eish..... life in SA is fast and dangerous bro and if you're not careful it will swallow you nja yam....the gangs there are too much and they target young boys to recruit them...then there's drugs and shit and Mj is not focused man, he's too childish and irresponsible and we don't wanna wake up one morning to the police telling us to come and



identify his body

\*\*\*Heath sighed looking worried\*\*\*

Jabu: damn eish Mshikaro skopo saka sa opa  
cause ke boletse paragraph e yotlhe ka se  
ngamla fela yeses ( I have a headache from  
speaking the whole paragraph in English damn)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: yeah you did damn....

Jabu: ke sho lemadlozi a ka a maketse ( im  
sure even my ancestors are shocked)

\*\*\*Heath laughed out loud then after he calmed  
down he explained what Jabu said to the guy  
and he also laughed\*\*\*

INSERT.....17

.

.

.  
\*\*\*\*AT THANDI'S NEW HOUSE\*\*\*\*

Ruslan: umm Amor look im sorry ok

Thandi: I didn't ask if you're sorry or not Ruslan I asked you where did you get the liver...sebeta sa go nshout(a) ( the gut to shout at me)

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he got up and he tried to touch her but she moved away from him with a pissed off look on her face\*\*\*

Ruslan: amor don't do this please

\*\*\*he said with a pained look on his face\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruslan im waiting ok....im pressed so I need to pee but im not going anywhere until you answer my question

\*\*\*Ruslan looked at her shocked\*\*\*

Ruslan: ummm ok look, I shouldn't have amor I don't know what got into me, I just panicked my

love and im sorry

\*\*\*he didn't know what to say that will make her calm down....that's all he could come up with....she looked at him fuming then she clicked her tongue and walked away\*\*\*

Ruslan: amor!

\*\*\*he said going after her....she ignored him and she went inside the bathroom and slammed the door shut and locked it then Ruslan sighed and he rubbed his face\*\*\*

Ruslan: this is gonna be one of the longest 9 months of my life

\*\*\*he stood there and waited for her to come out...after she did her business she flushed and washed her hands then she walked out and found Ruslan standing there with his hands inside his pockets\*\*\*

Thandi: im hungry

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrow looking at her \*\*\*

Thandi: what?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ruslan: umm nothing I just thought you're still angry at me that's all

Thandi: I am but your child is hungry so is there still food here?

\*\*\*he stopped himself from smiling\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah we cooked enough food

\*\*\*she walked passed him going to the kitchen and he smiled widely shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: this child better have mercy on me, im too old for all this

\*\*\*he went after her...then his phone beeped and he checked, it was a message from Castiel...he was telling him that he's going back to KZN but he'll come back in a few days' time....then his phone rang and it was an

international call and he answered it\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah

Voice: dad

Ruslan: Carl

Carl: yeah how you doing...i saw your email

\*\*\*he said with a worried tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: im still kicking and my enemies still tremble at my presence

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Carl: good to know....umm you said the Brethren's are coming and that my long lost uncle is back on the email

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: yeah apparently there's a new leader and he coming after Castiel and I well more like coming after me so I need to make sure that you're safe

\*\*\*Carl sighed\*\*\*

Carl: do they know your current location

Ruslan: they know we are in South Africa so it's a matter of time before they find the exact location we are at now

\*\*\*Carl sighed getting more worried\*\*\*

Carl: ok so what can I do...how can I help?

Ruslan: I want you close to me so I'll know you're safe

\*\*\*Carl sighed\*\*\*

Carl: what about school dad and mom, you know she'll flip if I leave without a valid reason...even if you tell her the slight truth about why im coming to you she'll still flip and cause unnecessary drama

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he rubbed his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: I hear you my boy I just want you to be safe that's all

Carl: I know dad...look I'll be extra careful and during school recess I'll come to you how about that

\*\*\*Ruu sighed again\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok...you still got your potions and you still safe-proofing the house right

Carl: yeah....with the things I see dad I'd be a fool not to do all that

Ruslan: ok

Carl: and the prodigal uncle?

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: we buried the hatchet but damn he's a pain in the ass

\*\*\*Carl laughed\*\*\*

Carl: so when I come to visit I'll meet him right?

Ruslan: yeah

Carl: I can't wait to see a real life Vamp....I've

seen ghosts and demons to last me a life time  
now im gonna meet a Vamp who's my uncle  
damn

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: you know Carl im happy you're my son  
...the way im so proud of you

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: you have no idea

Carl: I wish mom and her family accepts me the  
way I am like you do

Ruslan: I accept you and im proud of you every  
day so fuck them and their crazy ugly asses

\*\*\*Carl laughed\*\*\*

Carl: imagine how they'll act if they knew im a  
wizard and also a son to a wizard....a nephew to  
a Vampire/wizard and a grandson to a witch

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*



Ruslan: I don't even wanna imagine it

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Carl: ok dad let me go, we'll talk later....Jeremy is here

Ruslan: mmmmh remember no rubber no play there's not cure for Aids yet

Carl: DAD!

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: bye

\*\*\*he ended the call still laughing and Thandi came out of the kitchen with her half eaten food on a plate and she stood there looking at him with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Thandi: im angry at you and wena o busy wa tshega tshega....mmmm go monate go ba wena neh ( and you are busy laughing....mmmh it's nice to be you I see)

\*\*\* she said all that with a disgusted look on her

face then she walked passed him going to the lounge and Ruslan chuckled shaking his head and he followed her\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*NIGERIA\*\*\*\*

\*\*\* They finally got Mj out of that room and he was still shaking with his sweatpants wet from his pee...he was sitting on a chair and he was drinking water with his shaky hands holding the bottle...he put the bottle down and he wiped his tears off looking down then Jabu and Heath sat in front of him on their own chairs\*\*\*

Heath: did you grow some balls in there or should we put you back in

\*\*\*He quickly looked at him shaking his head\*\*\*

Mj: no...no bros abeg I've learned my lesson

Heath: have you really?

Mj: ye...yes...yes

\*\*\*he said nodding repeatedly\*\*\*

Heath: good

Jabu: lwena tlogela go act(a) ekare o nyaope boy a tlhoka a fix man ( stop acting like a drug addict wanting a fix)

\*\*\*Heath laughed \*\*\*

Mj: bros not now ok abeg

Jabu: tsek o sa na le molomo le nou? ( you can still talk even now?)

Mj: mxm

Jabu: wetsetsa nna mxm? ( you're doing that mxm to me?)

Heath: mjava vag tuu ( Jabu wait please)

\*\*\*he said chuckling\*\*\*

Mj: im a man now bros so be careful or you'll regret it

Jabu: man ya go e thotela.... fotsek ( a man who

pee on himself... piss off)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: I swear Mj will still talk even when he's dead....you should be quiet, still scared about what you went through but no you're here locking horns with Jabu

Mj: im in a bad mood abeg so no vex me....im sweating and I smell like shit so ya'll better leave me before someone loses his teeth ooo

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone then Jabu and Heath laughed looking at him\*\*\*

Jabu: o serious?

Mj: as a heart attack....i survived a heart attack in there so una no vex me im in a very bad mood

\*\*\*they laughed again\*\*\*

Jabu: mxm bona mo ntwana we all have phobias... ah ah die boy ( this boy)...gape a waya

diheleng wa boya mna so chilexa (you didn't go to hell and came back so relax)

Mj: do you know how scary frogs are bros....besides the scary noises they make they are also scary as f...

Jabu: sampotsa ka digwagwa man, a di tshose dilo tseo...mara wa jaja na gore rotwe e tshosa byang mmm? (don't tell me about frogs man, those things are not scary...do you know how scary a rat is?)

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Mj: what's that

\*\*\*he asked confused\*\*\*

Heath: a big rat

Mj: mxm we eat giant rats as a delicacy here in Nigeria so abeg don't compare yourself with me

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: hei wena e seng a ko Alex aka Alexandra

....a le a ja lesega a le fetse le marapo a teng kao chaela ( hey not at that place called Alex aka Alexandra.... those rats eat a baby along with that baby's bones im telling you)

\*\*\*Heath laughed out loud\*\*\*

Jabu: heh I remember een dag maOulady a tswa stene a yo tlhoma mtlhatlhane ko Alex daar and a vaiya le nna (one day my mother went to look for her own place at a place called Alex, she build a shack there and she left with me)

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: ....the following morning ke re ka tsoga ko shapa six-nine.... heh poi e rile ke bula matlho ka kereya rotwe next to my face on top of my pillow ntwana e gototse matlho ( I wanted to wake up and go take a piss....heh boy when I opened my eyes I found a huge rat next to my face on top of my pillow boy staring at me)

\*\*\*Heath and Mj laughed out loud\*\*\*

Jabu: ntwana ka goella e kare mei Oulady o bodile...I rile oulady a tsena a tlhaga ko ntle anker a ke nametse pala that was in the middle of the room holding the roofing gore e sa wela...ke le ko dimo ntwana ke goela blaen (boy I screamed as if my mother was dead.....and when my mother walked in coming from outside she found me up on the roof holding on tight to a pole that was in the middle of the room holding the roof so it doesn't cave in.....i was up there screaming my lungs out)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: nako eo moroto le lephyega di reng mo ngwaneng ( I even peed and shit myself)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh their lungs out\*\*\*

Jabu: bona dai deng ne e le kana ( it was this big)

\*\*\*he said showing them its "supposed" size\*\*\*

Jabu: im sure ke utlwile ebile rotwe ela e bolela  
( im sure I even heard that rat talk)

Heath&Mj: haaah

\*\*\* They said at the same time indicating that  
he was lying and Jabu laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: ka le chaela man....im sure e rile " ro re o  
mang byanong wena"( im telling ya'll....im sure it  
said " who are we going to say you are " )

\*\*\*they laughed out loud with Mj holding his  
stomach\*\*\*

Jabu: ntwana same day oulady ampusetsa ko  
magriza and I never went back there again until  
ouladay a movela to another place (boy same  
day my mother took me back to my granny's  
house and I never went back there again until  
my mother moved to another place)

\*\*\*they continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: and that's when my phobia ya bo



rotwe( of rats) started

Mj: how old were you

\*\*\*he said still laughing\*\*\*

Jabu: 13.....then ka ya danyaneng and ka kereya skoroponyana sa ko laundry ka mo gare ga danyane wa bona (then I went to jail and I found some job to keep me busy in there)

\*\*\*then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Jabu: heh.....one day ke le busy ka daar, ka tlosa a pile of dirty sheets and clothes mo gatshe ke re ko lokela ka mo mocheneng then booom ka kereya di rotwe tsei two di jana missionary style baba(one day when I was busy in there, I removed a pile of dirty sheets and clothes on the floor as I wanted to put them inside the washing machine then booom I found two rats fucking missionary style)

\*\*\*Heath and Mj busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Jabu: mfowethu gore ke blome daar and ke di bogele di jana while ke teskomora, ka ja fatshe.....ke tswile ka daar ka 120 ke tshela 1 blaen..... ke bile ka stopa ke vader mo passaging( my brother instead of standing there and watch them fuck each other while I masturbate, I ran.....i ran like my life depended on it....i only stopped when a warden stopped me on the passage) ..... worse part I didn't even know where I was running to

\*\*\*\*Mj was now on the floor laughing his ass out\*\*\*

Jabu: and erile ge ke fetsa go botsa dai bari gore why ke tsogile a laga blaen (and after telling that fool why I was shaking like that he laughed at me) and right there and then I told myself that I have to fight off that stupid phobia cause it made me look like a wimp so I went back there and even though the rats where gone I told myself that I'll never fear borotwe

(rats)...haaah nou rotwe nyana a fete mopelaka ke e leragela kwa e be ke e roge ka mmayona wa sfebe le papa yona wa go rota ka pele ( now if a rat passes next to me I'll kick it away and also swear at it about its mother who's a bitch and its father who nut quickly)

Heath: whooah Jabu...whoah man....my stomach hurts man

\*\*\*he said laughing while holding his stomach...as for Mj he couldn't even speak, tears were just running down his face as he laughed his ass off\*\*\*

Jabu: so wa bona ntwana (so you see boy) we did that for your own good

\*\*\*heath and Mj just continued to laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: ai man fetsang go laga re bolele dilo tse serious ( finish laughing so we can talk some serious stuff)

\*\*\*they laughed until they stopped and Jabu

gave them some time to calm down as he sat there with a smile on his face\*\*\*

Heath: wa bona wena Jabu you need to have your own comedy show....you need to go join Peter Mashata, Mashabela, Sales man and others cause wa hlanya straight ( you are crazy straight)

Jabu: hai nka se loke mfowethu...ga pe nna ke hlanya nako eo eseng every day ( hai I won't survive it man cause I don't always act crazy)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Heath: yeah right

Jabu: kao chaela ( im telling you)

Mj: damn I should've recorded you

\*\*\*Anyway they talked to Mj and made him understand that he needs to grow up and set set a good example for his nieces and nephews cause already Mpendulo and Sbu look up to

him....they apologized for traumatizing him like that and they promised him that they'll make it up to him then they hugged it out\*\*\*

Mj: let's go I need a bath filled with warm water mixed with bleach

\*\*\*they laughed going to the car\*\*\*

Jabu: o reng moroto wa sbabo mongwaneng

\*\*\*they laughed with Mj busy chasing

Jabu...then Heath smiled being thankful that Mj understood why they did what they did to him....he admits that it was extreme but they needed to really scare him for him to come down to earth....he was moving to South Africa in a few months' time so he needs him to be focused cause their enemies might use him to get to them and he can't stomach the thought of anything bad happening to him or any of his family members all because of his childish behavior....he just wanted to toughen him a

bit\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\* MENZI'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

Menzi: are you sure you're ok

\*\*\*He asked Kazi who seemed lost in thoughts, they were having breakfast the following morning...she was thinking about what Castiel said to her, She wanted to think that maybe he was kidding but the seriousness of his voice made her think that he might be serious\*\*\*

Kazi: yeah it's just one of those days you know

\*\*\*Menzi sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: im here for you if you want to talk ok

\*\*\*She nodded smiling a bit\*\*\*

Menzi: so what time are you knocking off?

Kazi: angazi ( I don't know) maybe around six

Menzi: uyahlanya! ( you're mad!)

\*\*\*She laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: I knew you'd say that mxm

\*\*\*He smiled looking at her\*\*\*

Kazi: what?

Menzi: nex its just I can't believe you're mine

\*\*\*she looked at him with a raised eyebrow\*\*\*

Kazi: I didn't know I was yours mina

\*\*\*He chuckled picking his phone that indicated that he just received a message\*\*\*

Menzi: you can act clueless all you like sthandwa sam but deep down you know ukuthi ungowami ( that you're mine)

\*\*\*she laughed and he opened the message and read it and immediately the smile that was on his face vanished slowly\*\*\*

Kazi: is everything ok?

\*\*\*he cleared his throat getting up\*\*\*

Menzi: yeah its work.....I need to make a quick call I'll be right back ok

\*\*\*She nodded and he went over to her and kissed her forehead and he walked away dialing the numbers that send that message to him and it send him straight to voice mail and he clicked his tongue.....he then called his IT boy\*\*\*

Guy: boss

Menzi: Fingers I just received a message on my phone a minute or so ago and I want you to trace the numbers for me asap

Fingers: sure bozza

\*\*\*then he ended the call and he went back to Kazi\*\*\*

Kazi: you ok

Menzi: yeah

\*\*\*he kissed her cheek and sat down and he continued to eat his breakfast with a worried



look on his face then his phone rang after some time and it was Fingers\*\*\*

Menzi: talk to me

Fingers: the numbers are from a burner phone boss so I can't trace them

Menzi: damn it!

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: its ok shap

\*\*\*he ended the call and when he looked up he found Kazi looking at him\*\*\*

Menzi: it's a work thing sthandwa sam but I'll sort it out don't worry

\*\*\*She sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: ok...I just hope it's nothing bad cause I can't handle a moody Menzi

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: aow since when because the last time I

checked you could handle a moody me

Kazi: I was kidnapped Mapholoba so im very fragile

\*\*\*Menzi smiled wide and he leaned forward\*\*\*

Menzi: say my clan name again

\*\*\*She blushed\*\*\*

Kazi: hai suka...lets finish up so we can go

Menzi: ngiyakcela sthandwa sam....please

\*\*\*she giggled\*\*\*

Kazi: Mapholoba...happy now

\*\*\*He chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: more than you'll ever know and from now on call me that

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: you should stop calling me Sthandwa sakho cause usaseskhathini sokulila man

Menzi ( you should stop calling me your love

cause you're still in a mourning period)

\*\*\*he gave her a bored look\*\*\*

Menzi: ungazong'bora Ntandokazi.... ekseni kangaka pho

\*\*\*He said with a woman's voice and she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: anyway let's go tuu

Menzi: ujugeleni ( why are you in a hurry)

Kazi: dude I haven't been in my salon for quite a while now

\*\*\*She said standing up\*\*\*

Menzi: ubani udude Ntandokazi? ( who are you calling a dude Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*she laughed clearing the table and he got up and held her in place as she laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: ubani udude ( who are you calling a dude)

Kazi: no one now let me go

\*\*\*He then tickled her smiling and she laughed out loud trying to get off his hold\*\*\*

Kazi: MENZI...MENZI MAN STO...STOPPP

Menzi: ubani udude? ( who are you calling a dude)

\*\*\*he said still smiling as he tickled her\*\*\*

Kazi: im sorry...you're not a dude...you're not... please stoppp....i'll pee on myself man Menzi stoppp

\*\*\*He stopped and she hit him on his chest laughing and he held her hands and looked at her\*\*\*

Menzi: call me dude again and I'll tickle you until you pee on yourself ok

\*\*She tried to put up a serious face but she failed\*\*\*

Kazi: fine mxm

\*\*\*she tried to wiggle out of his hold but he kept

her in place and he cupped her face with his right hand and he kissed her lips slowly, she kissed him back and after some time they pulled out from the kiss and he looked into her eyes and she looked down shyly\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you Ntandokazi, i may not be a perfect man but ngiyakthanda ( I love you)

\*\*\*she sighed and looked at him\*\*\*

Menzi: just give us a chance and I'll make you the happiest woman on earth...Please sthandwa sam

Kazi: you're still in mourning Menzi....can we talk about this after your mourning period....please

Menzi: mourning period yani Ntandokazi....i was cleansed hao

Kazi: married people stay about a year mourning for their spouses Menzi

Menzi: uyahlanya ( you are crazy).... a year  
yani....you want my dick to shrink neh

Kazi: ah ah

\*\*\*She said shocked\*\*\*

Menzi: hey angeke ngizilele omunye umfazi  
mina ( I won't mourn for another woman) while I  
sleep next to the one that holds my heart never!

Kazi: but it's for your own good Mapholoba and  
she was your wife not just any woman

Menzi: look you can call me Mapholoba all you  
want kodwa I was cleansed and im clean so  
mina nawe siyajola ksuka manje ( you and I are  
dating from now on)

\*\*\*She just looked at him shocked and he  
perked her lips and helped her clear the table\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*AT KAZI'S SALON\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*she walked in and she immediately stopped,

she wanted to turn back cause the place she just walked in looked nothing like hers....she frowned with her heart beating fast then she spotted her employees busy doing peoples hair and nails and she just stood there with her jaws hanging\*\*\*

Lady: OMG BOSS LADY!

\*\*\*one of her employees said rushing to her and she hugged her\*\*\*

Lady: OMG I can't believe you're here....when we heard about your kidnapping we were devastated

\*\*\*they all rushed to her and hugged her\*\*\*

Janet: don't worry I'll explain the revamp

\*\*\*the lady that manages her business when she's not around said seeing that Kazi was shocked by the complete revamp of her salon\*\*\*

Kazi: ok..ok...ok we will catch up later, now back to work please

\*\*\*she said coming back from her shock and they all went back to their customers with smiles on their faces not believing that she was actually here alive.....then Kazi went to her office with Janet following her and as soon as the door to her office opened she froze\*\*\*

Janet: you like it boss lady?

\*\*\*Kazi looked around and walked in slowly then she turned and looked at Janet\*\*\*

Kazi: who... I mean I was still saving up for a revamp so who did this... I mean who paid for all this

Janet: Mr Ngcobo did when you were still missing

\*\*\*she went and sat down on her new leather office chair and she exhaled loudly not believing all this\*\*\*



Kazi: wow ummm and he never said anything since I came back

Janet: im sure he wanted to surprise you

\*\*\*she said smiling and Kazi sighed feeling emotional cause the place looked beautiful, it looked like one of those expensive salons\*\*\*

Kazi: I can't believe he did this

\*\*\*She said with a low tone\*\*\*

Janet: you better hold on to him boss lady, he's a keeper....anyway let me give you some time to regroup and I'll come back and fill you in on everything

Kazi: ummm yeah...thanks

Janet: umm before I go can I get you anything....Coffee, juice or tea

Kazi: umm no thanks maybe later

Janet: ok and just so you know we even have a small kitchen which have a coffee machine,

microwave and a new fridge

\*\*\*she giggled and walked out and Kazi sighed then she took her phone and dialed Menzi with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Menzi: you like it

\*\*\* she sniffed wiping her falling tears\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam...Ntandokazi?

Kazi: ye..yes I like it in fact I love it...Thank you Mapholoba

\*\*\*he breathed out\*\*\*

Menzi: im glad you do

Kazi: but you do know you didn't have to right

Menzi: I know but I wanted to

Kazi: well thank you.....so since I didn't ask you to go bankrupt because of me, do I have to pay you back

Menzi: ungazongihlanyela Ntandokazi ( don't

piss me off Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*She laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: the only thing you can do for me is agree to being mine and mine alone qa

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Kazi: mmmmh qeda ngesikhathi sakho sokulila ( finish with your mourning period) then I'll thank you properly...how's that?

Menzi: you serious?

Kazi: as a heart attack

\*\*\*Menzi laughed sounding excited\*\*\*

Menzi: ok but just so you know I was cleansed....anyway let me get back to work we will finish up with this conversation later at home

Kazi: ok

Menzi: ngiyakthanda uyezwa ( I love you)

\*\*\*she bit her lower lip\*\*\*

Kazi: yeah ngiyezwa ( I hear you)

\*\*\*he laughed and ended the call then she breathed out and looked up smiling then she froze...Castiel was standing by the closed door with a pissed off look on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: how...how did you get in...I ....i didn't hear the door op...

Castiel: I snuck in

\*\*\*He said dismissing her then he locked the door and walked to her as she stood up feeling uneasy....in fact she was scared\*\*\*

Castiel: I won't hurt you so relax

\*\*\*he sat on the edge of the table facing her\*\*\*

Castiel: sit!

\*\*\*she slowly sat down and he looked at her with a serious look on her face\*\*\*

Kazi: what...what are you doing here?

Castiel: I see you thought I was joking when I told you not to let that boy touch you

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard and she breathed out and she gained the courage and she pulled a straight face\*\*\*

Kazi: first of all im not yours Castiel or whatever your name is and secondly you won't tell me what to do or who to date or let alone tell me that I shouldn't let another man touch me where else you're nothing to me

\*\*\*he raised an eyebrow looking at her\*\*\*

Castiel: im nothing to you huh?

\*\*\*she just looked at him\*\*\*

Castiel: so you don't find me attractive?....or you don't wish to taste how my lips tastes like? or you don't wish to feel my strong arms around your sexy body?

\*\*\*He said as he remembered how she thought of him that time they met while she was shopping and she swallowed hard with her eyes slightly popped out and her jaws hanging a bit cause now she was thinking of his cologne, how good it smells and how good looking he is even though she was a bit scared of him\*\*\*

Castiel: you don't want me Charlotte?

\*\*\*she blinked fast as she tried to compose herself also surprised that he knew her other name\*\*\*

Castiel: answer me

Kazi: no I...i don't

Castile: is it?

\*\*\*he said as he raised his eyebrow at her in a cute way with a slight smirk on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: yes now can you leave

\*\*\*he chuckled and he moved and leaned over

to her face.....their faces were inches away from each other\*\*\*

Kazi: what...what are you doing?

\*\*\*she asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Castiel: do you wanna know why I say you're mine Charlotte.....

\*\*\*she swallowed hard looking at him\*\*\*

Castiel: it's because I can make you wet without even touching you

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: can...can you just leave Castiel...please

Castiel: your mind says one thing and your mouth is saying another thing Charlotte.....so which one is it...to fuck you here and now or to leave?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard wondering how he knew what she was thinking.... she frowned looking at him with her mind now all over the place....”

HOW THE FUCK DID HE KNOW?" is what she thought\*\*\*

Castiel: I know cause im one of the blessed ones in this world now im waiting for my answer Charlotte

\*\*\*he said smirking and he leaned closer and stared into her eyes and she stared back too trying to keep his gaze but she failed and she looked away with her heart pounding hard\*\*\*

Castiel: you know I can fuck you hard now and you'll cum all over this table shaking like a leave

\*\*\*her breath hinged as she became wet instantly and he got closer to a point that their noses nearly touched\*\*\*

Castiel: or I can eat your pussy up so hard that you end up coming all over my face hard with your body shaking like a leave

\*\*\*she swallowed hard closing her thighs tight as she felt her lace thong getting wetter by the



second\*\*\*

Castiel: no open them, why are you closing them huh?

\*\*\*her chest was now moving up and down as she was breathing hard\*\*\*

Castiel: I said open them Charlotte

\*\*\*she swallowed hard again and she opened her thighs slowly\*\*\*

Castiel: so which one is it Charlotte...what do you want me to do?

\*\*\*she just sat there swallowing hard repeatedly as if something was stuck on her throat\*\*\*

Castiel: im already hard as fuck, all I need to do is put you on top of this table with your legs wide open and I'll just pull your underwear aside or I'll just rip it off and slide in my dick inside your juicy wet pussy and let your pussy walls

hug my gigantic cock as I stand there not moving an inch letting you get used to it, and when I decide to finally move baby you'll call all your clan names word by word until an electrifying orgasm wash over your entire body and you'll scream out loud like a person who's seeing a ghost....and from there on I'll fuck your brains out until you pass out

\*\*\*she gasped as she released her juices on her underwear and her thighs shook as her bottom lip trembled\*\*\*

Castiel: you'll pass out and wake up and you'll still find me fucking you good

Kazi: sto...stop....

\*\*\*he smirked as he watched her catching her breath and he leaned back and he stood up straight and the visible bulge on his jeans was evident enough that he was packing pretty well down there\*\*\*

Castiel: mmmmh and you're wearing a skirt nc  
nc nc

\*\*\*he said moving to the other side of the table  
and he fixed his bulge and he looked at Kazi  
who was trying to compose herself now feeling  
extremely embarrassed\*\*\*

Castiel: now you see why I say you're mine  
Charlotte.....i can make you cum without  
touching you so imagine what I can do as I held  
you in place fucking you good with deep strokes  
as I go in and out of you nice and slow

Kazi: Castiel ple..please don...jeez stop talking  
\*\*\*he chuckled and he went to the door and he  
stopped and turned and he had a serious look  
on his face\*\*\*

Castiel: this is your first strike Charlotte....

\*\*\*He then unlocked and opened the door\*\*\*

Castiel: don't forget to clean yourself up.

\*\*\*he got out closing the door behind him\*\*\*

Kazi: Jesus Christ!

\*\*\*she said looking between her legs with her heart still pounding hard against her chest\*\*\*

INSERT.....18

.

.

.

\*\*\*NARRATED\*\*\*

\*\*\*After Kazi cleaned herself up she called Janet in and Janet briefed her on everything and went back to work after that...right then her phone rang it was her cousin Phumi and she answered\*\*\*

Kazi: babe hey

Phumi: hey hey...how's you bathong

Kazi: ngiright wena ( im alright and you)

Phumi: im always super you know that, so are you ready to host me mogirl

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: ofcourse... yho I miss you

Phumi: I miss you too babe so im gonna take the morning bus so I'll arrive there go sa le early neh

Kazi: so o serious you'll never catch a flight

Phumi: never... I don't want it to explode with me inside yho I cant shem....i mean don't even have kids babe so I need to leave a little

Phumiyana wa maminanyana( a little Phumi with some snorts on her face) before I die

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: gosh Phumelele mara

Phumi: yho hai leave me tuu....anyway let me go back to work we will talk later ok

Kazi: ok shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and Kazi laughed shaking her head....well she wanted to buy a plane ticket for her but she blatantly refused cause she said she doesn't want it to explode in the sky with her inside\*\*\*

LATER IN THE EVENING AT MENZI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*they were having supper and Kazi's mind was far, she was playing with her food around the plate and Menzi could see something was bothering her\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam

Kazi: mmmmh

Menzi: what's wrong?

Kazi: mmmmh

Menzi: KAZI!

\*\*\*he said raising his voice and she snapped out of it\*\*\*

Kazi: ye...yes?

Menzi: where's your mind at?

\*\*\*he asked with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: umm.... its here

Menzi: don't make a fool Ntandokazi I can see something serious is occupying your mind....what's wrong?

Kazi: ummm its nothing Mapholoba...I just can't stop thinking about my renovated salon

\*\*\*she lied, she was thinking about what Castiel did to her earlier on, she couldn't believe that actually happened to her and now she wondered how he is in bed if he can make her cum without touching her.... Anyway Menzi gave her an intense look and she looked down feeling guilty\*\*\*

Kazi: ummm also that.... that you're good for me....I was asking myself why im giving you such a tough time cause i know I still love you and i...I want to be with you so I was just asking

myself questions nje

\*\*\*She thought of a good enough lie quickly\*\*\*

Menzi: what questions?

\*\*\* "ooh God" she thought\*\*\*

Kazi: that do I want to wait or to just go with the flow you know..... I mean life is too short and tonight might be my last or your last and I don't want any regrets Menzi...eish I don't know if I make sense

Menzi: what regrets Ntandokazi?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: of giving you a chance...of giving us a chance

\*\*\*Menzi breathed out and he looked at her\*\*\*

Menzi: ufuna ukthini Ntandokazi ( what are you trying to say Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*



Kazi: that no more waiting...no more playing hard to get....i love you Menzi and I want to...to be with you

\*\*\*Menzi face changed and you could see he was getting emotional\*\*\*

Menzi: you mean that Ntandokazi?

Kazi: yeah

\*\*\*she said nodding and he got up and went to her and pulled her up.....he just cupped her face looking into her eyes with nothing but love\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Kazi: I love you too Menzi

\*\*\*he leaned in and they kissed passionately....after some time they pulled out of the kiss and he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Menzi: ngiyakthanda yezwa ( I love you you hear me)

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: nami ngiyakthanda yezwa( I love you too  
you hear me)

\*\*\*they both laughed then she bit her lower  
lip\*\*\*

Kazi: im ready

\*\*\*he raised an eyebrow\*\*\*

Menzi: ready?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: please ....ummm....make love to me  
Mapholoba

\*\*\*Menzi looked at her with his eyes popped out  
then he composed himself and he breathed  
out\*\*\*

Menzi: are you sure?

\*\*\*she nodded biting her lower lip and he licked  
his lips and he leaned in and they kissed

again.....soon the kiss got heated and Menzi grabbed her butt cheeks and he lifted her up and she wrapped her legs around his waist with her hands around his neck and he went to the bedroom with her as they kissed hungrily\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*He entered her slowly and stopped moving as he clenched his jaws while Kazi moaned digging her nails into his flesh on his back\*\*\*

Menzi: fuck I missed you Ntandokazi....i fucken missed you

\*\*\*he bend down and they kissed with him moving slowly missionary style while she wrapped her legs around his waist\*\*\*

Kazi: mmmmh

\*\*\*she moaned as they kissed then her mind went to Castiel and what he did to her earlier but he was brought back to her senses when he increased his pace and that made her to moan

louder\*\*\*

Kazi: fuck Ca....Menzi fuck!

\*\*\*she said as she felt nothing but pure pleasure as he went deeper...as for Menzi he increased his pace thrusting in and out of her  
\*\*\*

Menzi: look at me Ntandokazi

\*\*\*she did moaning while biting her lower lip\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you yezwa

\*\*\*she nodded and he went deeper and she groaned\*\*\*

Kazi: fuck baby!

\*\*\*he smirked and dropped on top of her and he held her with his head buried on her neck\*\*\*

Menzi: drop your legs baby

\*\*\*she did and she opened them wider and he started fucking her going faster and she lost her

mind..... he went in and out of her as he groaned, and his sexy groans drove her insane\*\*\*

Kazi: ooh yes Mapholoba...yes baby fuck me harder baby!

\*\*\*she said and he lost his mind....his hands immediately went to her ass and he grabbed it tight pulling her lower body up a bit and he went deeper and faster and that's when an unexpected orgasm hit her and she screamed and yep Mapholoba fucked her through it.....well after a few thrusts he went in and out of her faster groaning loud and she knew he was near so she held his tight and he went faster and faster then he slammed into her and he groaned loud pushing his dick deeper and deeper then he cursed and stayed on that position for some time trying to catch his breath then he pulled himself up and he slid out and he watched as his juices dripped from her

nana on to the bed and her hand went to her pussy and she smeared them all over her pussy moaning and he bit his lower lips then he bend and perked her lips....he got out of bed and he went to the bathroom and he came back with a wet towel and he cleaned her, he then got out of bed again and he pulled her to the edge of the bed where he stood\*\*\*

Kazi: shit baby.....

\*\*\*She said with a low tone\*\*\*

Menzi: im not yet done with you sthandwa sam....

\*\*\*he said as he stood between her legs with his semi hard dick and he opened them wide and he positioned himself\*\*\*

Menzi: ngiyakthanda yezwa ( I love you)

\*\*\*she nodded and he slid in and he groaned while she moaned\*\*\*

Menzi: damn I swear your pussy will be my downfall sthandwa sam

\*\*\*he started moving and she continued to moan loud while holding on the bedcovers as he fucked her.....well he fucked her good until a violent orgasm hit her and he stopped moving and he pulled out then turned her around with her body still shaking from the orgasm and he slid in from the back with his left hand holding her natural hair and his right hand holding her waist tight and he continued fucking her deep and fast as she held on to the bedcovers screaming her lungs out cause nigga was tearing her nana apart but the pleasure she was also feeling was just out of this world....

Well the second round lasted longer and by the time he was done with her she couldn't feel her pussy and she was even struggling to keep her eyes open but Menzi wasn't done cause he was still hard, so after cleaning her up he pushed her

to the middle of the bed and turned her on lay on her back and he slid in her missionary style again and fucked her brains out\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*In the early hours of the morning she woke up to Menzi sliding in her and she flinched cause she was sore down there..... he then started thrusting in and out of her and she moaned out loud as soon as the pain disappeared, he then he pulled her legs up putting them on his shoulders and he started moving in and out of her slowly\*\*\*

Kazi: Gosh Menzi....

Menzi: yes baby

\*\*\*he said as he increased his pace a bit and she moaned louder holding tight to his arms\*\*\*

Menzi: ahhh.... ahhh.... ahhh...damn baby!

\*\*\*that's what he said with his bold voice as he



enjoyed her wet nana.... he went faster hitting the right spot and an unexpected orgasm hit her and she screamed shaking and he didn't stop, he went harder chasing his own happy ending and after a few thrusts he slammed into her pushing himself deeper and he groaned from deep down his throat and he cursed\*\*\*

Menzi: FUCK....

\*\*\*he dropped her legs and bends down and perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: fuck that was good sthandwa sam

\*\*\*she smiled at him lazily and she just closed her eyes and he pulled out and he went between her legs and kissed her pussy and took the towel and wiped both of them.....he then laid next to her and pulled her closer and she rested her head on his hard chest and they both fell asleep again....

Now they both just finished getting ready for

work, but before they went to shower Kazi woke up to Menzi having her in a spooning position and after they were done they went to shower and had another round in there....as for Kazi her nana was still numb and she hoped that she'll be able to walk properly and not like someone who still has an invisible dick between her legs\*\*\*

Menzi: you sure you'll be able to concentrate today at work

\*\*\*He said teasing her and she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: leave me tuu

\*\*\*he chuckled looking happy....it was like a huge weight was lifted off his shoulders, he felt light and happy....the way he's happy you wouldn't even miss the smile that is plastered on his face....he was like a small child who was just given candy, it was just cute to watch him like that\*\*\*

Kazi: so you gonna smile like that the whole day?

\*\*\*he pulled her closer and perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: im a happy man sthandwa sam and today my employees are gonna see that

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: what did my pussy do to you

Mapholoba....i mean I've never seen you this happy

\*\*\*he sighed and he put his forehead on hers and they stayed like that for some time\*\*\*

Menzi: you know sthandwa sam when you were abducted...

\*\*\*he sighed and pulled his head back and he looked into her eyes\*\*\*

Menzi: I almost lost my mind....i didn't know what to do with myself....i swear beksele kancane nje ukuthi ngihlanye ngamapela ( it was just a matter of time before I lost my mind

for real)

\*\*\*he sighed and she wrapped her arms around his waist looking up at him\*\*\*

Menzi: and when I saw you lying in that hospital bed after they left you outside the police station, I vowed that I'll live the rest of my life making you happy.....i vowed that I'll wife you and grow old with you and our kids

\*\*\*Kazi became emotional thinking about Castiel and what he did to her....she felt guilty like she cheated on Menzi\*\*\*

Kazi: I love you Mapholoba

\*\*\*he perked her lips\*\*\*

Menzi: I love you too sthandwa sam....so when will Phumi arrive this side

Kazi: I don't know but she said she will communicate with me so if she doesn't get me on my phone she's call you ok

Menzi: ok let's go eat I have a meeting out of town

\*\*\*then Kazi's phone beeped indicating that a message came through and she opened and read it and the message says:

"I see you thought I was joking when I said don't let that boy touch what's mine and now you let him fuck you nc nc nc "

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Menzi: you ok?

Kazi: arg yah....lets go babe

\*\*\*they walked out\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali: but dad I miss her, she can't just abandon me like this

\*\*\*She said sulking \*\*\*

Pops: ma would never abandon you princess,  
right now she's busy touring the world with her  
husband before their ancestors remember them  
haw

\*\*\* he lied and she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: I know im being silly and childish about  
this but I just miss her so much daddy

Pops: I know baby I miss her too

\*\*\*she was talking to her father on the  
phone....she was sulking cause she couldn't get  
hold of her grandmother and Pops lied to her by  
saying Ma and baba are traveling the world but  
in actually fact she's undergoing chemotherapy  
overseas, she didn't want her grandchildren  
know about it cause she knew they'll leave their  
families and businesses to come and be with  
her but more especially stress about her and  
she doesn't want that, her son and husband  
knowing was enough for her to keep fighting

hard\*\*\*

Pops: tell you what I'll call baba and tell him to tell ma to call you how's that

Mbali: but why can't I call him myself

Pops: tjeeerrr who's child are you Princess

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: yours haw

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: I miss you daddy

Pops: I miss you too my princess....so how's the little one treating you

Mbali: he's behaving if you know what I mean

\*\*\*she said and chuckled\*\*\*

Pops: you know im not happy with the fact that you know about his demon and Ray's demon too

Mbali: well I know about your beast so you

happy with me knowing that daddy

Pops: don't get smart with me young lady

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: look now I know that the world is not as black and white as everyone thinks it is dad and that every family has their own secrets and im glad I know about my family secrets cause they opened my eyes and now I can see clearly and im not that naïve little girl anymore

\*\*\*Pops sighed \*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry daddy even if I grow old with grey hair I'll always be your little girl....i'll always sulk to you and cry to you so you haven't lost me and you'll never lose me ok

Pops: I love you baby

\*\*\*he said with an emotional voice\*\*\*

Mbali: I love you too daddy....

\*\*\*then she heard someone speaking with a



foreign language\*\*\*

Pops: I have to go baby I'll let baba know ok

Mbali: ok dad

\*\*\*they ended the call and she sighed\*\*\*

Ray: are you really as grown as you claim you are

\*\*\*she turned and found him standing behind her\*\*\*

Mbali: yep

Ray: really....so what you did to me and my things is you acting like a grown up?

Mbali: nope that was me acting like a scorned angry mad black woman

\*\*\*he looked at her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Mbali: and that wasn't me disrespecting you, nooo because I know one more hard slap from you will land me in hospital this time and if

Saint “the demon” try to fight for me La Parca will send him to hell along with my son’s soul since they are attached to one another so I wasn’t trying to disrespect you, I was just lashing out

\*\*\*He just looked at her...there was something different about her, that innocent and childish vibe she used to give was gone\*\*\*

Ray: lashing out you say?

\*\*\*she nodded and Ray came around and he sat down not far from her\*\*\*

Ray: so every time I fuck up you’ll....”lash out”

Mbali: nope but every time you cheat on me I’ll...”lash out” and be rest assured that I’ll leave no stone unturned my love

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: is that so?

Mbali: yep

Ray: mmmm

Mbali: so....do you still love me or your love for me died with your Maserati and expensive whiskey

\*\*\*he didn't say anything he just looked at her sitting back\*\*\*

Mbali: ohk

\*\*\*she got up feeling disappointed and hurt and she started walking away but he stopped her\*\*\*

Ray: come here

\*\*\*she stopped, swallowed and turned to look at him\*\*\*

Ray: come here jorr!

\*\*\*she sighed and walked to him and he pulled her to sit on his lap facing him then he squeezed her ass\*\*\*

Ray: you should know I'll never stop loving you my flower

\*\*\*she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: you haven't called me your flower in a while now

Ray: and whose fault is it

Mbali: yours haw

Ray: my fault?...mxm you dey mad ( you're crazy)

\*\*\*she laughed and he wrapped his arm around her pulling her closer and he kissed her lips....she smiled kissing him back and he chuckled and stopped kissing her\*\*\*

Ray: couldn't you wait until we done kissing before you can grin like that

\*\*\*she giggled shaking her head\*\*\*

Mbali: no...I haven't felt your lips on mine in a while now so the kiss was a bit ticklish

\*\*\*Ray laughed\*\*\*

Ray: and she says she's a grown ass woman

now

Mbali: mxm

\*\*\*she said pushing him but he tightened the grip around her\*\*\*

Ray: im sorry I hurt you my flower....im sorry I made you cry

\*\*\*she sighed and rested her head between his neck and shoulder\*\*\*

Mbali: and im sorry I disrespected you but im not sorry for "lashing out " though

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: do you know how much that Maserati and whiskey cost my flower

Mbali: im sure you know how priceless my heart is angithi (right) and you broke it

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: so there's nothing that you own that will

amount to you comparing that thing or things to  
my broken heart

**\*\*he didn't say anything\*\***

Mbali: but im over all that so I need you to do  
me a favour for me to be really really really over  
all that

**\*\*she said raising her head to look at him\*\***

Ray: im listening?

Mbali: I need you to set up a meeting with that  
bitch called Selinah or Celine, whatever her  
name is

**\*\*his eyes popped out\*\***

Ray: what?

Mbali: mmmmh I need to have a small talk with  
her woman to woman

**\*\*Ray shook his head\*\***

Ray: not happening

Mbali: you do know I can make the meeting happen without you my love angithi

\*\*\*he gave her an intense look\*\*\*

Mbali: please man Ray....please do it for me

Ray: it's not happening Mbali...that woman is dangerous and I told you that I don't want you involved in any way with anyone from the underworld

Mbali: please.....

\*\*\*she said giving him her puppy dog eyes\*\*\*

Ray: those puppy dog eyes won't work this time...

Mbali: don't make me blackmail you into setting up the meeting baby

\*\*\*He raised his eyebrow looking at her and she tried to keep a straight face but she ended up laughing\*\*\*

Mbali: sthandwa sam please....you can be

present if you want I just want to talk to her,  
that's all

Ray: talk to her about what?

Mbali: this and that...look I want to make it clear  
to her that she should keep her beef with you  
away from my marriage that's all

\*\*\*she lied....what she planned for her  
was....yeah I can't even say it\*\*\*

Ray: if that's all then I'll make sure she gets the  
message

Mbali: baby please im begging you, just set up  
the meeting tuu

Ray: I said no Mbali!

Mbali: mxm fine then I'll find another way to  
meet up with her

\*\*\*she said trying to get off him and he  
tightened the grip around her\*\*\*

Ray: where do you think you're going?



Mbali: im not talking to you so let me go

\*\*\*she said faking a sulk and she tried to get out of his hold but he held her tight\*\*\*

Ray: really now

Mbali: yeah

\*\*\*she said looking away and he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: I can see you're faking a sulk my flower....i know your real sulking-face so drop the act

\*\*\*a smile forced its way on her face\*\*\*

Mbali: mxm...Ray please I just wanna talk to her

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: fine I'll think about it

Mbali: ok but don't take too long or I'll find other means to set up the meeting

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I did mention she's dangerous Mbali and she also has a foul mouth and she's

manipulative and conniving

Mbali: and you're forgetting im a mother to a demon and a wife to La Parca's carrier

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Mbali: these women need to know that im not a walk-over Ray or one of those spoiled rotten wives....i can kick ass and I also have a foul mouth too

Ray: which women?

Mbali: those stupid women you do business with

\*\*\*he laughed not believing that this was his flower\*\*\*

Mbali: mmmmh your cheating ways unleashed a beast in me so qaphela ndoda ( be careful man)

Ray: wait what did you say in Zulu?

Mbali: Google it!

\*\*\*she said laughing and he tickled her and she screamed while laughing\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Kazi went to pick Phumi up and they went to the mall to buy groceries for Phumi since she refused to stay with Menzi and Kazi in Menzi's house, she said she likes walking around in her underwear especially in the morning so she doesn't want to tempt Menzi, she also said she doesn't want to listen to them fucking every night while she left her boyfriend back home so she's gonna stay at Kazi's house during her visit... Well Phumi was a beautiful woman, she was a chubby girl but not too chubby, she has smooth caramel skin with nicely cut short hair...all in all she was the younger version of Jill Scott ( the singer and actress), she has that million dollar smile Jill Scott has and her nice and sweet but fierce when she's pissed voice was the cherry on top \*\*\*

Phumi: hai wena you mean to tell me ukuthi nigga made you cum without touching or fucking you

Kazi: yep

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Phumi: ithi uyadlala Kazi ( say you kidding Kazi)

Kazi: im dead serious Phumi and the bulge below his belt was a clear indication ukuthi hey nigga uthwele inkunzimalanga (he's packing)

\*\*\*they busted out with laughter\*\*\*

Phumi: Jezos!

\*\*\*they continued laughing\*\*\*

Kazi: im telling you Phumza....i was dripping down there, I had to work the rest of the day without wearing underwear cause it was papnut (wet)

Phumi: so what about bae wa diwheelbarrow ( the wheelbarrow bae)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: well we made it official last night and nigga fucked me good shem

Phumi: heh Kazi o deal(a) le bo bae ba diwheelbarrow le dimagician mmmh...thatha wena girl ( you deal with wheelbarrow bae and a magician...its nice to be you girl)

\*\*\*Kazi pushed Phumi and they laughed...they moved along picking things from the shelves\*\*\*

Kazi: well truth is I love Menzi and with Castiel well all I can say is I'd give anything to have him for one night nje.....Phumza you should have seen his bulge and when he was looking into my eyes and talking dirty to me it was like he was speaking to my soul

\*\*\*Phumi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: his eyes are creepy but yesterday they were the sexiest shit ever

\*\*\*they both laughed as they moved along\*\*\*

Phumi: so do you love the guy?

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Kazi: I don't know...I'll decide after having sex with him

Phumi: hah Kazi

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: im kidding jeez....yho Menzi would kill me if he finds out...I think its lust im feeling for him but yeses nigga is handsome and he's packing

Phumi: ai shem wa bona wena I'll pray for you shem ( I'll pray for you shame)

Kazi: please pray for me tuu....i think bayangithakatha ( I think they are bewitching me)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Voice: lust huh?

\*\*\*they both turned and Kazi's eyes popped out while Phumi just frowned\*\*\*

Kazi: Ca...Castiel

Castiel: I see you two fucked huh... well I hope you enjoyed yourself

\*\*\* " ohh shit he heard us" she thought and Castiel chuckled as he read her mind\*\*\*

Phumi: Castiel as in...

\*\*\*She whispered to Kazi and she nodded and she faked a smile looking at Castiel who had a frown on his face...he was looking at Phumi trying to read her mind but he couldn't....Phumi saw that he was looking at her with an intense look and she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Phumi: jeez no need to give me that look, I'll give you two some privacy

\*\*\*She said and she pushed their trolley away but Castiel still kept his gaze at her until Kazi

cleared her throat\*\*\*

Castiel: who is she?

Kazi: my cousin...why?

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Castiel: mmm

\*\*\*then he went after her leaving Kazi standing there\*\*\*

Castiel: hey

\*\*\*she turned\*\*\*

Phumi: hi

Castiel: have we met before?

\*\*\*he said as he tried to read her mind and still nothing, it was like she was immune to his abilities\*\*\*

Phumi: I doubt it

\*\*\*she said and she looked over at Kazi and Kazi had a displeased look on her face\*\*\*



Castiel: don't worry about her, she made a wrong choice now she needs to live with it

Phumi: huh?

Castiel: anyway are both your parents South African?

Phumi: askies

Castiel: just answer me jeez!

Phumi: hei don't give me that attitude ok....i don't know you and you don't me and I don't have to answer any of your questions nx

\*\*\*He kept on looking at her trying to read her mind and still nothing was happening \*\*\*

Castiel: can you just answer me

Kazi: what's going on here

Phumi: ask your boyfriend here...he's acting weird and asking me stupid questions

\*\*\*She said and pushed her trolley and Castiel's

eyes were still glued on her with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Kazi: Cass

\*\*\*He looked at her\*\*\*

Castiel: what?

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Kazi: why are you looking at Phumi like that?

\*\*\* " her name is Phumi...mmmmh interesting"  
he thought\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it to you?

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: she's my cousin for God's sake

Castiel: so?

\*\*\*she looked at him shocked then he walked away leaving her standing like a statue....and he took out his phone and called Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruu: Cass

Castiel: Madou something weird just happened now

Ruslan: no greetings you just started with the matter at hand...tell me here Cass who's your father mmmmh

Castiel: not now Madou this is serious man!

Ruslan: greet me first then we will discuss whatever happened

\*\*\*Castiel sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: fine.....how are you Madou

Ruslan: im scared of my pregnant wife to be and how are you Cass?

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: serves you right

Ruslan: fuck you....anyway what's wrong

Castiel: I met some girl....well she's Kazi's cousin and I can't read her mind like literally

cant man

Ruslan: what do mean by “you can’t read her mind”?

Castiel: just like you can’t read minds

Madou...it’s like she’s immune to my abilities

Ruslan: ok has something like this happened to you before

Castiel: no never...even with Juana when I still thought she’s an innocent human, I had to do a spell on her that prevented me from reading her mind

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok let me do some research on this and I’ll get back to you

Castiel: ok be fast about it....this shit is fucking with my head man....something is.....why can’t I read her man

Ruslan: calm down I’ll figure it out

Castiel: ok later

\*\*\*they ended the call and Castiel sighed and he went to the parking lot\*\*\*

\*\* BACK TO KAZI.....anyway after sometime she composed herself and went after Phumi\*\*\*

Kazi: what did he say to you Phumelele

\*\*\*she said with a serious tone and Phumi frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: he asked if my parents are both South African

Kazi: don't lie to me Phumelele...dont!

\*\*she said with a voice laced with a bit of anger\*\*\*

Phumi: bathong and nou?

\*\*\*she said surprised by her sudden change of attitude towards her\*\*\*

Phumi: first of all that guy is creepy and

arrogant Kazi and if you think I'm interested in that then you don't know me at all....your creepy boyfriend asked me about my parents and that's all jeez

\*\*\*Kazi face soften up a bit and she blinked fast\*\*\*

Kazi: I..... ummm

Phumi: nx

\*\*\*she walked away and Kazi sighed...she wondered why she acted that way....."does it mean I have fallen for the guy" she thought.....she then went after Phumi to apologize\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Well Kazi apologized and they hugged it out and continued with their shopping then later they drove to Kazi's place and spend the rest of the day catching up while eating junk food then later in the afternoon Kazi left and Phumi

watched a movie having snacks until she passed out on the couch....she woke up to a knock on the door and her heard started beating fast.....she got up and went to the kitchen and she took a knife and a pan and she went to the door as the knock intensified\*\*\*

Phumi: who is it?

Voice: its Castiel open up

\*\*\*she froze with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi open up man, neighbors may start thinking that im a burglar or something.....i don't wanna be burned alive with a tire around my neck

Phumi: Kazi is not here man so leave tuu

Castiel: im not here for her

Phumi: if you want me to talk to her for you then im sorry to disappoint you....she's old enough to make her own decisions so hamba tuu ( go

please)

\*\*\*Castiel sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: im not here for her are you deaf....i fucken said im here for you now open up so we can talk

Phumi: don't you dare talk to me like that...im not Kazi uyangizwa (you hear me)... nx you know what entlek leave now before I call the cops

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled he could tell now that she's not a pushover\*\*\*

Castiel: fine I apologize for talking to you like that now can you open up.....please

\*\*\*she slowly opened the door but she didn't open the security door and Castiel chuckled when he saw the knife and pan on her hands \*\*\*

Phumi: what?

Castiel: I see you're ready for thieves huh



Phumi: mmmmh and I know how to use them,  
now what are you doing here

\*\*\*his face got serious...he still couldn't read her  
mind and it was frustrating him more and  
more\*\*\*

Castiel: is one of your close family members,  
preferably your mother, father or grandparents  
witches or wizards?

Phumi: askies?

\*\*\*she said giving him a deadly look\*\*\*

Castiel: is there a witch or wizard in your family?

Phumi: VOETSEK MSUNU!

\*\*\*then she slammed the door on his face and  
she locked and went back to the  
lounge....leaving Castiel shocked then he  
chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: ok maybe I should've found a better  
way to ask her that

\*\*\*he said to himself and knocked again\*\*\*

.

19

.

.

.

\*\*\*\*SOMETHING SHORT...ENJOY!\*\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi come on I just want to know

\*\*\*She ignored him until he decided to leave cause he knew he couldn't enter the house without her permission....cause Vampires can't enter a private household without the current occupant/ occupants verbally telling them to enter....after Phumi realised that he left she took her phone and dialed Kazi's numbers\*\*\*

Kazi: babe

Phumi: hey look here Kazi please warn your

weird and arrogant boyfriend to stay the hell away from me cause I know people Kazi, in fact you know that I know people ko kasi ( back in the hood) and he can disappear just like that without a trace so warn him assomblief!

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Kazi: wait.... you mean Castiel?

\*\*\*she said whispering his name\*\*\*

Phumi: yes....lomgodoyi wenja ( that useless dog) came here and I thought he was looking for you then boom he said he's looking for me instead and you won't believe what he wanted to know

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard and jealousy creeped in\*\*\*

Kazi: he...he said that?

Phumi: yes then he asked me a stupid and insulting question....in fact msoono o le insulted

me and my family Kazi

Kazi: ummm

\*\*\*\*she was confused now\*\*\*\*

Phumi: he asked me if raloya ko gae imagine!  
(he asked me if we use witchcraft at home)

Kazi: what?

Phumi: imagine.... sebeta sa ramarete ole ( the  
nerve of that dick)....im sorry he's your  
boyfriend mara marete a gae nx ( but his  
testicles )....who the hell does he think he is

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice \*\*\*

Kazi: wow...ummm let me call him and hear  
ukuthi yini inkinga yakhe ( what's his problem)

Phumi: do so and warn him about me Kazi....im  
a dangerous chubby girl and I know dangerous  
people back at home

Kazi: I will trust me I'll make sure he knows

\*\*\*she faked a laugh\*\*\*

Phumi: good

Kazi: ok let me call him

Phumi: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and she looked around and Menzi wasn't in sight then she dialed Castiel's numbers\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it?

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Kazi: hey it's Kazi

Castiel: I know now what do you want

\*\*\*she swallowed hurt by his sudden rude and cold attitude towards her\*\*\*

Kazi: ummm Phumi called me and she said you came by my house

Castiel: I did so?

Kazi: she's angry about what you asked her

Castiel: why are you calling me Kazi

Kazi: why were you there in the first place

Castiel I mean you don't even know Phumi

Castiel: udliwa yini Ntandokazi if im interested in knowing Phumi

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: wait you're interested in her?

\*\*\*she asked with a low tone\*\*\*

Castiel: listen here girly.....you made your choice so whomever I show interest in whether is purely innocent or romantic akulona udoko olugayelwe wena lelo ( its none of your business)..... even if it's your mother okzalayo.... now lose my numbers and enjoy your boring hitman in peace I don't have time for confused little girls, im way too old for that shit

\*\*\*then he dropped the call leaving Kazi shocked and hurt by what he said, then Menzi

walked in\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam are you sure uPhumi is alright in your house all alone?

Kazi: Phumi this Phumi that....aarg man!

\*\*\*she got up and walked away looking angry leaving Menzi confused and shocked by her\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*the following day Mbali and Ray were having breakfast when Ruslan just walked in house looking like he didn't sleep at all last night\*\*\*

Ruu: familia ( family)

\*\*\*he said and kissed Mbali's cheek and he sat down joining them on the dining table\*\*\*

Mbali: hey Ruu....damn you look like hell

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: what happened to you man

Ruslan: hardly slept, Mpilo had nightmares almost the whole night and he was afraid to go back to sleep.... I couldn't even do a spell on him so he'll be able sleep cause he might still have the nightmare but he'll find it hard to wake up

Ray: damn....will he be ok

Ruu: yeah don't worry he'll be fine

Mbali: you know I'll never get used to you having "powers" Ruu

\*\*\*he chuckled as he dished up for himself\*\*\*

Ruu: but you can get used to Saint mmmmh?

Mbali: leave my baby alone please

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed and Ray just shook his head\*\*\*

Ray: why is it that you're growing fond of that pain in the ass demon my flower

Mbali: he protects me baby so he has a special



place in my heart

\*\*\*she said and Ruu looked at Ray surprised\*\*\*

Mbali: what?

Ruu: nothing his flower im just shocked by your statement

Mbali: he's part of my son Ruu just like La Parca is part of my husband and if I want to live a peaceful and stress free life I need to accept both of them into our lives....i cant afford to be scared of my son or Ray because they have demons in them... and you know they say black don't crack right, well my skin is light so that means I crack easily and I can't have that

\*\*\*both Ray and Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ray: I can't believe you just said that baby

\*\*\*he said still laughing along with Ruu\*\*\*

Mbali: but its true haw

\*\*\*they continued to laugh.... anyway they had

their breakfast conversing and laughing.....well after their breakfast Ray and Ruu went to his study while Mbali cleared the table\*\*\*

## IN THE STUDY ROOM

Ray: so what caused the nightmares man

Ruslan: those fucken Mashaba's are responsible man

Ray: what?

\*\*\*he said looking at Ruu with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah but don't worry Thandi and the kids are all protected now and as for those fuckers I'll deal with them....they all gonna run around the streets as mad people, all of them....starting with their zombies, cats, dogs and even their rats...all of them!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice then he breathed out trying to calm himself\*\*\*

Ray: so those pieces of shit don't learn huh

\*\*\*he said pissed off\*\*\*

Ruu: don't worry they'll learn the hard way

Ray: damn it....how can they do that to a child man....Mpilo is their own blood for fuck's sake!

Ruu: they don't give a damn about those boys man all they care about is money and power while that shithead called Jerry or Gerald or Jackson wants my Thandi..... I swear that bastard will curse the day he developed feelings for her by time im done with him!

\*\*\* he got up and went to pour some whiskey for both of them and he went back to sit on the couch and gave Ray his drink and he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: then there's Cass

Ray: what did he do now?

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: well apparently he met a lady who is

Kazi's cousin and he said he can't read her mind like he does with everyone else

Ray: damn.... for real?

\*\*\*he took a sip of his drink and he nodded\*\*\*

Ray: has something like that ever happened to him before

Ruu: he said no

Ray: damn so what does it mean man?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: well it means two things actually.....she's either protected by a spell or something that prevents Cass from reading her mind cause she's our enemy or she's his mate....his chosen one

Ray: wooh.....

Ruu: mmm

\*\*\*he took another sip\*\*\*

Ray: damn....if she's not the mate then she could be with the Brethren

\*\*\*Ruu nodded\*\*\*

Ray: but what about what Juana said

Ruu: that bitch lied about a lot of things man, I wouldn't be surprised if she made a mistake.... I mean Kazi and that girl are related so maybe she confused the two or she's not as good as she thinks she is and her powers are weak

\*\*\*Ray laughed\*\*\*

Ray: you know even today I don't understand why those evil blood sucking fuckers call themselves THE BRETHREN... I mean brethren are fellow Christians or members of a male religious group or order right

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: well brethren is a fancy plural form of "brother" so yeah you right cause during ancient

times men and women used to call each other brethren in their religious groups

Ray: then they should call themselves “brethren of lucifer” instead

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: well their original name is “The Brethren of diablo” (brothers/sisters of the devil)

Ray: Lucifer, the devil..... same shit

\*\*\*Ruu laughed again\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah.... “pieces of shit” is what they should call themselves

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: so you really called Celine over huh

\*\*\*Ray sighed and he gulped down the rest of his drink at one go and Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: yeah...i swear Mbali is gonna send me to my early grave man

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: you should've refused

Ray: well Mrs Owoh-Masden threatened to set up the meeting herself if I don't

\*\*\*Ruu laughed again\*\*\*

Ruu: I couldn't believe it when you told me over the phone man

Ray: this girl is gonna give me heart problems im telling you man

\*\*\*Ruu laughed then Ray's phone rang and it was Celine, he sighed and answered\*\*\*

Ray: Celine

Celine: im outside

Ray: ok I'll let you in

\*\*\*he dropped the call and Ray brushed his face and he got up\*\*\*

Ray: let's go she's here

\*\*\*Ruu got up and he followed him chuckling\*\*\*

IN THE LOUNGE

Ray: she's here

\*\*\*he said to Mbali and she got up with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Ruu: are you sure you want to do this his flower

Mbali: yeah....Let her in babe

Ray: im sure she's not even wearing anything since I told her I'll be all alone so....

\*\*\*she clenched her jaws\*\*\*

Mbali: don't worry about that....you won't fuck her so it's no biggy

\*\*\*Ruu looked at Ray with his eyebrows raised and an amused look plastered on his face and Ray huffed and he opened the gate for Celine.... then Mbali went to the dining area and she came back with a chair and she put it on the empty space that was in the lounge and she



waited\*\*\*

Ray: and the chair

Mbali: its for our guest baby

\*\*\*Ruu held back his smile....he was impressed by Mbali while Ray was worried about her.... then they heard the doorbell ring and he sighed and went to open.....Mbali and Ruu heard her voice and soon she walked in wearing a long brown coat that showed her cleavage with knee high boots, she was followed by her two bodyguards and Mbali chuckled getting angry....Celine frowned when her eyes landed on Mbali and Ruu\*\*\*

Celine: what the hell is this Raymond...i thought you said you'll be alone?

Mbali: sit!

\*\*\*she looked at Mbali up and down and she chuckled clearly mocking Mbali\*\*\*

Celine: you talking to me little girl

Ray: Celine!

\*\*\*he warned her then her two bodyguards took a step forward with their hands on their waists were their guns are\*\*\*

Mbali: SAINT COME OUT NOW!

\*\*\*Ruu and Ray's eyes popped out and immediately wind like sounds filled the room and the windows immediately got covered with dark smoke and it became dark inside but luckily the lamps where on inside the lounge and dining area\*\*\*

Celine: WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON HERE RAYMOND!

\*\*\*she said looking around and her bodyguards got closer to her trying to protect her\*\*\*

Ray: Mbali!

Ruu: damn!

\*\*\*then another black smoke formed a figure next to Mbali....even though she was a little scared of Saint ( the demon) but she knew he or it won't hurt her in any way...as for Celine and the bodyguard they drew out their guns pointing them at the smoke formed figure with their shaking hands and eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruu: I wouldn't do that if I were you

\*\*\*he warned them and immediately their guns melted and they quickly dropped them on the floor cursing\*\*\*

Guard1: what the fuck!

\*\*\*he said looking scared while the other one was frozen on the spot\*\*\*

Celine: Ray what the hell is this....wha...what's going on here?

\*\*\*she said with her eyes popped out and her heart pounding hard against her chest\*\*\*

Mbali: my son take these two men trying to protect this evil witch that hurt mommy away and deal with them but don't kill them just make sure they have nightmares that will haunt them for the rest of their miserable lives

Voice: yes mommy

\*\*\*then the guards got lifted up by the black smoke all of a sudden and they screamed as the smoke moved away with them from the lounge going to the basement.... Well in the basement Saint really dealt with them accordingly, he/it left them curled up into a ball in the corner with their knees up on their chest and their arms wrapping around them while they rocked themselves back and forth with tears running down their cheeks\*\*\*

IN THE LOUNGE

Ray: my flower

Mbali: Ray please not now.....now what I want

from this bitch is to sit the fuck down on that chair before Saint makes her

Celine: Raymond!

\*\*\*she said trying to sound brave as she looked at him but a crack on her voice gave her away and Mbali smirked\*\*\*

Ruu: wow im impressed Mrs Owoh-Masden

\*\*\*he said as he went to sit down on the couch....as for Ray he stood there shocked, impressed but most of all worried\*\*\*

Mbali: SAINT!

\*\*\*the smoke figure came back from the basement\*\*\*

Saint: yes mommy

\*\*\*Celine quickly sat down\*\*\*

Mbali: good bitch

\*\*\*Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Celine: what do you want?

\*\*\*she said looking at Mbali with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Saint: don't look at mommy like that!

\*\*\* Saint said with his creepy and scary voice but Celine because of her stubbornness, she kept looking at Mbali with a deadly look then the smoke figure quickly moved coming towards her and she quickly closed her eyes shaking\*\*\*

Saint: I won't tell you again!

\*\*\*Saint warned her and Mbali's face got filled with a lot of a bad-bitch attitude and she smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: thank you baby

\*\*\*then the smoke moved back a bit and Celine opened her eyes but she looked down instead scared to look up\*\*\*

Mbali: now here's the thing....before we get to you trying to ruin my marriage let's start with Ray's "supposed" child

\*\*\*Ray and Ruu's eyes popped out and they looked at each other talking with their eyes then they looked back at Mbali and Celine\*\*\*

Mbali: is there really a baby or you made that up....and another thing Ruu over there is a real wizard so if you lie bitch he'll know and Saint , my boy over here will deal with you.....now is there a baby or not

Celine: ye...yes there is

\*\*\*Mbali swallowed\*\*\*

Mbali: and the baby mama?

Celine: she...she was Rosalina my cousin

\*\*\*Ray sighed and he looked down when Mbali looked at him and Mbali swallowed again trying by all means not to shed a tear....she cleared

her throat and composed herself\*\*\*

Mbali: you said she was your cousin

Celine: she.... she died of drug overdose

\*\*\*Ruu frowned\*\*\*

Ruu: mmmm Celine....

\*\*\*he shook his head\*\*\*

Mbali: what is it Ruu?

Ruu: she's lying

Celine: no...no im not

Mbali: Saint!

Saint: yes mommy

\*\*\*he said with his scary voice\*\*\*

Celine: ok ok I killed her....i paid someone to inject her with an overdose of drugs to make it look like suicide cause I was angry that she managed to sleep with Raymond and even got pregnant while I failed



\*\*\*Ray chuckled getting angry cause Rosalina was a sweet girl, even if she was still alive he knew she wouldn't come with baby mama drama cause she was scared of him\*\*\*

Mbali: where's the baby

\*\*\*Celine kept quiet\*\*\*

Mbali: im not gonna ask you again bitch

Celine: i...i sold her to some married couple back in Venezuela who can't conceive

Ray: you fucken Bitch!

\*\*\* he rushed to her and a punch landed on her face breaking her nose then he grabbed her by her neck looking deadly that even Mbali got scared by looking at him\*\*\*

Ruu: Ray!

Ray: THEIR LOCATION NOW!

\*\*\*he said squeezing tight and she struggled to breathe busy making shocking sounds with her

hands trying to pull Ray hand off her neck\*\*\*

Ray: ANSWER ME DAMN IT!

Mbali: Ray stop!

\*\*\*he didn't at first but when she touched his arm, he came back to his senses and he let her go and turned to look at a scared Mbali then he looked back at Celine who was coughing uncontrollably with thick blood coming out of her nose.....Ray still had that scary look on his face\*\*\*

Ray: give me my daughter's location or I'll let Saint deal with you!

\*\*\*Celine continued to cough holding her painful neck\*\*\*

-----

AT KAZI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Phumi has been trying to call Kazi who wasn't answering her calls the whole morning

and she was getting a bad vibe that maybe she was avoiding her.....she wished she didn't call her last night about Castiel showing up here and all that he said cause she could see that Kazi liked the guy even though she was now dating Menzi.....she sighed and decided to call Menzi\*\*\*

Menzi: yeah

Phumi: ummm hey Menzi its Phumi, Kazi's cousin

Menzi: ooh hey is everything ok

Phumi: yeah...actually no I've been trying to call Kazi all morning and she's not answering my calls

\*\*\*Menzi sighed cause Kazi slept without saying anything to him and she also woke up in a bad mood, even the morning glory he gave her didn't change her mood and he wondered what happened between them....he wanted to ask her

but he thought against it thinking that they will squash whatever fight they had soon \*\*\*

Menzi: ummm I last saw her before I left for work.... she's probably busy or something

Phumi: ooh yeah maybe anyway please tell her to call me back when you talk her

Menzi: ok I will shap

Phumi: shap

\*\*\*they ended the call and then there was a knock on the door and she quickly got up and went to open the door thinking it's Kazi and her face fell when she saw that it was Castiel instead.....she tried to close the door but he blocked it with his hand\*\*\*

Castiel: I come in peace....

\*\*\*he said showing her the bouquet of flowers and a box of some expensive swiss chocolates\*\*\*

Castiel: im sorry about last night..... what I said didn't come out exactly the way I wanted it to come out

Phumi: ufuna ngiyenzi ngamaflower heh ( what do you want me to do with flowers), do I look like a white woman to you?

\*\*\*Castiel looked at her shocked\*\*\*

Phumi: and what's with those chocolates..... weh Castiel or Castor oil or Custard or Caster Semenya.... whatever your name is....

\*\*\*she said waving her hand around\*\*\*

Phumi: don't you know amaFerrero Roche mmmmh ngiyenzi mina nga

lamabrooklax (don't you know Ferrero Rocher's mmmmh what should I do with those Brooklax "laxatives" )

\*\*\*Castiel wanted to say something but for the first time in his 105 years he was out of words

say\*\*\*

Phumi: ngicela uhambe tuu Castor oil anginaso isikhathi sakho mina (please leave Castor oil I don't have time for you) Kazi is angry at me cause you showed up here so tsamaya tuu (leave) before she finds you here

\*\*\*then she slammed the door on his face and locked it and she went to the lounge while clicking her tongue angrily\*\*\*

Phumi: yho go decid(a) go shapa ke moyanyana mo KZN then phrrtlh ke gafela ke motho ebile motho wa teng obitsa ba ko gae baloi ....ai dilo tsa KZN (yho I decide to come to KZN for some fresh air and out of the blue this guy is all over my face he's even saying everyone at home uses witchcraft.... ai KZN things)

\*\*\*\* she shook her head and tried Kazi again but this time it send her straight to voicemail.....she sighed and sat down thinking

that maybe she should just go back home\*\*\*

20

.  
. .

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali: are you sure?

Celine: yeah im sure

\*\*\*she just given them the location to Ray's daughter then Ray called Mateo and told him to search for the couple and the address Celine gave them\*\*\*

Mbali: what's her name....what did her birth mother name her

Celine: Ca... Cataleya

Mbali: mmmh beautiful name don't you think babe

\*\*\*Ray swallowed hard....he was worried but more over scared cause he didn't know how Mbali really felt about him having a child out there\*\*\*

Ray: yeah

Ruslan: beautiful name indeed but I want to know what do they call her now?

Celine: Pa...Paulina

Mbali: Paulina?....the nerve!....imagine Ruu, from Cataleya to Paulina mxm bayahlanya ( they are crazy)

\*\*\*she shook her head then she looked at Ray\*\*\*

Mbali: so what should we do with this bitch babe?

\*\*\*she asked Ray\*\*



Ray: I'll take it from here my flower

Mbali: ok but make sure you don't ..... waste her life as yet, if you know what I mean

\*\*\*Ray looked at her with a raised eyebrow\*\*\*

Ruslan: waste her life?

Mbali: I meant don't kill her as yet

Ruslan: I know what you meant his flower, im just shocked you said those words yourself

Ray: Mbali I don't want you talking about shit like that more over to even think about it ok!

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Mbali: ya'll forget who my father, grandfather and brothers are neh

Ray: it doesn't matter, the fact is now you're my wife and I don't want you involved in all this shit

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: fine....but wait until you find your baby

before you “deal” with her cause this bitch might be lying about her whereabouts

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: I know that, now can you got back to being my innocent wife...please

\*\*\*she smiled then out of the blue she punched Celine hard on her face and Ruslan gasped...she threw more punches on Celine until Ray pulled her away from her\*\*\*

Ray: will you stop!

Mbali: let go of me im not done with this bitch.... I need to teach her a lesson to never try and breakup people’s marriages!

Ray: calm the fuck down!

\*\*\*she gave Celine a deadly stare then she raised her hands in surrender\*\*\*

Mbali: fine im calm!

Ray: you sure?

Mbali: yeah

\*\*\*he let her go and she fixed herself and she looked at Ruu who had an amused look on his face then she looked at Ray\*\*\*

Mbali: I guess you boys will take it from here

\*\*\*then she walked away\*\*\*

Mbali: Saint its time for you to go back to sleep baby

Saint: yes mommy

\*\*\*then the smoke disappeared right as Mbali was walking up the stairs and light came in as the smoke on the windows vanished and Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: damn Mrs La Parca is in the building

\*\*\*he said with a Mexican accent then he laughed, as for Ray he shook his head and he took out his phone and made a call\*\*\*

Mat: jefe

Ray: send some boys to my house, I have three packages they need to take to the warehouse for safe keeping

Mat: got it

Ray: and Mat

Mat: jefe

Ray: keep tabs on Celine's syndicate crew since we have her, I don't want any nasty surprises

Mat: ok and the couples names and address checks out

Ray: good we will talk later

\*\*\*they ended the call\*\*\*

Celine: you... are... all dead...my people will find me and....

\*\*\*Ray punched her so hard that she passed out instantly \*\*\*

Ray: she fucken talks too much

Ruu: before you do anything I need to say this.....you need to talk to your wife about your plans concerning the baby issue meaning involve her in all your decisions man

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: that baby will need to grow up in a loving family Ray and she can get that if Mbali is on board.... ask for her opinion on this matter and make sure you don't assume that she's ready, make sure she's ready for real to mother her before you go look for her

Ray: I hear you man

Ruu: good....i need a drink

\*\*\*he walked away\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*The following day Phumi decided to go back home since Kazi was still ignoring her, she was hurt that Kazi was acting this way towards

her.....her gut told her that it's because of Castiel and she wished she didn't call her to vent about what Castiel did but then again she was glad she called her and told her cause now she can see the kind of cousin she has..... she packed her things and called for an uber then she waited, right then there was a knock on the door and she went to open and Castiel was standing there\*\*\*

Phumi: God why mara

Castiel: oohh come on stop being dramatic

\*\*\*He still couldn't read her mind\*\*\*

Phumi: what do you want from me huh?

Castiel: to talk

Phumi: I don't wanna talk to you now leave me alone...please

Castiel: ooh well I can be a pain in the ass if I want to so it's in your best interest to allow us

to have the talk

Phumi: what is it that you want to talk about  
then mmmh?

Castiel: aren't you gonna allow me in

Phumi: no

\*\*\*He sighed.....if only he could know what  
she's thinking then he was sure by now he  
would have found out what he wanted to know  
about her\*\*\*

Castiel: why are you this stubborn?

Phumi: well I don't know you and I definitely  
don't trust you

Castiel: you know what its fine we can talk here

Phumi: make it quick im about to leave

\*\*\*He frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: leave to where?

Phumi: im going back home

Castiel: why

Phumi: its all your fault

Castiel: ooh please don't tell me you're leaving because I keep coming here

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: im leaving because whatever you said to Kazi made her to stop taking my calls

\*\*\*She said with a sad voice and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: ooh really...she did that?

Phumi: wa tjena?....mx entlek tsamaya motho tuu (you're grinning...mxm you know what just leave please)

\*\*\*She said as she attempted to close the door but he blocked it with his hand\*\*\*

Castiel: can you stop all this so we can talk

Phumi: I said I don't wanna talk to you why are



you forcing things huh?

\*\*\*Castiel sighed frustrated cause he has never been frustrated by a woman like this before.... then they saw a car parking behind Castiel's and Kazi got out and Phumi chuckled not believing this was happening\*\*\*

Phumi: Yah neh bati e kana bathong ( so much bad luck)

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled shaking his head and he turned back and looked at a flushed Phumi and he wished so bad to read her thoughts \*\*\*

Castiel: relax will you

Phumi: don't talk to me wena nx

Kazi: what's going on here?

\*\*\*She said with a serious look on her face as she got closer to them\*\*\*

Phumi: he...he came to see you

Castiel: no... that's not why im here

\*\*\*Phumi gave him a death look and he raised his eyebrow at her\*\*\*

Castiel: what, you want me to lie?

Kazi: Phumi what's all this.....i called you to come here so we can spend some time together not for you to go after my man

Castiel: whoah stop right there.... im not your man Charlotte, I never was one and will never be one

\*\*\*Kazi swallowed hard feeling embarrassed, she wished she didn't say that\*\*\*

Kazi: I didn't mean you're my man I just meant...

Castiel: I don't care what you meant but you must never go around telling people that im your man or was one....you made your choice now stick to it

\*\*\*her eyes got filled with tears\*\*\*

Kazi: I didn't make my choice ok I just reacted

badly and now I wish I didn't do what I did

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled when he read her thoughts.....she kept on thinking "I want you not him"\*\*\*

Castiel: well I don't care

\*\*\*He then looked at Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll wait for you outside the yard

\*\*\*then he walked away and Kazi looked at Phumi with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Kazi: I can't believe you Phumi!

Phumi: askies

Kazi: you know I like the guy and now you're going after him....like really now?

Phumi: o sa batla gonnyela Kazi ok ( don't piss me off).....that bastard is making me feel uncomfortable and he insulted me for fucks sake....a re ko gae raloya( he said at home we do witchcraft) and wena you have the fucken

guts to stand there and say I want him...wa gafa!  
(are you crazy)

She said feeling insulted by her.

Kazi: don't give me that attitude ok....he said  
he's here for you!

She said sounding angry.

Phumi: so what huh...does that mean I want  
him?..... nx you know what.... Fuck you nxa

\*\*\*she went inside to take her bags and Kazi  
followed her\*\*\*

Kazi: uthi fuck me Phumelele?

Phumi: yeah fuck you for thinking that im  
interested in that....

\*\*\*She said pointing towards the door\*\*\*

Phumi: and fuck you for letting a dick come  
between us, a dick im not even interested in nxa

\*\*\*Kazi didn't say anything she just blinked

fast\*\*\*

Phumi: and just because you can swing between two dicks doesn't mean all of us do that....im happy with my man and you know that, you also know that I've never cheated on him even when I suspected that he was cheating on me... Gosh i can't believe you Kazi....

\*\*\*she then walked to the door \*\*\*

Kazi: Phumz look im...im sorry

Phumi: hai fokof nxa

\*\*\*she walked out leaving Kazi with her mouth hanging..... she walked to the gate and when Castiel saw her he got out of the car\*\*\*

Castiel: damn you look like you're about to explode

Phumi: VOETSEK CASTIEL!

\*\*\*She said and walked out and she joined the road pulling her travelling bag\*\*\*

-----  
\*\*\*Phumi was now standing on a queue to buy a bus ticket then Castiel stood next to her with his hands in his pockets\*\*\*

Phumi: God why me mara?

Castiel: why are you like this huh?

\*\*\*she ignored him.....she just moved with the queue\*\*\*

Castiel: you know the last time I chased after a woman like this was many decades ago

\*\*\*she still ignored him\*\*\*

Castiel: ok then

\*\*\*he moved with her as the queue moved still trying to read her mind and still nothing.....he could read the mind of the woman behind them and she was busy complimenting Castiel's butt, she wondered how he looked naked.....and the guy in front of them was praying in his head

that the job interview he was going to in Pretoria goes well....He kept on praying to God busy telling him how much he needs the job so he'll be able to take care of his ailing mother and little sister\*\*\*

Castiel: hey man

\*\*\*the guy turned and looked at him\*\*\*

Guy: yebo

Castiel: ummm have we met before?

Guy: ummm cha angicabangi kanjalo mfowethu (no i don't think so bro)

Castiel: ooh alright...quick question.... are you looking for a job and im not talking about anything illegal

\*\*\*The guy looked at Cass surprised\*\*\*

Guy: ummm i...

Castiel: are you?

\*\*\*they moved with the queue\*\*\*

Guy: ummm ye...yes

\*\*\*he said still surprised\*\*\*

Castiel: good

\*\*\*he took out his business card and gave it to him\*\*\*

Castiel: call me sometime tomorrow and we will talk

\*\*\*he took the business card and read on it\*\*\*

Guy: ok I will...thank you sir

Castiel: cool and ooh do you have a spare CV with you

Guy: ye..yes

\*\*\*He quickly took out the CV and gave it to Cass and he read his name\*\*\*

Cass: Ronald Mbuyiseni Dladla.....RMD

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*



Cass: ok I'll wait for your call RMD

Ronny: ok sir

\*\*\*he said smiling tearfully and he looked forward and moved with the queue and Phumi looked at Castiel briefly then she sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: still won't talk to me?

\*\*\*she continued to ignore him then he heard Ronny thoughts and he was thinking about the money he would lose going to Pretoria for a job interview which might go sideways....if only he could walk from KZN to PTA then he would use the ticket money to buy food for his mother and little sister\*\*\*

Castiel: Ronny

\*\*\*he turned\*\*\*

Ronny: sir

Castiel: go back home and call me tomorrow for the job....

\*\*\*then he took out a couple of hundreds inside his wallet and gave it to him\*\*\*

Castiel: buy airtime with that

\*\*\*Ronny swallowed hard and he slowly took the money with his shaking hand.....his pride wanted him to refuse it but thinking about his mother he knew he needed it and as for the job interview he knew he might not even get the job cause he didn't even have the number of years of experience they wanted, he thought that the fact that they called him for the interview was because God was finally gonna answer his prayers but deep down he knew his chances of getting the job were slim.....his other reason of going to Pretoria is to drop off his CVs at other companies there after his interview\*\*\*

Ronny: tha...thank you sir

\*\*\*he said with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Castiel: and if I don't answer your call leave a

message and I'll get back to you ok

\*\*\*Ronny nodded \*\*\*

Ronny: ye....yes sir Thank you

Castiel: yeah...now go home kid

Ronny: thank you sir....thank you

\*\*\* He said trying to fight back his tears and he walked away wiping his tears that fell, he was gonna go straight to the supermarket to buy decent food for his mother and little sister\*\*\*

Phumi: that...that was very kind of you

Castiel: ooh now you decide to talk to me huh?

Phumi: mmmmh cause I can see that you have a heart after all

Castiel: what's that supposed to mean?

Phumi: dude you were rude to Kazi

Castiel: I wasn't... I was just being honest

Phumi: well you were rude

Castiel: believe me you'll hate me when im rude.....so earlier I was just being honest

\*\*\*She looked at him briefly then it was her turn to buy her ticket and she bought it then Castiel also bought his and they moved to the bus and they got in and Phumi sat down then Castiel sat next to her\*\*\*

Phumi: really now...there are many empty seats dude

Castiel: I prefer to sit next to you

Phumi: hai cha angikukholwa lokhu ( no I can believe this)

Castiel: what is it you cant believe

\*\*\*she gave him the wtf look and he chuckled then he sat back\*\*\*

Phumi: ok let's get it all out....what do you want from me, like for real this time

Castiel: well for starters I asked you a question

and you didn't answer me

Phumi: no the aren't witches at home...happy?

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: you sure

Phumi: ungazongihlanyisa wena ( don't piss me off).... I just answered you entlek ufunani kimi ( what do you want from me)

\*\*\*she said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Castiel: chill jeez

Phumi: nx

\*\*\*then she exhaled\*\*\*

Phumi: now will you leave me alone since I answered your stupid question?

Castiel: no I have another thing to ask you

\*\*\*she rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: khuluma! (talk)

Castiel: are you ready to travel many miles with different types of people who'll make this journey a painful one for you

\*\*\*she frowned at him\*\*\*

Phumi: what are you talking about?

Castiel: you see that guy at the back...well he ate lots and lots of cooked beans and I don't know if you know how stinky a fart of a person who ate beans or eggs is

\*\*\*she looked at the back and the guy was busy burping then she looked at Castiel with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Phumi: and how do you know that

Castiel: I just know unless you want to find out when this bus is on the road

\*\*\*She faced forward then an obese man walked inside the bus and Castiel looked at Phumi and when he sat on the seat that was in

front of theirs he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: can we just go

Phumi: go if you want to haw

\*\*\*He sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: please....Please man im suffocating in here

Phumi: then hamba (go)

Castiel: im not leaving without you

Phumi: mxm

Castiel: if I faint and die in here then it's all on you

\*\*\*she gave him the wtf look\*\*\*

Castiel: im serious.... I don't do crowded and cramped up spaces ever

Phumi: yaz uyadina Castiel....wa tena mxm (you know you're tiring Castiel)

\*\*\*she got up and looked at him\*\*\*

Phumi: a reye o nnetseng ( lets go why are you sitting there)

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrows at her\*\*\*

Castiel: ummm I only understood “a” and “o”

Phumi: Amen!

\*\*\*the guy on the front chuckled\*\*\*

Phumi: let’s go before I change my mind tuu

\*\*\*Castiel got up and he took her bag and looked at the guy\*\*\*

Castiel: uyahleka ngamehlo akho amakhulu kungathi uyixoxo nx ( you’re laughing with your big eyes as if you’re a frog)...your cholesterol will choke you while you busy laughing at things that got nothing to do with you unye msoon

\*\*\*Phumi looked at him shocked and the guy frowned looking at him.....Castiel walked out of the bus and Phumi followed him with a “wow” look on her face\*\*\*



Phumi: that was unnecessary dude

Castiel: can you stop calling me dude...im not your dude Phumi

Phumi: o sambora tuu ( don't bore me please)

Castiel: just stop talking that Tswana shit with me ok...speak Isizulu then if English is showing you flames

\*\*\*she showed him the hand and walked away\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*They were now on the road to the airport then Castiel took his phone and called Ray\*\*\*

Ray: Cass

Castiel: bros you good

Ray: yeah what's up?

Castiel: I need a favour man

Ray: im listening

Castiel: I need you to buy me two plane tickets business class.....try and get me the earliest flight you can get

Ray: two plane tickets huh?

Castiel: I'll explain when I see you later

Ray: ok

Castiel: thanks bro

Ray: yeah yeah

\*\*\*then they ended the call\*\*\*

Phumi: I hope the second plane ticket is not for me

Castiel: why, don't tell me you're scared of flights

\*\*\*she kept quiet and looked outside the window\*\*\*

Castiel: wow so you can run your mouth like someone who has diarrhea but you're scared of

taking a mere flight

\*\*\*She showed him the middle finger \*\*\*

Castiel: be careful that finger might stay like that for the rest of your life

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone that made her have chills run down her spine and she swallowed\*\*\*

Castiel: so tell me about yourself

\*\*\*She kept quiet still looking out the window\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi

Phumi: I have nothing to say

Castiel: you're exhausting you know that

Phumi: more reason why you should stay the hell away from me

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: what is it about me that piss you off?

Phumi: you insulted me and on top of that you

came between me and my cousin

Castiel: I didn't insult you Phumi....where I come from being a witch is what is called "dope" today so I didn't think you'd feel insulted by my question

Phumi: dude you speak Isizulu so you should know that that question is sensitive and insulting in South Africa

Castiel: I know that South Africans are very sensitive humans and that they get offended easily but come on that was a simple question that needed a simple answer

Phumi: mxm you know how sensitive we are and yet o no phatlhoga fela nje ( and yet you just talk as you please)

Castiel: what did I say about speaking Tswana with me?

Phumi: what did I say about you staying the hell away from me but yet here we are

\*\*\*Castiel looked at her and chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: and to think that we thought you might be with the Brethren....you're just a loud mouth nje

\*\*\*he chuckled and Phumi frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: who are the Brithen?

Castiel: its Brethren not Brithen ....and they are some evil beings

Phumi: whatever...but wait....what if I am with them mmmmh?

\*\*\*he looked at her briefly\*\*\*

Castiel: then I would be dead by now

Phumi: well what if the Brithen don't want you dead as yet

\*\*\*She said with a raised eyebrow and he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: for starters you said their name wrong  
so you can't be with them

Phumi: mxm whatever

Castiel: " damn it she has to be the one....Juana  
made a mistake she has to be the one"

\*\*\*he thought and they continued to drive\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Ray bought the tickets for Castiel and send  
him the codes then his boys came and took  
Celine and his traumatized bodyguard to the  
warehouse.....Right now Ruu and Ray are  
sitting in the lounge with Ruslan helping Ray out  
with some papers concerning the private  
hospital Ray was building\*\*\*

Ruslan: SAINT CATALEYA PRIVATE  
HOSPITAL....I like it man

Ray: yeah but I need to run it past Mbali first

Ruslan: and he's learning people...

\*\*\*he said smiling and Ray pushed him\*\*\*

Ray: mxm piss off puta

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: so what are you gonna do with Celine

Ray: I'll call her uncle and make a deal with him, I know he always wanted to take over the family business but his brother gave the reins to his useless daughter instead so I kill the bitch for him and he's indebted to me for life or I'll threaten to let Celine go and he never gets his hands on the business and we both know which one he'll go with

Ruslan: ooh so you got all this figured out right

Ray: you know me Celine being kill here won't have him as a suspect.... and plus wifey started the whole shit and im finishing it

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: lucky son of a bitch

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: but im worried about her man

Ruslan: don't be...she just showed you that she can hold it down

Ray: I don't want her involved man

Ruslan: then make sure she doesn't get involved it's as simple as that

Ray: yeah

\*\*\*Ray nodded then they heard the doorbell ring and Ruu got up\*\*\*

Ray: just so you know you're going to run Saint Cataleya as the CEO so you'll be able to get a work permit to be closer to Thandi and your kids all the time

Ruslan: what?

Ray: it's not up for discussion Ruu....we both



know you have a business mind so find a way to make the Hospital a success.....and its 15% shares for sale to you, 10% for Mat, 10% for Diego, 10% for Heath, 10% for Jabu and 45% for me and plus you'll monitor your many investment online so it's a win win situation

\*\*\*he stopped walking and looked at Ray\*\*\*

Ruu: you have all this shit figured out huh?

Ray: im a business man, it's just a pity I can't run the hospital because of other businesses I have on the side

\*\*\*Ruu opened the door and he signed for the package then he tipped the delivery man and he closed the door and walked back to Ray\*\*\*

Ray: you had that delivered here, what about Thandi's house?

Ruslan: I know the madam of this house won't mind and she won't ask unnecessary questions

Ray: what about me

Ruslan: you're irrelevant

Ray: what?....you know what nigga, fuck you

\*\*\*Ruu laughed then he put the box on the table and opened it and there was a scarf inside written aunt with a white making pen , a warn-out head warp written gogo, two t-shirts inside and one was written big bro and the other one was written another bro....He smirked wickedly and Ray went to see what's inside and he frowned\*\*\*

Ray: I hope all this is not for Thandi man

Ruslan: come on man I would never insult amor like that....this is what I need to deal with the Mashabas once and for all

Ray: no wait... you gonna...

Ruslan: yeah....im gonna make their nightmares come to life in a most horrific way

Ray: damn and how the hell did you get all this!

\*\*\*he closed the box and whistled going to the kitchen\*\*\*

Ray: Ruu!

.....21

.

.

.

Cass: wow you're really scared of flying huh

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: yeah

Cass: relax nothing will happen

Phumi: and how do you know that... are you God?

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: I just know now relax

Phumi: mxm easy for you to say....this shitty thing might explode and we will all die

\*\*\*He chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: and that bus can also explode too you know

\*\*\*She rolled her eyes and she breathed out then they kept quiet for sometime\*\*\*

Cass: so is there someone special in your life?

\*\*\*she looked at him \*\*\*

Phumi: yeah and we are in love

Cass: is that so

Phumi: yeah we've been together for 10 years and still going strong

\*\*\* she said and she looked at him with pouted lips and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: cute pout

\*\*\*she stopped pouting and she frowned then he chuckled again\*\*\*

Cass: so 10 years huh and he still hasn't put a ring on it

Phumi: ufunukthini Castor oil ( what are you trying to say Castor oil)

Cass: what did you just call me?

Phumi: ummm I said Castiel

\*\*\*He looked at her with an intense look on his face then he sipped on his drink\*\*\*

Cass: that's strike 1 from you just so you know

\*\*\*she frowned at him\*\*\*

Phumi: askies

Cass: you heard me

Phumi: mxm

Cass: you know, the day im gonna fuck that

stinking attitude and stubbornness out of you  
you'll think the world is coming to an end  
ngiyaktshela ( im telling you)

\*\*\*her mouth hung open as she looked at  
him\*\*\*

Cass: continue talking to me anyhow and your  
day will come

Phumi: im not scared of you and I will never  
ever sleep with you..... I mean you're not even  
my type for God's sake....you might be Kazi's  
but definitely not mine

\*\*\*He chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: if you say so

\*\*\*he picked a business magazine and paged  
through it\*\*\*

Phumi: so what time are we landing?

Cass: soon

Phumi: I asked "what time" Castiel

Cass: I don't know

Phumi: Jehovah!

\*\*\*he looked at her briefly\*\*\*

Cass: el día que te follaré (the day I'll fuck you)

\*\*\*then he chuckled shaking his head\*\*

Phumi: askies?

Cass: nothing

\*\*\*then he chuckled and continued to page through the magazine.....after some time they landed and they went to take her luggage and he made a call to Ray and Ray told him one of his guys will hand him a car key outside, he grabbed Phumi's hand and she frowned at how cold his hand was...anyway they walked to the exit and as soon as they got out a guy walked to them and greeted them then he gave Castiel a car key and pointed at the car then he walked away\*\*\*

Cass: let's go

\*\*\*he pulled her towards the car and opened the passenger door for her and she got in and he closed it and he went to open the boot of the car and put in her bag and closed it then he went to the driver side, got in and drove away after they both buckled up\*\*\*

Phumi: so are you some kind of a rich man with cold hands?

Cass: why do you ask?

\*\*\*he ignored the cold hands part\*\*\*

Phumi: business class tickets and now some guy just handed you a car key just like that

Cass: well I do have businesses, both legal and illegal but I have people who run them for me

Phumi: illegal?

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Cass: yeah, it's the in thing.... you don't know



that?

\*\*\*she gave him the “wtf” look\*\*\*

Phumi: you kidding right

Cass: no

\*\*\*she just kept quiet\*\*\*

Cass: there's a lot of shit happening in my life in fact there's a lot of shit that will shock you about me so this revelation shouldn't shock you

Phumi: well thankfully I'll never see you again after dropping me off so it's all good

\*\*\*he chuckled \*\*\*

Cass: what makes you think this is the last time we will be seeing each other

Phumi: we're not friends Castiel

Cass: yeah but I think you are my mate

Phumi: mate?

Cass: mmmmh

Phumi: well im not your mate, whatever that means.....im Thabo's woman

Cass: no you're Thabo's ex

Phumi: wa gafa ka bona mxm ( you're crazy)

Cass: and there she goes with her Tswana bullshit nx

Phumi: don't start with me tuu

\*\*\*Castiel just shook his head and they continued to drive in complete silence until Phumi fell asleep\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Phumi woke up when she felt pressed and she yawned and squirted her eyes looking around then her eyes landed on Castiel who was sitting on a chair not far from the bed and she froze\*\*\*

Cass: you're finally awake...damn you sleep like a dead person yeer minus the snoring

ofcourse

Phumi: where...where am i?

Cass: my brother's house

Phumi: what...i...

\*\*\*she quickly touched her nana to feel any pain and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: believe me you would have known the moment you opened your eyes ukuthi my dick was in there so relax

\*\*\*She swallowed hard and got out of the bed\*\*\*

Phumi: ummm where is the bathroom

\*\*\*he pointed at a slightly opened door and she went there and did her business, after she was done she flushed and thoroughly checked herself and her nana and she was all good then she washed her hands and went back to the bedroom\*\*\*

Cass: you hungry?

Phumi: why didn't you wake me up so I give you directions?

Cass: nje....so are you hungry?

Phumi: Castiel I asked you a question!

\*\*\* she said with a raised voice and he frowned at her\*\*\*

Cass: hey...hey don't fucken raise your voice at me ok!

\*\*\*he warned her and she kept quiet cause his warning tone was scary\*\*\*

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*she saw her hand bag and went to take out her phone and she checked the time and it was 23H15....she sighed then she turned and looked at an unbothered Castiel\*\*\*

Phumi: I need to leave

Cass: at this time?

Phumi: you have a car Castiel so you can just drive me home

Cass: no

\*\*\*he said getting up and he walked to her and she frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: what do you mean no....dude  
assomblief don't make me mad

Cass: what did I say about you calling me dude

Phumi: Castiel o sa batla go mbora please  
(Castiel don't bore me please).....just take me home

Cass: and I said no its late, I'll take you home tomorrow

\*\*\*she looked at him with an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Phumi: you know what its fine I'll make a plan

Cass: ok...in the meantime let me bring our food

\*\*\*He walked out and she stood there not knowing what to do...She sat down at the edge of the bed for some time thinking of who to call, she couldn't call her boyfriend cause nigga didn't know she was even coming back so to call him to come and pick her up from some guy's house will just mess things up between them, worst thing is she didn't even know where she was....Her phone rang and she contemplated on whether to answer it or to just let it ring but she knew how crazy her boyfriend is if she doesn't answer his calls so she answered it\*\*\*

Phumi: babe

Thabo: love o sharp ( love you good)

Phumi: yah wena? (yeah you)

Thabo: nna ke grand (im good) so how's KZN

treating you

\*\*\*she cleared her throat\*\*\*

Thabo: keng?(what)

Phumi: umm im coming back to....tomorrow

\*\*\*right then Castiel walked in with two plates filled with food\*\*\*

Thabo: why, did something happen

\*\*\*he asked worried\*\*\*

Phumi: yeah ummm well Kazi is just too busy for me so ke bone gore ke no bowa once since im bored ( so I thought I should just come back since im bored)

Thabo: ooh ok, so you'll tell me gore o fitlha bo nako mang so ke tlo go pick(a) up neh ( what time you'll be arriving so I'll come pick you up ok)

Phumi: ok babe....i love you

\*\*\*Castiel clenched his jaws and he put the plates down and snatched Phumi's phone and dropped the call then he switched it off and threw the phone on top of the bed leaving Phumi shocked\*\*\*

Phumi: what the fuck Castiel!

Cass: your food

\*\*\*he said pointing at the plates\*\*\*

Phumi: why did you do that....that's my boyfriend you jerk!

Castiel: I don't like his voice...its fucken annoying

\*\*\*he took his plate and went to sit down and started eating leaving Phumi pissed off\*\*\*

-----

AT THE HOUSE RUU RENTED FOR THANDI

Mpilo: so the monster won't come again dad



Ruu: no, I chased it away last night and it will never bother you again ok

Mpilo: ok

\*\*\*he said smiling\*\*\*

Ruu: good now it's time for you to sleep my pilot

\*\*\*Ruu pulled the covers to his neck and kissed his forehead\*\*\*

Ruu: good night my pilot

Mpilo: good night dad

\*\*\*Mpilo yawned and closed his eyes then Ruslan went to Mpendulo's bed and sat on the edge\*\*\*

Ruu: so what happened today at school champ?

\*\*\*Mpe sighed and he swallowed hard sitting up\*\*\*

Mpe: he...he called me a disgusting faggot and I

punched him

\*\*\*he said looking down and Ruslan frowned getting angry\*\*\*

Ruu: he did what?.....wait why did he call you that

\*\*\*Mpe looked away\*\*\*

Ruu: im waiting champ

Mpe: cause.... cause I said Lunga Tshabalala is cute with nice pink lips

\*\*\*Ruslan frowned\*\*\*

Ruu: who the hell is that?

Mpe: he's a Tv presenter

\*\*\*Ruu sighed and he brushed his beard with his right hand\*\*\*

Ruu: champ tell me here, do you think you're gay

Mpe: no....ofcourse not...im not gay...how can

you ask me that

Ruu: ok now tell me here.....do you find other boys cute and handsome, other than that Tv presenter

\*\*\*he kept quiet looking down while playing with his fingers\*\*\*

Ruu: champ?

Mpe: no...no I don't

Ruu: don't lie to me Mpe

\*\*\*tears ran down his face and Ruslan sighed then he pulled the covers off him and he got up\*\*\*

Ruu: let's go talk somewhere private

\*\*\*Mpe hesitated a bit then he got off the bed and followed Ruslan out.....they went to his study room and he instructed that he sit down and Mpe sat down and Ruslan sat next to him\*\*\*

Ruu: im gonna ask you again champ....do you find other boys attractive....do other boys look cute and handsome to you

\*\*\*Mpe swallowed hard and tears continued to stream down his cheeks\*\*\*

Ruu: im waiting

Mpe: ye...yes

\*\*\*then he busted out with a cry and Ruslan sighed and pulled him closer and he sobbed on his chest\*\*\*

Ruu: its ok Champ...its ok I understand

\*\*\*He waited for him to calm down then he wiped his tears and sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: when did you notice that you liked boys instead of girls?

Mpe: two years ago....we...we were playing mantlwane ( a game of make-believe) at gogo and mkhulu's place and... and I was playing the

child while some boy was playing my father and some girl was playing my mother....a time came and "mother" told "dad" to bath me and when he started touching me pretending to bath me I felt some way, I felt a tingling feeling on my privates and I had a chilling feeling all over my body, my little guy was also hard

\*\*\*he kept quiet while looking down feeling embarrassed\*\*\*

Ruu: go on

Mpe: we went to "sleep" then "in the morning" the boy kissed the girl like you do with mom when you leave and I got angry.....i was angry that he kissed her that I even told them im not playing mantlwane anymore and I walked away

\*\*\*he sighed still embarrassed\*\*\*

Mpe: I didn't understand why I was feeling that way but I hated that girl ever since.....then one day we...we were changing for a soccer practice

at school and I saw a boy in his undies and that feeling came back again...I've been feeling like that ever since for other boys

\*\*\*he said with a low tone embarrassed with tears streaming down his face and Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: there's nothing wrong with you Mpe, just because you like other boys and not girls doesn't mean there's something wrong with you ok

\*\*\*he nodded sniffing\*\*\*

Ruu: well my son who's your elder brother is gay and I don't love him any less, in fact he's the best son a father could ask for

Mpe: he's....gay?

\*\*\*he asked shocked and Ruu nodded\*\*\*

Ruu: well his mother and her family are church people and they think he's possessed by a

demon that's why he's like that

Mpe: oooh

\*\*\*he said looking down\*\*\*

Ruu: but I taught him to ignore such people in his life cause people will always find something wrong to say about you.....even when you're not gay they'll say you're weak and lazy cause you don't have a job.....when you're not ready to have a child they'll say you can't have kids.....when you're working they'll say since you started working you think you're better than them and so on and so forth so just be you champ....be Mpe ok

\*\*\*Mpe nodded\*\*\*

Ruu: even if they say you're going to hell for being gay just tell them you'll meet them there cause judging another person is ungodly.....people will talk no matter what my boy and they also judge you no matter how

good you are so just ignore them

\*\*\*Mpe sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: remember avoid a fool in order to avoid noise and that only God can judge you Mpe and never let people bring you down, gays have a sharp tongue for such delinquent people so don't disappoint

\*\*\*Mpe laughed shyly and Ruslan smiled\*\*\*

Mpe: thanks pops, im glad mom chose you to be our dad

\*\*\*he said sincerely with tears in his eyes\*\*\*

Ruu: well it's the other way around actually...i chose her but don't tell her I told you that

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: you're my son Mpe and I'll always be here for you no matter what, you hear me

\*\*\*he nodded and Ruu looked at him smirking\*\*\*



Ruu: so you punched that boy huh

Mpe: well im sorry I broke his nose but he deserved it pops

\*\*\*they both laughed and Mpe wiped his tears feeling better that someone knows about the strange feelings he has for other boys\*\*\*

Ruu: well your mother is fuming and we both know tomorrow she's gonna swear at you and even whip your butt

\*\*\*Mpendulo sighed\*\*\*

Mpe: this baby is gonna be death of us pops no man

\*\*\*he said shaking his head and Ruu laughed.... well they told the boys about Thandi being pregnant\*\*\*

Ruu: leave my princess alone

\*\*\*then he got up and Mpe also got up\*\*\*

Ruu: ooh before I forget you're grounded for the

whole of this week since you're expelled... so no TV and PlayStation for you and im taking your phone too

Mpe: but pops....

\*\*\*he looked at him with a raise eyebrow and Mpe kept quiet\*\*\*

Mpe: yes sir

\*\*\*he said looking down\*\*\*

Ruu: good and all you'll do is study until you go back to school...and don't think I won't know if you're not, in fact we both know I'll know so don't dare me boy..... now go to bed

\*\*\*he walked away sulking\*\*\*

Ruslan: I love you

Mpe: yeah right

Ruu: what was that?

\*\*\*he asked with a threatening tone\*\*\*

Mpe: no...nothing.....I love you too

Ruu: thought as much

\*\*\*Mpe walked out sulking and Ruu chuckled shaking his head then he sighed and walked out and he went to their bedroom\*\*\*

Ruu: hey why are you still awake?

Thandi: I can't sleep im worried about Mpe....like how can he punch another child like that

\*\*\* she sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: he was wrong to get violent like that with that boy but I must say im proud of him

Thandi: Ruu!

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled and he got inside the covers\*\*\*

Ruu: what!

Thandi: I won't raise a violet child nna .....

never!

Ruslan: champ is not violent amor we both know that, im sure whatever that boy said to him is what ticked him off

Thandi: but still he shouldn't have hit him baby, look now he got expelled

\*\*\*she said with an emotional voice\*\*\*

Ruu: for a week only amor and I grounded him for this week so he knows what he did is wrong and he'll never do it again

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: so did he tell you what that other boy said to make him lose it like that

\*\*\*she said resting her head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around her and kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Ruu: no.... all he said is he's sorry he broke his nose but he deserves it

Thandi: he said that?

\*\*\*she said trying to get off him but he tightened the grip around her\*\*\*

Ruu: where you going.....just relax and stop stressing my princess please

\*\*\*she sulked and relaxed a bit\*\*\*

Ruu: I handled things now relax amor....i got this ok

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I know...im just worried about him Ruu

Ruu: and I understand amor but im here and im not going anywhere so let me play my fatherly role and handle this please

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: ok

\*\*\*she kissed his chest and he kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Ruu: can I get your opinion on something

Thandi: yeah

Ruu: how would you feel about Mpilo or Mpe being gay

\*\*\*she kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Thandi: I'd be disappointed but I won't love either one of them any less

Ruu: ok

\*\*\*they kept quiet a bit\*\*\*

Thandi: let me guess you think Mpe is gay

\*\*\*Ruu kept quiet a bit then he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah

Thandi: so he did tell you why he punched that boy right

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: yeah, the other boy called him a disgusting faggot

Thandi: wooh what!

\*\*\*she said getting up\*\*\*

Thandi: he called him what?

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Ruu: relax will you

Thandi: some piece of shit that got conceived by mistake just because the condom broke and a morning after pill didn't work called my son a disgusting faggot!

\*\*\*Ruu held his laugh\*\*\*

Ruu: calm down please.....champ punched him and even broke his nose so calm down

Thandi: nx o mo laile....e ko sa le a mo raga a be a thuba le maenyana a gae a dinonyane nx.....a re my son is a disgusting faggot.... wa nnyela nx.... entlek msoon wa mmae ( nx he did good....he should've kicked and crushed his small balls nx....he said my son is a disgusting

faggot .... he's full of shit nx....you know what his mother's cunt)

Ruu: amor please calm down....please

\*\*\* he pleaded and she breathed out then she laid back on Ruu's chest\*\*\*

Thandi: mxm Im no longer angry with Mpe, you should continue to punish him but im no longer disappointed with him that little fucker deserved it nx

\*\*\*Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: so what about him possibly being gay

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I have been suspecting that he might be by the things that he likes doing that are odd.....the way he acts and behaves sometimes have been giving me bad vibes you know....i was just hoping that its all in my head but I guess I was just in denial



\*\*\*she sighed sadly\*\*\*

Thandi: you know what..... lets talk about it tomorrow cause right now im just too pissed by that little mistake of a sperm that insulted my son to even think clearly

\*\*\*he chuckled a bit\*\*\*

Ruu: alright...i love you ok

Thandi: I love you too and thank you for going to talk to him instead of me cause I know I would've whipped his ass instead of trying to understand why he did what he did

Ruu: I told you I got you amor

Thandi: im one lucky girl neh

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: and im one lucky man

\*\*\* he pulled her face up and they kissed\*\*\*

-----

## AT LIMPOPO

\*\*\*kokwane was fast asleep when she heard someone or something whispering to her, at first she thought she was dreaming but even when she opened her eyes in the dark room she still heard the whisper not far from her\*\*\*

Voice: why?

\*\*\*the voice said whispering\*\*\*

Kokwane: ko yendlekala yini (whats going on)

\*\*\*she asked herself then she got out of bed and she went to switch on the light with the voice still asking "why" .....as soon as the light went on she screamed when she saw James standing there looking scary with blood coming out of his mouth, nose and eyes....his clothes were ripped and covered in blood\*\*\*

Kokwane: yho yho yho ngwino!

\*\*\*she screamed with her hands on top of her

head....she was even shaking\*\*\*

James: why?

\*\*\*he whispered again walking slowly towards her \*\*\*

Kokwane: yho Jamese....Jamese  
nikhomele....nikhomele xetokolo xa mena!  
( James...James forgive me...forgive me my  
grandchild)

\*\*\*she said shaking with her eyes popped  
out\*\*\*

James: why?

\*\*\*he continued whispering as he walked to  
her.....she screamed again but then she  
stopped and she held her chest with her eyes  
popped out and she fell on the floor still  
clinging to her chest until she stopped moving  
and she breathed out once then she lay there  
with her eyes and mouth opened without  
blinking then “James” disappeared....her

granddaughter then rushed inside her bedroom to check why her granny was screaming and she found her on the floor not moving\*\*\*

GrandD: kokwane...kokwane!

\*\*\*she wasn't moving and she wasn't blinking.....she screamed for help while shaking her granny but kokwane was gone\*\*\*

22

.

.

.

Phumi: what about our sleeping arrangements

Cass: what about them

Phumi: where will you sleep

\*\*\*Castiel started taking off his clothes\*\*\*

Phumi: what are you doing?

Castiel: im going to take a shower

\*\*\*He said also taking off his underwear and his semi hard dick dangled freely and Phumi gasped and she looked away\*\*\*

Castiel: you can look I don't mind

Phumi: piss off Castiel

\*\*\*He laughed and went to the bathroom and he took a shower.....after he was done he went back to bedroom naked and found Phumi lying on the bed\*\*\*

Phumi: do you have to walk around naked

Castiel: yeah....im trying to seduce you can't you see

Phumi: Amen!

\*\*\*he chuckled and started putting on lotion\*\*\*

Castiel: you can shower now since im done

\*\*\*she got out of bed and went to take her toiletry bag and pyjamas making sure she doesn't look at Castiel's naked body, she went

to the bathroom and closed then locked the door and Castiel laughed....after some time she came out looking fresh with her pjs on and she stood next to the bed\*\*\*

Phumi: Castiel we seriously cant share a bed

Castiel: why not

\*\*\*She gave him the “are you serious” look and he just shook his head\*\*\*

Castiel: stop being silly and get into bed....we are both adults Phumi

Phumi: you’re not even wearing a shirt man

Castiel: so?

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*She reached for two other standard pillows and she put them between them then she got in and faced the other way\*\*\*

Castiel: is all this necessary?

Phumi: im someone's girl so I can't let another man touch me

\*\*\*she said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Castiel: mxm imagine calling some boy with a small dick a man

\*\*\*He said to himself and Phumi turned\*\*\*

Phumi: askies?

Castiel: I wasn't talking to you

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*She laid on her side again and they stayed in silence the Castiel reached for his phone and called Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruu: do you know how late it is

Castiel: sorcerers don't sleep at night

Ruu: fuck you!

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: so what are you up to ?

Ruu: you called to ask me that shit?

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed voice\*\*\*

Castiel: im trying to keep my mind occupied so I don't fuck this fine ass sleeping next to me

\*\*\*He said looking at Phumi and he saw her moving a bit and he smirked\*\*\*

Ruu: really now Cass?

\*\*\*he said annoyed\*\*\*

Cass: yeah....she's refusing to give me some ass so what should I do man I mean my dick is rock hard and she put pillows between us, can you believe it

Ruu: you're so fucking unbelievable

\*\*\*He dropped the call and Cass called him again\*\*\*

Ruu: can you just stop calling me man!

Castiel: I can't man you are my brother so I need



to vent out

\*\*\*Ruu breathed out annoyed to the core by him\*\*\*

Ruu: fine vent so I can drop this fucken call

Castiel: damn i can tell that you're really annoyed cause you're busy cursing left right and center man

Ruu: im waiting Cass

Castiel: ok look the fine ass is Phumi

Ruu: the same Phumi you can't read

Castiel: yeah

Ruu: are you out of your damn mind man!

Castiel: maybe I mean I even tried walking around naked in front of her and she just won't budge man, am I losing my charm Madou

\*\*\*Phumi chuckled not believing what was happening with her back still facing Cass\*\*\*

Castiel: she's even laughing at me man I swear this girl is a demon.....no one has ever denied my charms man....she's heartless

\*\*\*Phumi gasped\*\*\*

Ruu: you just said that in front of her

Castiel: she's hurting my feelings so it's a tit for a tat

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed defeated\*\*\*

Ruu: you're an ass you know that right

Castiel: dude she's always rubbing her stupid boyfriend to my face and that shit hurts ok

Ruu: are you high or something Cass

Castiel: no, im just sexually frustrated and also emotionally frustrated by Phumi

\*\*\*Phumi turned and snatched Castiel's phone and dropped the call then she switched it off and threw it at him\*\*\*

Phumi: you're an asshole, no in fact you're a fucken jerk....you know what a jerk is even better o no ba mpya fela nx (you're just a dog)

\*\*\*Castiel just quickly pulled her and he smashed his lips on hers and he kissed her....she pushed him away from her and slapped him then he smirked looking at her angry face\*\*\*

Castiel: you know what they say about woman who slaps you or likes arguing with you, they actually like you

Phumi: I don't like you Castiel....you're like an annoying fly that refuses to die even after spraying it with doom

\*\*\*He chuckled and he pulled her closer and she tried to push him off but the magnitude of the tightness of his grip around her was shocking....she couldn't move an inch\*\*\*

Castiel: a fly huh?

Phumi: let go of me

Castiel: why do you hate me Phumi mmmh?

Phumi: I said let go

Castiel: I asked you a question

\*\*\*he said with a serious look on his face and she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Phumi: I don't hate you

Castiel: then what is it?

Phumi: you're just....annoying

\*\*\* He moved as quick as lightning and she was now lying on her back and he was on top of her, between her legs\*\*\*

Phumi: wha...how did we....

\*\*\*she had a shocked look on her face and Castiel shut her up with a kiss.... she tried to fight it but the kiss was too passionate for her to fight it, she ended up kissing him back and

soon they were kissing hungrily with Castiel running his hands on her body....they were both moaning through the kiss and it was clear that they were both feeling things.... within a speed of lightning he took her pyjama top off and moved to her breasts and he sucked on them like a hungry animal.....he wasn't rough but he wasn't gentle either so Phumi was feeling things she never felt before.....he then went back to her mouth avoiding her neck by all costs cause he knows that the moment his lips touch it he will lose it and he might feed on her.....

They continued to kiss with Castiel grinding on her...she was now soaking wet down there and her body was feeling thing she never felt before, his touch, his grab, his kiss and his deep throat groans drove her crazy..... within a speed of lightning again her pyjama shorts were off and she wasn't wearing any underwear\*\*\*

Phumi: how did....

\*\*\*he shut her up with a kiss and she felt his hand on her pussy and she gasped, then she felt his finger penetrating her and she moaned through the kiss.....his finger did the things until she came all over his hand screaming and he smirked and licked his finger clean as she watched then he kissed her making her taste herself....

She then felt the tip of his dick on her entrance and she froze and he whispered to her\*\*\*

Castiel: relajarse bello (relax beautiful)

\*\*\*he pushed the tip in and she gasped moving back cause she felt some pain\*\*\*

Castiel: where are you going?

\*\*\*he said pulling her back and he kissed her pushing all of it in and she closed her eyes as she felt her walls stretching\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck....

\*\*\*he said and she remembered a condom\*\*\*

Phumi: Cass.... a... condom

\*\*\*he ignored her and started moving....she bit her bottom lip with her eyes closed as he moved in and out of her slowly\*\*\*

Castiel: open your eyes bello (beautiful)

Phumi: shit you're huge man

\*\*\*she said opening her eyes and he chuckled still moving in and out of her slowly....he grabbed her butt cheeks so tight that she felt like he was gonna rip them off his body....he increased his pace going in and out of her and she moaned cause now she was feeling a mixture of pain and pleasure.....

He was now lost in her that even when he grabbed the bed sheet they got ripped apart, his lips found their way to his shoulder and his

fangs got long and he bit on her while pounding on her now and she flinched with pain.....he then pulled his fangs out still pounding on her and he blew air on the bite mark....

He then pulled out and she found herself laying on her stomach and he was behind her sliding in....she wondered when they changed position but she moaned out loud when he started to move\*\*\*

Phumi: fuck Cass...ooh shit

\*\*\*she said shouting as he rammed on her from behind....his grip on her waist was so tight that she felt like he was gonna rip it apart\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck...

\*\*\*he said as he went deeper and she screamed moving forward which caused his veined dick to slip out cause she felt like he poked her womb or something but he pulled her back to him\*\*\*

Castiel: where are you going bello



Phumi: you're in too deep Cass

\*\*\* she said with a shaky voice and he slid in and pushed in deeper and she screamed\*\*\*

Castiel: who's a man between us?

Phumi: gosh Cass

\*\*\*she said as he fucked her from behind\*\*\*

Castiel: I asked you a question Phumi.....who's a man between us?

Phumi: you...you are Cass...you are

\*\*\* he then pulled his dick out leaving only the tip in then he slammed inside her hard and she screamed again moving forward but he held her in place\*\*\*

Castiel: uzoyeka ukukhuluma nami ingathi uyehla eshlahleni siyazwana! ( you gonna stop talking to me as if you're climbing down a tree alright)

Phumi: ooh God... yes...yes

\*\*\*he pulled back and slammed in her again and she screamed again trying to move forward but his tight grip stopped her\*\*\*

Castiel: and you're gonna end things with that boy ok

Phumi: ye...yes

\*\*\*he then stopped moving\*\*\*

Castiel: good

\*\*\*he then pulled out and within a blink of an eye she was now laying on her back with Castiel's head between her thighs....he started eating her up and she gasped ....he ate her up like a pro to a point that he ended up coming hard all over his face screaming loud with her whole body shaking vigorously.... he then reached for the towel and cleaned his face then he positioned himself as she laid there numb and he slowly entered her and she moaned while he groaned.....

He was now fucking her hard with a fast pace groaning like an angry animal when suddenly the bed broke in the middle which made Phumi to scream but Cass didn't stop.....he went hard on her holding her waist tight going deeper with Phumi screaming her lungs out....within a blink of an eye they were now by the wall with Castiel holding her bridal style....her eyes popped out when she saw that they were now by the wall.....he put her down and turned her to face the wall and he bend her and he opened her legs using his knee\*\*\*

Castiel: balance yourself with your hands against the wall

\*\*\*she did that and he inserted himself slowly from the back and she clenched her jaws moaning with her eyes closed cause she was super sore by now....he started fucking her hard and she put both her hands against the wall so she doesn't bump her head against it cause the

force that was coming from behind was too much....she was screaming so hard while he groaned as he fucked her brains out.....he made sure he doesn't push too hard cause she might break her neck against the wall or something....

Anyway he grabbed both her shoulders and he fucked her hard as she screamed, she felt like her bones were cracking as his grip got tighter....he went on and on and on until he slammed into her and released all his juices in her groaning loud then he cursed\*\*\*

Castiel: FUCK....FUCK....FUCK!

\*\*\* he then pulled out and his juices ran down her thighs....he saw that she was about to pass out and he quickly caught her before she could hit the floor\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*In the morning Castiel moved a bottle that had some stinking potion on her nostrils to

wake her up and she made a face and she opened her eyes moving her face cause that thing smelled horrible.....he laughed when she covered her nose and he closed the bottle and sat next to her....she opened her eyes and she found him staring at her with a smile on his face...she tried to sit up but she groaned as she felt an excruciating pain all over her body\*\*\*

Phumi: ahhhhh!

\*\*\*she cried out\*\*\*

Castiel: hey take it easy

\*\*\*he helped her to sit up and he put pillows to support her back on the headboard... her eyes got filled with tears cause the pain she was feeling was intense\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God....why am I in pain like this

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: relax I'll give you something to make it

better but you have to eat first

\*\*\*he picked a bowl full of oats mixed with milk and sugar\*\*\*

Castiel: open up

Phumi: I'll...i'll feed myself

\*\*\*she tried to take the bowl from him but the moment she moved her hand she screamed as she felt sharp pain on her shoulder that even her hand started shaking\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God...ooh God

\*\*\*Castiel swallowed worryingly looking at her as tears continued to stream down her cheek...the bruises all over her body made him feel like shit for the first time ever....the last time he lost himself like this was the first time he made love to Juana \*\*\*

Castiel: eat up so I'll give you something for the pain please

Phumi: what happened to me Castiel.....what's wrong with me, why am in this kind of pain?

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: eat Phumi

\*\*\*he said and started feeding her....she ate sobbing, he wiped her tears off and continued to feed her....He then put the bowl down and reached for a glass that had one of Ruslan's mixed potion for extreme pain\*\*\*

Castiel: its bitter but it will help you ok

\*\*\*she nodded with puffy eyes and he helped her drink it....she made a face while drinking it but she managed to finish it all\*\*\*

Castiel: give it a minute or so and you'll start feeling better ok

\*\*\*She nodded then she moved her eyes around\*\*\*

Phumi: where are we?.....this...this is not the

bedroom we were in

Castiel: we broke the bed so I took you to this bedroom after you passed out

\*\*\*she frowned then she remember the bed breaking in the middle and the way she would find herself in different positions but she didn't remember moving at all worried her\*\*\*

Phumi: what...what are you?

\*\*\*she asked looking at him cause she knew no human could move that fast....and that bed that was broken in half was one of those king size beds that looked expensive, so for it to break like that wasn't a normal thing\*\*\*

Castiel: you wouldn't believe me if I tell and if I show you you might run out of here naked so let's just say im not a normal human being

\*\*\*he said with a nervous smile and she wanted to say something but he interrupted her\*\*\*



Castiel: try to move your hand and tell me if you still feel pain

\*\*\*she did slowly and she didn't feel any pain then she sighed with relief.....she touched her shoulders and she felt some numbness on the joints\*\*\*

Castiel: let me go and run you a bubble bath

\*\*\*he got up and went to the bathroom....all the 5 bedrooms had en-suites\*\*\*

Phumi: Phumi what have you gotten yourself into

\*\*\*She said to herself touching her nana and it was numb..... well the sex was good until he mysteriously took her to the wall and from there on she didn't enjoy anything, he was so deep and rough that all she felt was pain until she passed out\*\*\*

\*\*\* she was now inside a huge bathtub relaxing with her eyes closed, Castiel was sitting on top

of the toilet lid playing with his expensive manly ring that was on his pinky finger, she tried to get him to give her some privacy but he refused to leave....they have been quiet for some time now\*\*\*

Castiel: you do know what this means right?

\*\*\*she opened her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: what?

Castiel: what happened last night?

Phumi: what happened last night was just a once of thing Castiel

\*\*\*he looked at her with an intense look\*\*\*

Castiel: it means you're mine now Phumi and it also means you're gonna end things with that boy

\*\*\*she kept quiet frowning\*\*\*

Castiel: ngikhuluma nawe Phumelele ( im talking to you Phumelele)

Phumi: we can never work Cass

Castiel: and why not

Phumi: dude there's Kazi with a killer body and then there's me...

Castiel: what does her body got to do with us?

\*\*\*she sighed and rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: stop acting stupid Castiel.....im a big girl  
ok

Castiel: so?

\*\*\*he asked with a frown on his face\*\*\*

Phumi: you don't get it do you

Castiel: you're not big bello.... you're chubby  
with a nice ass and curves and plus to carry my  
child you gonna need all tha meat

\*\*\* her heart nearly stopped\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God we didn't use a condom

Castiel: mmmmh

Phumi: o re mmmmh Castiel

Castiel: relax im clean in fact I can't get sick or carry diseases and I'll buy you the emergency pill so relax

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Phumi: you better and us sleeping together will never happen again

\*\*\*he chuckled looking at her\*\*\*

Castiel: keep dreaming Bello

-----

\*\*\*It was now in the morning around 10 and they were driving to Phumi's home, Castiel did buy her the morning after pills even though he knew it won't work\*\*\*

Castiel: do you have any siblings

\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*

Castiel: so you're the only child huh

Phumi: yeah

Castiel: mmmmh just so im clear, you have only today to end things with that boy

\*\*\*she looked at him\*\*\*

Phumi: why would I do that

\*\*\*he looked at her briefly\*\*\*

Castiel: to save his life

\*\*\*her breath hinged\*\*\*

Phumi: what...what do you mean by that?

Castiel: cause I'll kill him if you don't and im not kidding bello

\*\*\*she swallowed hard....Phumi kept quiet thinking about what Castiel did to her in the early hours of the morning and what he just said while Castiel just whistled an ancient song his mother used to sing for him when he was still young.....anyway they arrived and Castiel parked outside the yard then he turned and

looked at her \*\*\*

Castiel: I'll come see you later ok

Phumi: you don't have to

Castiel: just stop ok....stop pushing me away

Phumi, im yours and you're mine end of the story....we are not doing this hide and seek game, I made my intentions clear to you.... I even marked you so we are bound together for life

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Phumi: marked me?

\*\*\*she said frowning and he reached for her top and pulled the sleeves down a bit and she had a bite mark on her shoulder, it was more like a scar of a bite mark\*\*\*

Castiel: this mark is more binding and more formal than a marriage certificate....whenever im in trouble it will have a burning and itchy like

sensation and whenever you're not ok i will feel it so we are bound for life bello so you better end thinks with that boy or I'll kill him cause i will never share you

\*\*\*he said looking into her eyes and she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Phumi: what are you Castiel.... I mean everything that happened since....

\*\*\*he shut her up with a slow passionate kiss\*\*\*

Castiel: all you need to know now is I'll never hurt you

\*\*\* he then stopped and frowned looking inside the yard\*\*\*

Phumi: what

\*\*\*she said looking where he was looking\*\*\*

Castiel: Kazi is here

Phumi: what...how did you know?

Castiel: come on lets go in

\*\*\*she grabbed his arm\*\*\*

Phumi: you're not getting out of this car Castiel

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: you're not going inside alone bello....i  
don't trust your cousin

Phumi: well I do so you should leave

Castiel: if she hurts you in any way I'll kill her so  
it's better we go in together

Phumi: Cass...

Castiel: it's not up for discussion

\*\*\*he opened the door and got out and she also  
got out with a displeased look on her face\*\*\*

Castiel: stop sulking it makes you look ugly

\*\*\*he said walking to her holding her traveling  
bag \*\*\*

Phumi: mxm fokof



Castiel: askies?

\*\*\*she showed him her middle finger walking inside the yard and he chuckled shaking his head...Phumi saw an unfamiliar car inside the yard and she breathed out praying and hoping that it doesn't belong to Kazi cause she wasn't ready to face her....anyway they walked to the door then it got opened and Kazi walked out and she frowned when she saw Castiel walking behind Phumi\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh God

\*\*\*she said to herself\*\*\*

Phumi: hi

\*\*\*she said avoiding eye contact when she got to the door\*\*\*

Kazi: what is he doing here?

Castiel: how is that any of your business?

\*\*\*Kazi chuckled and she looked at Phumi with

an angry look on her face\*\*\*

Kazi: wow.....so did you sleep with him?

Phumi: why are you here Kazi?

Kazi: I asked you a fucken question Phumelele, did he fuck you..... yebo noma cha ( yes or no)

Phumi: you know what excuse me I don't have time for this nx.....i had a long night so I need to rest

\*\*\*she turned and attempted to take her bag but Castiel stopped her\*\*\*

Castiel: lead the way

Kazi: I flew this side to come and apologize for what I thought was me overreacting only to find out I wasn't....how could you do this to me

Phumi?

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Castiel: what did she do?

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed\*\*\*

Kazi: im not talking to you wena

\*\*\*she said pointing at Cass\*\*\*

Castiel: well im talking to you....what is it that she did to you huh!

Kazi: she's a fucken jezebel.....she knew you were interested in me and she went after you

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Phumi: Kazi just because im keeping quiet doesn't mean im weak ok....ke tla o trapa wankutlwa ( I'll fuck you up you hear me).....osaka nyaka go ntlwaela blaen.....otla nnyela nx ( don't piss me off..... you'll shit yourself nx)

\*\*\*she said pointing at her\*\*\*

Phumi: o bitsa nna jezebel....nna Phumi ( you're calling me a jezebel....me Phumi)

Kazi: you knew he's interested in me Phumi yet

you went after him!

\*\*\*she said shouting at her\*\*\*

Phumi: hai fokof man Kazi.... ungazogidina wena ( don't bore me)....uzala ekhaya uzongtshela amasimba nje...amasimba okunuka! ( you come to my home to tell me shit..... smelly shit!)

\*\*\*she said pointing at her and Castiel pulled her closer \*\*\*

Castiel: calm down she's not worth it

Kazi: so you two slept together

Phumi: yes we did so uzoyenzani ( what will you do)

\*\*\*she said looking angry\*\*\*

Kazi: uyinja wena Castiel....uyirubbish nx ( you're a dog Castiel.... you are rubbish)

\*\*\*she said with tears in her eyes and Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: you're embarrassing yourself and upsetting my woman

\*\*\*she laughed bitterly\*\*\*

Kazi: did you just say your woman....you call this fat pig your woman

\*\*\*Phumi's eyes got filled with tears as what she just said hurt her\*\*\*

Castiel: what did you just say?

\*\*\*he said getting angry\*\*\*

Kazi: you heard me.....did she even tell you that she has a boyfriend and that she once had an abortion

\*\*\*Phumi's heart broke into pieces and tears rolled down her cheeks and Castiel clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Phumi: Kazi...

Kazi: you think you're all that but the truth of the matter is he's using you Phumi to make me

jealous and you fell for it...you're no...

Castiel: ENOUGH!

\*\*\*he roared then he took out his phone and searched for a number and dialed it\*\*\*

Menzi: hello

Castiel: you better come to Phumi's home and take this rubbish of yours before she loses her teeth

\*\*\*Kazi's eyes popped out\*\*\*

Menzi: who's this?

Castiel: I SAID COME AND TAKE KAZI BEFORE I TRAUMATIZE HER FOR LIFE AND STOP ASKING ME STUPID QUESTIONS!

\*\*\*he shouted\*\*\*

Menzi: who the fuck are you?

Castiel: a man whom she's claiming as hers..... better make sure she gets it through her empty

skull that I don't want her and I never will and if she insults Phumi ever again I'll rip her head off her shoulders and send it to you as a fucken souvenir

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and held Phumi's shaking hand\*\*\*

Castiel: lead the way

Phumi: why...why did you do that.....you know what happened Kazi, now why would you say all that?

\*\*\*she said looking broken but Kazi ignored her\*\*\*

Kazi: why...why did you do that Castiel?

\*\*\*she said looking freaked out\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck off!

\*\*\* He said with a pissed off tone and followed Phumi to the back of the house where her bedroom was....she searched for her keys

inside her bag and opened the door and she went inside but Cass stood still outside the door\*\*\*

MEANWHILE

\*\*\*Kazi's phone rang and she looked at it and it was Menzi.....she wiped her tears off and ignored it...it rang again and she ignored it again.....she went inside the house and took her hand bag and walked out, she opened the gate and drove out leaving it wide opened\*\*\*

Kazi: nx

\*\*\*\*her phone rang again and she continued to ignore it then a message came through from Menzi but she didn't open it she continued to drive away\*

23

.



.

.

\*\*\*After putting her handbag on the bed she went back to the door to take her traveling bag and found Castiel still standing there\*\*\*

Castiel: aren't you gonna invite me in

Phumi: you should leave

\*\*\*she said avoiding eye contact\*\*\*

Castiel: im waiting bello

\*\*\*she sighed and made way for him\*\*\*

Castiel: you have to say it for me to be allowed to enter inside bello

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Castiel: ask no questions and I'll tell no lies

\*\*\*she stopped herself from saying anything else cause she was drained emotionally by what happened with Kazi\*\*\*

Castiel: im waiting

Phumi: come in Castiel

\*\*\*he smiled and took the first step and when his leg went in he walked in and put the bag down and he scanned the room\*\*\*

Castiel: it's nice and cozy

\*\*\*she didn't say anything, she just went to the bed and sat down\*\*\*

Castiel: why did you abort?

\*\*\*she swallowed hard looking down\*\*\*

Phumi: I don't wanna talk about it

Castiel: what really happened Phumi?

Phumi: you need to leave....please

\*\*\*she said getting emotional\*\*\*

Castiel: did he force you to do it

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Phumi: you need to leave

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Castiel: did he force you, yes or no

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Phumi: it doesn't matter does it

Castiel: answer my question Phumi

Phumi: I didn't abort he killed my baby ok

\*\*\*she said with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Castiel: im listening

\*\*\*he said standing there with his hands inside his pockets\*\*\*

Phumi: I...i started bleeding and I was rushed to the hospital and when the tests came back they said I had abortion pills in my system

\*\*\*Castiel frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: I told them I didn't drink those pills but

they didn't believe me.....they said another one was even inserted inside my vagina and nothing like that wouldn't happen without my knowledge but I didn't abort my baby

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: who do you think killed your baby?

\*\*\*she looked up at him\*\*\*

Castiel: is it that boy Thabo

\*\*\*she shook her head no\*\*\*

Phumi: it was some guy I dated before Thabo...a couple of minutes before I started bleeding we got intimate and he...fingered me I think that's when he inserted the pill....i confronted him and he denied it but said he's glad I wasn't pregnant anymore cause he couldn't have a child with me cause he was engaged to be married to another woman

\*\*\*Castiel clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Castiel: son of bitch

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off voice\*\*\*

Phumi: and the worst part is him and his family spread rumours about me saying I tried to pin the pregnancy on him then I aborted cause he caught me on my lie of trying to pin the baby on him.....I was insulted and my name got tarnished because of it

\*\*\*she said crying\*\*\*

Castiel: is he still alive?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Castiel: what's his name?

Phumi: Kitso....Kitso Modiba.....i heard he got married but he's now divorced and he's on a wheelchair

\*\*\*he walked to Phumi and helped her stand up and he cupped her face and he perked her lips then he wiped her tears off and his phone

rang...he answered it\*\*\*

Castiel: Madou

Ruu: Cass where you at?

Castiel: I just dropped Phumi off.....what's up?

Ruu: I need your help with something

Castiel: ok im on my way

Ruu: alright

\*\*\*they ended the call and he looked at  
Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: I have to go I'll see you later ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he walked out then she sat  
down and sobbed painfully.....her phone rang  
and she wiped her tears and answered\*\*\*

Phumi: mama

Her mother: nono I forgot to tell you gore Kazi o  
ko ntlung ( at home) waiting for you

Phumi: I know

\*\*\*she sniffed wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Her mother: ohk....o shap nono? ( are you ok)

Phumi: yeah... im just tired

Her mother: ok rest I'll see you tomorrow

Phumi: ok shap

\*\*\*she dropped the call and she laid down and more tears gushed out\*\*\*

-----

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Ray: hey can we talk

\*\*\*he said peeking inside Mbali's study room\*\*\*

Mbali: yeah

\*\*\*she said putting her pen down and Ray walked in and he went to sit on the couch and Mbali got up and went to join him by sitting on top of him facing him..... he pulled her face closer and they kissed\*\*\*

Ray: I love you my flower

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Mbali: I love you too

\*\*\*then he sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: what's wrong babe

Ray: how do you feel about Cataleya?

\*\*\*she sighed and she looked down\*\*\*

Ray: my flower

Mbali: I don't know

Ray: talk to me my flower, I want to know how you really feel

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Mbali: I don't have a problem with her im just scared that you might love her more than you love Kalu

\*\*\*Ray frowned\*\*\*



Ray: what makes you think that?

Mbali: she doesn't have a demon inside of her

\*\*\*Ray sighed\*\*\*

Ray: look at me

\*\*\*she did\*\*\*

Ray: Kalu is my son, my heir and I love him with everything in me..... he has my blood running through his veins my flower and I wouldn't trade him for anything along with his crazy demon

\*\*\*she smiled and he perked her lips\*\*\*

Ray: I would never love him any less baby.... I may not show it but im glad that Saint protects you like that

Mbali: but he hurt you

Ray: cause I hurt you

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Ray: nothing changes my flower, we just gonna

have an added child into our small family and  
we're lucky the won't be any baby mama drama  
we gonna deal with

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Mbali: I know but what if she doesn't like me  
Ray

Ray: what's there not to like about you my  
flower

\*\*\*he said smiling and she blushed\*\*\*

Ray: she's gonna have a stylish mother....a  
brother that will protect her always....you're the  
only mother she will know my flower, I even  
think you'll be her favourite parent

\*\*\*she sighed and rested her head on his  
shoulder and he wrapped his arms around  
her\*\*\*

Ray: so should I go and bring her home

\*\*\*she kept quiet for a bit\*\*\*

Ray: if you're not ready to mother her its ok,  
she'll stay with gogo and mkhulu until you're  
ready

\*\*\*she raised her head and looked at him\*\*\*

Mbali: you'd do that for me

Ray: anything for you my flower

Mbali: she's your daughter Ray

Ray: and you're my wife

Mbali: mmmh that's thoughtful of you but my  
"just Ray" would get mad at me for making his  
daughter to stay with his grandparents

\*\*\*he grabbed her ass and he pulled her  
closer\*\*\*

Ray: your "just Ray" is a married man now and a  
father and my wife is crazy as they come and  
she's protected by a biased demon so i need to  
think before I act now

\*\*\*she laughed and he smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: I can't believe you just said that

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: it's the truth

\*\*\*she pushed him a bit laughing then she stopped and breathed out\*\*\*

Mbali: its ok you can go and bring her home.....she's your daughter and what is mine is yours, vice versa

Ray: you sure

\*\*\*she nodded and he smiled\*\*

Ray: thank you my flower you don't know how happy that makes me

\*\*\*they kissed for some time with Ray squeezing her ass.....after some time they broke the kiss and he smiled looking at her\*\*\*

Mbali: what

Ray: I love you

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Ray: and im sorry about everything that happened

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Mbali: im sorry too

Ray: the moment you start working im gonna give you four months to buy me a new car to replace the one you smashed

\*\*\*she raised her eyebrows looking at him\*\*\*

Ray: and another two months to buy me my expensive whiskey you poured down the drain

\*\*\*she held her smile then she breathed out\*\*\*

Mbali: not gonna happen.....if you want me to replace those things then you better pay up for breaking my heart by cheating on me and for laying a hand on me

\*\*\*he raised his eyebrows\*\*\*

Mbali: and my heart is priceless mister so I hope you're ready to be bankrupt

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: what the hell have I gotten myself into?

\*\*\*he said shaking his head with a smile on his face\*\*\*

Mbali: I ask myself that question everyday about you

Ray: what

\*\*\*he said tickling her and she laughed out loud trying to stop him\*\*\*

Mbali: Ray...st...stop...stop man....stop

Ray: take it back...take it back

\*\*\*he continued to tickle her until she farted and he stopped and he laughed at her as she also continued to laugh\*\*\*

Ray: wait did you just fart

\*\*\* she continued to laugh with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Mbali: that's what you get for ticking me

\*\*\*she said still laughing while wiping her tears off and he laughed too then he smiled looking at her\*\*\*

Ray: I love you Mrs me and thank you for agreeing to mother Cataleya

\*\*\*she wiped her tears off\*\*\*

Mbali: thank you for asking me and not forcing her on me

\*\*\*he smiled and they kissed\*\*\*

-----

## AT PHUMI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*it was now in the middle of the night and she felt something or someone cold holding her from behind and she jumped trying to get off the bed screaming but the grip around her got

tighter \*\*\*

Cass: relax it's me

\*\*\*she stopped moving with her heart beating fast, she was even shaking\*\*\*

Phumi: Ca...Cass?

Cass: yeah

\*\*\*she relaxed a bit\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh my God how did you...how...

\*\*\*he kissed the back of her neck\*\*\*

Cass: go back to sleep we will talk in the morning

\*\*\*she tried to get off his hold but she couldn't get off his tight grip\*\*\*

Phumi: let go man

\*\*\*he loosened his grip and she pushed his hand off her and sat up then she switched her side lamp on and he was shirtless lying next to



her\*\*\*

Phumi: how the hell did you get in

Cass: I have my ways

\*\*\*then he frowned looking at her\*\*\*

Cass: you've been crying

\*\*\*she looked away\*\*\*

Cass: I don't want you crying bello

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Phumi: why do you call me bello....i hope  
awungithuki Castiel ( I hope you're not swearing  
at me Castiel)

\*\*\*he chuckled looking at her\*\*\*

Cass: no im not and bello means beautiful so  
relax

\*\*\*she looked down\*\*\*

Cass: and yes you're beautiful

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*she got out of bed and she went to the bathroom and she did her business then the door opened while she was still busy \*\*\*

Phumi: what the fuck....dude!

\*\*\*he stood by the door, he was only on his briefs with his hard dick print visible....his dick was laying on his thigh with veins visible on top of the briefs and the tip of it was peeping outside the briefs and she looked down after swallowing hard\*\*\*

Cass: what did I say about calling me dude

Phumi: please give me some privacy Castiel tuu

Castiel: the only time I'll give you some privacy is when you take a shit or when you're on your periods

\*\*\*she looked up at him and he grabbed his hard dick with a smirk on his face\*\*\*

Cass: finish up he's ready for you

Phumi: im not gonna have sex with you

\*\*\*she said reaching for the tissue and she wiped herself and she got up and wore her pyjama pants then she flushed and washed her hands\*\*\*

Cass: I love the shape of your ass and curves bello...they are appetizing damn

\*\*\*she wiped her hands and stood there looking at him\*\*\*

Phumi: move I want to get out

\*\*\*he took his dick out of the briefs and he massaged it looking at her and she felt herself getting wet\*\*\*

Cass: its all yours bello

Phumi: will you just stop....please

\*\*\*he got close to her and he cupped her face\*\*\*

Phumi: Cass don't

\*\*\*she said moving back but he pulled her closer\*\*\*

Cass: im not using you...well I need a baby from you but other than that im into you bello

Phumi: did you just say you need a baby from me

Cass: yeah

\*\*\*she tried to get away from him but he held her tight\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll worship the ground you walk on if you make me a father Phumi.....that's all I want from you.... your heart, your loyalty and a baby it's all I need from you and not to make Kazi jealous....im too old for that shit

\*\*\*she looked away\*\*\*

Phumi: we don't know each other Castiel and for you to say you want a child from me is

ridiculous and im still Thabo's girlfriend

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Castiel: you're banned from saying that name Phumi and I hope it's the last time you say that stupid name when im around!

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him\*\*\*

Castiel: im not playing and before the end of tomorrow he better be your ex

Phumi: you can't force me to do that

Castiel: wanna bet

\*\*\*he said and his eyes changed colour and she swallowed hard looking scared and within a blink of an eye they were on top of the bed and they were both naked and Castiel was between her legs\*\*\*

Phumi: what the hell..... Cass we can't....

\*\*\*he slid in and she closed her eyes as he stretched her wide and he groaned\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*In the morning Castiel woke her up with a morning glory that was electrifying and after that he told her he'll come pick her up later in the day and he left, at least this time the only pain she felt was between her legs.....her pussy was sore from all the fucking and her inner thighs were painful... they went on the whole night and in the morning and she was exhausted...her phone rang and she reached for it and answered without looking at the screen\*\*\*

Phumi: hello

Voice: im still waiting for your call Phumi

\*\*\*she opened her eyes and she looked at the screen and the caller was Thabo\*\*\*

Phumi: ummm hey

Thabo: o sa le KZN le nou ( are you still in KZN)

Phumi: umm no ke mo gae ( no im at home)

Thabo: didn't I say call me so I can pick you up at the bus station

Phumi: ummm ma...mama and her boyfriend came to pick me up

\*\*\*she lied\*\*\*

Thabo: and why didn't you call me to tell me that

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: first of all Thabo if you really wanted to come and pick me up nkebe ongfounetse ( you would have called me) when I was still on the road but no you didn't....even last night you didn't call to check gore ke fitlhile or not ( I arrived or not) you were busy liking pictures tsa Sne on facebook with a heart reaction to care, the same Sne you once cheated on me with so o sa batla gombora ( so don't bore me)

Thabo: o nyako reng Phumi? ( what are you trying to say Phumi)

Phumi: bona mo motho wa Modimo ( look here) it's too early for this so shap re tla bolela later ( we will talk later)

\*\*\*she said with an annoyed voice and she dropped the call and put her phone on silence and she went back to sleep.....Thabo called again but his call wasn't answered\*\*\*

-----

BACK IN KZN

\*\*\* Kazi woke up when she felt someone shaking her and she found an angry looking Menzi standing next to the bed\*\*\*

Menzi: sit up we need to talk!

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone and she yawned sitting up\*\*\*

Kazi: can't it wait Menzi im still sleepy



Menzi: no it can't

\*\*\*he sat on the edge of the bed and he looked at her intensely and she looked away\*\*\*

Menzi: why did you drive all the way here alone and without letting me know

Kazi: I don't report to you Menzi

\*\*\*she said getting out of bed and she went to the bathroom leaving Menzi chuckling as he got angry....after some time she came back and sat on the bed looking down\*\*\*

Menzi: what's going on with you Ntandokazi

\*\*\*she kept quiet\*\*\*

Menzi: ngikhuluma nawe ( im talking to you) man Ntandokazi damn it!

\*\*\*she jumped when he shouted at her\*\*\*

Menzi: do you fucken know how worried I was...do you!

\*\*\*she swallowed feeling guilty now\*\*\*

Menzi: why did you ignore my calls and why did some fucker call me to tell me shit about you!

\*\*\*she continued to keep quiet which made Menzi's anger to hit the roof top and he got up and took off his belt and he wrapped half of it around his hand and Kazi quickly got off the bed looking scared\*\*\*

Kazi: wenzani Menzi ( what are you doing Menzi)

Menzi: im talking to you and you're ignoring me, ungenza islima Ntandokazi ( you are making me a fool Ntandokazi)...ngiyisiwula sakho mina? ( am I your fool?)

\*\*\*he said sounding angry and Kazi got really scared\*\*\*

Kazi: cha (no)

Menzi: then answer my fucken questions!

\*\*\*she stood there shaking\*\*\*

Menzi: who the fuck was that guy that called me!

Kazi: i...i don't know

Menzi: im gonna ask you for the fucken last time who was that guy

\*\*\*he said taking a step closer and tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Kazi: his...his name is Castiel and.... and he's my ex

-----

AT HEATH AND NALEDI'S HOUSE

\*\*\* Naledi was in the laundry room busy sorting out their dirty clothes for washing when Heath walked in with Ike in his arms\*\*\*

Heath: you still don't want the house help doing our laundry obi m

\*\*\*she looked at him and she smiled when she saw Ike\*\*\*

Naledi: hey baby

\*\*\*Ike smiled when he saw his mother\*\*\*

Naledi: yeah she might be old but she has unmarried daughters so you'll never know

\*\*\*Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: you're crazy you know that

Naledi: and you love me like that akere onye m

\*\*\*Heath blushed then Naledi's phone rang and she frowned cause she didn't recognize the numbers\*\*\*

Heath: who is it?

Naledi: I don't know

\*\*\*she answered it\*\*\*

Naledi: hello

Man: Hello....Naledi?

Naledi: yes who's this?

Man: ke Kitso's uncle

\*\*\*her face relaxed and she looked at Heath and put the phone on loud speaker\*\*\*

Naledi: malome lekae ( how are you uncle)

\*\*\*uncle sighed\*\*\*

Uncle: eish ngwanaka go gobe ( my child things are bad)

Naledi: what's wrong malome

Uncle: ke Kitso ngwanaka ( is Kitso my child)

Naledi: umm what happened, is he ok?

\*\*\*she said looking at Heath and the uncle sighed\*\*\*

Uncle: he's dead....he was found beheaded

Naledi: what?

\*\*\*she said shocked and Heath frowned\*\*\*

Uncle: his body was found outside the door of his house and his...his head was found pinned

on top of the gate..... the outside wall of his house was written in blood and go kwetswe ( and it was written) “ a life for a life ”

Naledi: oh my God

\*\*\*she said with a shocked voice and Heath took her phone from her and gave her Ike\*\*\*

Heath: uncle its Heath....o re what happened?

\*\*\*he said walking out of the laundry room\*\*\*

.

24 ( I TRIED WITH XITSONGA GUYS)

.

.

.

AT RUSLAN'S HOUSE

\*\*\*the guys were chilling while drinking, Heath and Jabu where there too and they were introduced to Castiel who ended up showing

them his fangs to prove that he's a real vampire and they were shocked....Cass caught Jabu staring at him as they continued drinking and chatting\*\*\*

Cass: what is it...why are you looking at me like that?

\*\*\*he asked Jabu\*\*\*

Jabu: so vele vele o vampire lepara? ( so you're a real vampire man?)

\*\*\*Heath chuckled shaking his head cause he knew he just started, well after seeing La Parca with his own eyes he now believes that even mermaids are real \*\*\*

Jabu: and lethaima la gao ke Dracula.... wa bona ko dimoving Dracula o kgonna go chenchane nne mamanthane so le lethaima la gao le kgona go nna mamanthane? (and your father is a Dracula.... you see in movies Dracula can change and become a bat so does your father

also turn to a bat?)

\*\*\*Heath and Ray laughed while Ruu just shook his head smiling cause he could tell that Jabu said something foolish\*\*\*

Heath: really Jabu?

Jabu: keng.....e monna die man ke vampire joh....senwa madi so ke curious nje ( what.... man this guy is a vampire.... a bloodsucker so im just curious)

\*\*\*Heath continued to laugh with tears coming out of his eyes\*\*\*

Cass: ok enough man....can we just stick to English or isiZulu assomblief

Jabu: Mr vampire sir wa bona sengamla a ke se frostane van die one one wa bona and ka se Zulu well dai deng ke batlang go go botsisa yona yo tlhoka that thing man wabona....mara sa wara Mshikaro o tla translat(a) ( Mr vampire sir you see I don't like English that much you



see and when it comes to the Zulu language well what I want to say wont have that thing man you see....but don't worry Mshikaro will translate)

\*\*\*Heath was busy laughing while wiping his tears off\*\*\*

Ray: you two need to learn Pretorian Tswana to hang out with him cause English is a no no to him

Heath: and it's not because he can't speak it or understand it, he's just a well-educated township boy

Ray: you can take Jabu out of the township but you can never take the township out of Jabu

\*\*\*They laughed except for Cass\*\*\*

Cass: well it's a shame cause I can also choose to speak French or Spanish with you Ray and Ruu cause basically English is not my father's tongue

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: Big Ray o tla translat(a) mos ( Big Ray you'll translate)

\*\*\*they laughed some more\*\*\*

Cass: mxm

Jabu: so Castino... mmmmh Cass ala Custard...Castor oil mpya ya ka ( my dog)... wena wa go pyegisa batho goet ( you who gives people diarrhea) , was your Father a mamanthane? ( a bat)

\*\*\*Ray and Heath busted out with loud laughter\*\*\*

Ruu: what's a mama....whatever he said

Heath: a flying bat

\*\*\*He said laughing and Ruu laughed\*\*\*

Cass: so you're Mr funny guy heh nja

Jabu: not really mfowethu ka zama nje ( not

really my man I just try)

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

Cass: mxm

Jabu: on a serious note nja yam was your father a mamanthane like the movies show?

Cass: no

Jabu: so dai moerskonds ( so those assholes) are lying to us

Cass: yep

Jabu: mesono ya bo mmabona nx ( their mothers' cunts)

\*\*\*Heath and Ray laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: a vampire heh?

\*\*\*Cass just looked at him\*\*\*

Jabu: so you are like bo Edward and whatnots ba se Twilight or na bo bayasinyela nje ( they are also shitting on us)

\*\*\*Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: im a hybrid man

Jabu: hybrid neh

\*\*\*Cass nodded and Jabu turned to Heath\*\*\*

Jabu: keng hybrid? (what is a hybrid)

\*\*\*he whispered to him and Ray heard him and both him and Heath laughed\*\*\*

Heath: he's a half human half vampire

Jabu: then why a sa re byalo ( then why didn't he just say that)

\*\*\*more laughter... he then looked back at Cass who was finding it hard to even get mad at him\*\*\*

Jabu: so how does a human blood taste like?

Cass: like your favourite smoothie

\*\*\*he said smirking\*\*\*

Jabu: mmmmh

\*\*\*he said nodding\*\*\*

Cass: so how does it feel like being a comedian?

Jabu: like your favourite smoothie

\*\*\*loud laughter erupted and Cass chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Heath: wa sika wena Jabu ( you're sick Jabu)

\*\*\*he continued to laugh\*\*\*

Cass: how do you survive with this dude man?

\*\*\*he asked Ray\*\*\*

Ray: he's a breath of fresh air man, there's none other like him

\*\*\*Cass just shook his head\*\*\*

Jabu: on a lighter note....baby daddy ya Mshikaro is dead

Ray: what...who got to him Ezeh

Heath: I have no idea....but damn whomever he fucked with fucked him up pretty bad

Jabu: ba mo shapile ka slagpan ( they chopped his head off)....tlhogo kwa and mmele kwa ( his head was over there and his body was also over there)

\*\*\*he said using hand gestures as he spoke\*\*\*

Ray: damn

Heath: then his head was hung on his gate and a message was written on the outside of the wall of his house with his own blood

Cass: a life for a life

\*\*\*they looked at him\*\*\*

Ruu: what did you do Cass?

Cass: he deserved it

\*\*\*he said coldly\*\*\*

Heath: whoah wait....you're the one who did that to him

Cass: like I said he deserved it

Ruu: alors vous allez tuer des gens maintenant  
(so you're going around killing people now)

\*\*\*He spoke in French\*\*\*

Jabu: translate Mashikaro

\*\*\*Heath didn't say anything he just looked at  
Cass\*\*\*

Cass: what....you like him?

Heath: no but he was my daughter's biological  
father man

Cass: you're there for her so she won't miss him

Heath: that's beside the point man and you  
know it

Cass: look here Heath im not sorry I killed him  
and if I had Madou's powers I would wake him  
up for a couple of seconds and kill him again

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Ray: what did he do?

Cass: he killed Phumi's unborn child

\*\*\*they all kept quiet\*\*\*

Ruu: which Phumi

Cass: my Phumi

Ray: you have a Phumi?

Cass: yeah....Kazi's cousin

Ruu: wait a minute, since when do you kill for her Cass....just because you can't read her thoughts so you decided to kill for her

Cass: no, I fucked her and marked her so she's mine now

Ruu&Ray: WHAT?

Cass: stop being dramatic man

Ruu: are you out of your mind Cass!

Cass: no, I think she's the one so I marked her

\*\*\*Ruu got up and he paced around and Jabu sat back and he observed\*\*\*



Ray: how can you mark a woman you know nothing about Cass, since when are you this careless

Cass: she's the one

\*\*\*he said with a calm voice\*\*\*

Ruu: just like you thought Juana is the one right

Cass: really man?

Ruu: yes really..... vous savez parfois je me demande si nous sommes lies ( you know sometimes I wonder if we're really related)

Cass: je me demande aussi que parfois (I also ask myself that sometimes)

Ray: Ruu calm down

Ruu: no.... my father died because of his carelessness and now he doing the same shit because of a woman and he's putting all of us in danger

Heath: how so?

Ruu: she could be working with the fucken brethren for all we know

Jabu: konje they are those dangerous motherfuckers neh Big Ray

Ray: yeah

Jabu: mmmmh

Cass: well she's pregnant and she's marked so deal with your fears Madou

Ray: preg....so you didn't even use protection?

Cass: why would I?

Ray: CAUSE YOUR SPERMS ARE TOXIC THAT'S WHY!

\*\*\*Cass breathed out shaking his head and he took a sip of his drink for the first time since it was poured for him\*\*\*

Jabu: senwa madi sa go nwa byala....mmmh interesting ( a bloodsucker that drinks alcohol.... mmmmh interesting)

\*\*\*Heath held in his laugh\*\*\*

Ruu: I can't believe this

Cass: if she's who you fear she is then we will let the baby kill her so you have nothing to worry about

Ruu: what if she tells the brethren your location Castiel have you thought about that

Cass: SHE'S NOT WITH THE BRETHREN!

\*\*\*he said shouting\*\*\*

Ruu: AND HOW DO YOU KNOW THAT?

\*\*\*he shouted back\*\*\*

Cass: CAUSE I DO.....ENTLEK WHAT'S YOUR PROBLEM MADOU HUH...WHAT?

Jabu: a re "entlek" Mshikaro

\*\*\*he whispered to Heath\*\*\*

Ruu: you are putting our lives in danger again that's my problem Castiel.....whenever there's a

pussy involved you lose your fucken senses and I have to pay for it...i even lost a father because of your shit!

\*\*\*Cass got up\*\*\*

Cass: FUCK YOU MAHAMADOU.....FUCK YOU YOU HEAR ME....FUCK YOU!.....DAD DIED BECAUSE OF YOU AND YOUR FAILURE TO LET SHIT GO..... YOU WENT AFTER THE BRETHERN AFTER I BETRAYED YOU THAT'S WHAT KILLED DAD!

Ray: guys calm down

Ruu: what did you say

Cass: you fucken heard me..... you didn't have to go after them I was the one that betrayed you and not them and now they are after us cause you killed their leader so stop pointing figures as if you are innocent in all this!

\*\*\*Ruu rushed to Cass and grabbed him by his neck\*\*\*

Ruu: what did you just say to me?

Ray: you two better stop this nonsense now!

\*\*\*he said getting up\*\*\*

Cass: you wanna fight me now Madou huh...  
you wanna fight me?

Ruu: you piece of shit.....we're in this mess  
because of you and you have the fucken nerve  
to put the blame on me!

Cass: im your older brother Ruu so you better  
think long and hard before you cross the line!

Ray: I SAID YOU TWO BETTER STOP THIS  
NONSENSE NOW!

\*\*\*he roared and Cass grabbed Ruu's hand and  
he pushed him away with force and Ruu  
stumbled back almost losing his balance\*\*\*

Heath: no man guys....

Ruu: rapelos dispaesus!

\*\*\*he said with his open hand pointing at Cass and Cass flew across the room and he landed on top of the dining room table breaking it in the process\*\*\*

Jabu: THE FUCK!

Heath: damn

Ray: fuck

\*\*\*Then Cass quickly got up from the broken table and he screamed with an angry voice turning to a full flashed vampire in the process and within a blink of an eye he was next to Ruslan grabbing him by his neck up in the air with Ruu's legs floating on air\*\*\*

Ray: Cass stop it!

\*\*\*He squeezed hard and Ruslan started struggling to breath then his eyes turned black and Cass quickly let go of him as he felt electrocuted\*\*\*

Cass: you son of gun!

\*\*\*by now Jabu and Heath were standing afar shocked by what they were witnessing\*\*\*

Ruu: you wanna take me on bloodsucker?!

\*\*\*he said with a scary voice with his eyes still black in colour while Castiel was still in his vampire form\*\*\*

Cass: fuck you wizard!

Ruu: remanibus pelpaleusis!

\*\*\*a couch got lifted up in the air and it came flying to Cass and Cass punched it in the middle and it broke into half and he quickly took half of it and threw it at Ruslan and Ruu crossed his arms protecting his face and also blocking it and it hit him and fell in front of him..... then he charged at Cass and a fight broke out....punches were thrown from both sides...it was more of a fist fight but they were moving at a speed that Heath and Jabu couldn't follow\*\*\*

La Parca: ENOUGH!

\*\*\*his bone shattering voice roared filling the whole house with the floor shaking and voices of tortured soul being heard all over and the brothers stopped fighting\*\*\*

Jabu: yoh mmawe re ya diheleng! (we are going to hell!)

\*\*\*he said stumbling back while Heath stood there frozen with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Cass: he started it!

\*\*\*He said as he went to his human form instantly and Ruu's eyes changed back to its normal colour..... as for Ray only his face changed, it was just a skull and on the hole were the eyes are supposed to be, blazing fire was seen...then Ruu and Cass got down on one knee facing down\*\*\*

Ruslan: apologies great one



\*\*\*then La Parca turned and looked at Jabu and Heath and they slowly went down on their knee shaking with fear and La Parca turned back to the brothers\*\*\*

La Parca: ብዙ ጊዜያቸውን እንዲያሳልፉ እናደርጋለን, ብዙ ደንቦችን ስለጣሱ, እና ተወዳጅ ተወዳ (you are now using your powers to fight in front of humans)

\*\*\*he said with his scary voice and it was as if two men were speaking at the same time with different voices... its some scary shit im telling you\*\*\*

Ruu: apologies great one

Cass: whatever he said great one

La Parca: ጊዜው ገና አይደለም እነሱ በዝርዝር ላይ አይደሉም (I see you are tired of existing in this world)

Cass: what....nooo....your grace I have a baby on the way so no we are not

\*\*\*Ruu looked at Cass with clenched jaws with a deadly look on his face\*\*\*

La Parca: እምም ሞትን ያታልላልይህ ደግሞ ሞትን ያታልላል ( you impregnated a human without her consent)

Cass: ummm well I believe she's my mate so couples get intimate and babies are made your grace

\*\*\* then out of the blue Cass felt like he was being strangled and he held his neck choking\*\*\*

La Parca: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነውእናም እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው ( don't act smart with me creature I can end you here and now!)

\*\*\*Cass continued to choke and Ruu looked down with his eyes closed praying that he doesn't kill him as for Heath and Jabu they saw Cass struggling to breathe on the floor while holding his neck but no one was holding him and they shook with fear and that's when Mad

dog took over and Heath stopped shaking, he just looked on with a straight face\*\*\*

Ruu: ይህ...ይህደግሞ ሞትን ያታልላል..... ሆንየአባ  
(for...forgive him great one...please)

\*\*\*La Parca turned and looked at Ruu and he released Cass and he coughed hysterically holding his neck\*\*\*

La Parca: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና ሁለንም ኃጢአታቸውን ካሌተሊከቡ.... ጊዜው ሲመጣውቶ ነፍሴ እመጣሁሁታገኙኛለችሁ ታገኙኛለችሁምያ ስፍራው በጣም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ (since you're the matured one now listen here and pass this message to him....he better make sure that human he impregnated doesn't get killed by his creature she's carrying like the others that did or im taking him to hell and Belial will be his torturer)

\*\*\*Belial is one of the princes of hell.....Ruu swallowed hard\*\*\*

Ruu: ላይ የእርምት ችዋእት ላይ ቢያስቀምጡትም እንኳ እያደርጉትም ሰዓቱ ሲመጣ ጥሩ ጋኔን ይፈጥርለታል..... በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ, በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል (I'll make sure it doesn't come to that great one..... what's so special about her great one, if you don't mind me asking)

La Parca: በጣም ጥሩ የሆነ መሰብሰብ ያለባቸው ነፍሳት አሉ ጊዜው ገና አይደለም, እነሱ በዝርዝሩ ላይ አይደሉብዙ ጊዜያቸውን እንዲያሳልፉ እናደርጋለን, ብዙ ደንቦችን ስለጣሱ, እና ተወዳጅ ተወዳጅ ከሆኑት ሰው ጋር እምቢተኞች ናቸው ጊዜው ሲመጣ ለነፍሳቸው እመጣለሁማው አለም ውስጥ ( she belongs to the man upstairs and you know how protective he is of his children and since your half dead brother here decided to mix darkness and light and she ends up dying because of his creature she's carrying then I'll be permitted to come and take him to hell kicking and screaming)

\*\*\*Ruslan swallowed hard\*\*\*

Cass: what about Ray and Madou.....they also

have women in their lives so does that mean they are spared unlike me the "creature"?

\*\*\*Ruu gave him a deadly look\*\*\*

La Parca: በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል ( they know where they are going when the time comes)

\*\*\*Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Cass: ok so what if Phumi gives her consent that I should change her then?

Ruu: will you just shut up!

\*\*\*he said through his teeth\*\*\*

La Parca: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው እናም ( then she'll belong to the dark side)

\*\*\*then he turned to Heath aka Mad Dog and Jabu and Jabu peed on himself a little\*\*\*

La Parca: እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው (what about them)

Ruu: በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ

ይውላል እምመጤ ይህ ጥሩው አስማተኛ ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲያስተምረው ስለዚህ ሊወለድ የ ( they are family and they know about Raymond and about me and also about Castiel and they don't have a problem with what we are or what we have great one)

La Parca: mmmmh

\*\*\*He looked between Cass and Ruu\*\*\*

La Parca: ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ .....ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምት ኸዋእት ላይ ቢያስቀ (I better not come back for this nonsense again....you know the rules and they are there for a reason)

\*\*\*then the floor shook and he was gone and Ray fell to the floor and Ruu rushed to him\*\*\*

Ruu: Ray...hey man.... hey

\*\*\*He said shaking him\*\*\*

Ray: mmmmh

\*\*\*he groaned and opened his eyes slowly\*\*\*

Ray: damn....

\*\*\*he said holding his throbbing head whilst sitting up and Mad Dog immediately went to sleep and Heath blinked fast as he looked around confused, he then remembered what happened before Mad Dog took over and he jumped standing up looking around\*\*\*

Cass: he left relax

\*\*\*He said as he sat on his ass on the floor\*\*\*

MEANWHILE

\*\*\*for a couple of minutes now Thandi was outside the door trying to open the door but it just wouldn't budge.....she knocked shouting for Ruu to open the door for her but they couldn't hear her....she tried opening for the last time and it opened\*\*\*

Thandi: damn it....Ruu needs to check this

stupid door something is wrong with it

\*\*\*she got in and closed it and she walked in and then she froze when she saw the state her living room was in\*\*\*

Thandi: THE HELL!

\*\*\*they quickly looked and froze when they saw her....she was breathing heavily with a deadly frown on her face\*\*\*

Ruu: baby...amour you're here

\*\*\*he said getting up and moving towards her slowly\*\*\*

Thandi: what... happened to the lounge Ruslan?

Ruu: ummm amour please calm down and let us explain

\*\*\*Jabu got up and he walked to her with a disturbed look on his face\*\*\*

Jabu: poo ya gao le broer ya gae ne ba tlisitse  
Game of Thrones season 9 episode 1 kamo



that's why go le so and as for nna ke tlhoka  
Amo a nrapelle ka di tongues because of nthwe  
ke e boneng so shap ( your bull and his brother  
brought Game of Thrones season 9 episode 1  
in here that's why its like this and as for me I  
need Amo to pray for me in tongues because of  
what I saw so bye)

\*\*\*He walked out and Castiel got up and  
followed him out and Thandi looked at Ruslan  
as if she was about to jump on him and choke  
him to death\*\*\*

-----

## AT PHUMI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*She was resting....her body was tired and  
heavy and she also had light cramps on her  
lower stomach so after cleaning, eating and  
bathing she decided to rest a bit....she woke up  
when she heard a knock on the door, she huffed  
and got out of bed and went to see who it

is....she found Thabo standing there holding a box of pizza and she sighed then she made way for him to enter, he walked in and put the pizza down and sat on the edge of the bed\*\*\*

Thabo: hi

Phumi: hi

\*\*\*she said standing by the door with her arms folded across her chest\*\*\*

Thabo: e tla mo babe ( come here babe)

Phumi: ke shapo mo ( im fine here)

Thabo: I should be the one who's mad Phumi and not you

Phumi: did you sleep with her?

\*\*\*Thabo frowned\*\*\*

Thabo: who?

Phumi: Sne....did you sleep with her?

Thabo: ska batlompotela( don't piss me off)

Phumi ok....a ka tlela masepa ao mo ( I didn't come here for that nonsense), I came to see my girl so stop that nonsense and bring drinks re tlo ja ( so we can eat)

\*\*\*Phumi chuckled getting angry\*\*\*

Phumi: I see you think I can't live without neh....you think no other man finds me attractive just because I've been faithful to you all this time neh

Thabo: you haven't cheated on me cause you love me too much and ga ona sebeta seo ( you don't have the nerve to do so)

Phumi: o sure about that

\*\*\*She said with a face full of attitude and Thabo frowned at her\*\*\*

Thabo: yah ke sure now are you done being crazy....e tla o tlompha one before re ja ( come and give me some before we eat)

Phumi: DID YOU SLEEP WITH SNE  
THABO....YES OR NO

Thabo: don't raise your fucken voice when  
you're talking to me Phumi otnyela soos  
nou( you'll shit yourself right now)

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Phumi: answer my question Thabo.....you used  
to cheat on me with her and I forgave you and  
you promised gore you'll stay away from her  
and now you're liking dipicture tsa gae on  
facebook with a heart!

Thabo: and what if I am mmmh.....then what?

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and she stood  
there with tears in her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: 10 years Thabo...10 fucken years and  
you're still unfaithful to me

Thabo: Phumi listen here I didn't come here for  
this ok

Phumi: mmmh o tlile mo to fuck me then o tsamaye right?!

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Thabo: you're my woman o nagana gore ko ja mang if not wena ( you're my woman so who do you think I'll fuck if not you)

\*\*\* tears ran down her cheeks and she wiped them\*\*\*

Phumi: do you even still love me Thabo...do you?

\*\*\*he sighed annoyed\*\*\*

Thabo: you know what I'll come back when you're done with your periods cause clearly you're moody

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed voice getting up\*\*\*

Phumi: you know what...im done Thabo....im fucken done

Thabo: done with what

Phumi: this....its over...you can go and fuck whomever you want in peace and I'll do the same!

Thabo: you're dumping me...wena

\*\*\*he said chuckling\*\*\*

Phumi: get out!

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Thabo: you're nothing without me Phumi, without me you're just a fat crazy bitch that guys only want to fuck because of that tight pussy you have and nothing else

\*\*\*tears filled her eyes and she let them fall\*\*\*

Phumi: I may be a fat girl but at least a kena pipi ennyane ya nonyane ( at least I don't have a small dick) nx and there's also a man not a boy like you who has already eaten this pussy and his dick is juicy, huge and satisfying nx

\*\*\*she said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Thabo: o reng...wa feba Phumi....osfebe nou Phumi? ( what did you say.....you're whoring around now Phumi....you're a whore now Phumi?)

\*\*\*he said moving closer to her and she got scared but she stood her ground still angry\*\*\*

Phumi: the only reason I stayed with you this long and tolerated your shit is because I love you and not because you satisfy me sexually so fuck you Thabo wankutlwa fuck you with your small dick nigga!

\*\*\*a slap landed on her cheek and she put her hand where she was slapped looking at him\*\*\*

Phumi: you...slapped me Thabo

Thabo: o nagana gore wankitsi wena sfebe neh....so o botsa nna masepa oa? ( you think you know me you bitch.....so you're telling me that shit?)

\*\*\*he said slapping her again\*\*\*

Thabo: o botsa nna masepa ao! ( you're telling me that shit!)

\*\*\*He said slapping her continuously as she cried out loud hiding her face with her arms and the moment he stopped and he grabbed her by her arms pulling them from her face she kneed him between his legs and he let her go and held his privates groaning and Phumi punched him hard and he fell on the floor and she got on top of him and started hitting him screaming\*\*\*

Phumi: fuck you Thabo wankutlwa fuck you mpya ke wena ( you dog)

\*\*\*she then got off him and she kicked him on his face and she rushed to the door and as soon as she opened it she felt him grabbing her leg and she jumped screaming\*\*\*

Phumi: ntlogele...ntlogele! ( let go of me....let go of me!)

\*\*\*she said kicking him and he finally let her go



and she ran outside crying and Thabo managed to get up and he chased after her\*\*\*

Thabo: e tla mo jou moerskond.....o raga nna wena....o tlo nnyela! ( come here you asshole....you kicked me.....you'll pay!)

\*\*\*as soon as she turned around the house going to the front yard she was met by Castiel rushing towards her and she ran and stood behind him still crying and when Thabo showed up he stopped\*\*\*

Castiel: you have 10 seconds to leave this place in one piece!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Thabo: YEH WENA PHUMI!

Castiel: 10....9...8....7....

-----

AT GIYANI

Uncle: what did the sangoma say?

Jackson: I hope its good news he told you...i  
could use with some good news now

\*\*\*the aunt sighed sitting down\*\*\*

Aunt: well its bad news actually

Uncle: what did he say?

Aunt: that we messed with a very dangerous  
man

Jackson: heh?

Aunt: apparently he's coming after us one by  
one

\*\*\*uncle stood up\*\*\*

Uncle: who is it...hi mani?!

Aunt: apparently we know him

\*\*\*she said looking at them\*\*\*

Jackson: we have messed with so many people  
aunty

Aunt: na swi tivha ( I know) man Jack but we

need to protect ourselves since the person that made sure we are protected is dead.....that son of a bitch killed my mother and he's gonna pay once I find out who he is!

\*\*\*then Jackson received a call and he answered, it was Joe's wife\*\*\*

Jack: Tinyiko

Tinyiko: its Joe...he...he

\*\*\*she cried\*\*\*

Jack: what's wrong with my brother Tinyiko?

Tinyiko: they say he collapsed at walk and he was rushed to the hospital.....im on my way there now

\*\*\*she then sniffed\*\*\*

Jack: why...why did he collapse?

Tinyiko: a ni swi tivi Jack ( I don't know Jack)

Jackson: ok umm I'll leave right away....keep

me updated

Tinyiko: tell aunty na malome ( and uncle)

Jack: I will

\*\*\*then they ended the call and Jackson told them about the call\*\*\*

Uncle: tatane xekwembu ko yendlekala yini ( God what's going on)

Jack: but...but Joe doesn't know anything we get up to then why him

\*\*\*the aunt sighed\*\*\*

Aunt: he knows ko re he dlayi Tiyiselani's husband( he knows we killed Tiyiselani's husband)

Jackson: and the sangoma said it's someone we know

Uncle: wa loya manjeni Tiyiselani? ( so Tiyiselani practices witchcraft now?)...so she's working with someone dangerous to take us

down....he he he

25

.  
. .

Castiel: you know what I change my mind

\*\*\*he then grabbed Thabo by his neck and dragged him towards the back yard with him choking\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi follow us!

\*\*\*she went after them walking slowly wiping her tears off....Inside her bedroom Castiel let him go and Thabo coughed holding his neck\*\*\*

Thabo: you son of a bitch....you'll pay for that you hear me you'll fucken pay!

\*\*\*Castiel slapped him hard that two his back teeth came out and he started bleeding through his mouth and nose and his right ear..... as for his right eye it became red instantly, he groaned in pain as he spit out is two back teeth.....Cass was left handed and you know how a slap from a left handed person is like worst part he was a vampire\*\*\*

Castiel: PHUMELELE!

\*\*\*she slowly walked in and her eyes popped out when they landed on a bleeding Thabo\*\*\*

Castiel: what did he do to you?

Phumi: ummm....he...i....he

Castiel: khuluma man! ( talk)

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Phumi: ungishayile ( he hit me)

\*\*\*Castiel looked at Thabo who was clearly in pain\*\*\*

Castiel: ushaya abafazi wena msoon? ( you beat up women you cunt)

Thabo: wa...wa yaka my bra a ka mmetha ( she's lying my brother I didn't hit her)

Castiel: you're calling her a liar to my face you useless piece of shit!

Thabo: no i... i....

\*\*\*then he looked at Phumi\*\*\*

Thabo: Phumi mmotse (tell him) I didn't hit you babe....mmotse assomblief ( tell him please)

Phumi: look at my cheeks Thabo!

Thabo: I was just angry Phumi I didn't mean to...lwena ongprovok(ile) man ( you provoked me)...you provoked me!

Phumi: I provoked you!

\*\*\*she said sounding angry\*\*\*

Castiel: she provoked you?

\*\*\*he said taking a step towards him and Thabo hid his face\*\*\*

Thabo: no..no ka dlala my bra she didn't ( im kidding my brother she didn't)

\*\*\*Cass looked at Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: mshaye nawe ( hit him)

Phumi: huh?

Thabo: heh?

Castiel: ngithe mshaye Phumelele or ngishaya wena ( I said hit him Phumi or I'll hit you)

\*\*\*Phumi took a step closer to Thabo\*\*\*

Thabo: mfowethu assomblief o sa ntellisa ka vrou please ( my brother please don't allow a woman to disrespect me please)

Castiel: also hit him for speaking Tswana to me

\*\*\*Phumi hesitated\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi!



\*\*\*she slapped him hard on his face and Thabo winced looking away....he couldn't even clench his jaws\*\*\*

Castiel: you have a loud mouth but you hit like a slay queen bitch.....now shaya lenja uyekele ukutetefa man ( now hit this dog and stop being lazy)

\*\*\*Phumi slapped him again and she slapped him again and again and she found herself hitting him continuously while crying with Thabo hiding his face with his arms as he cried too..... she then kicked him and he fell back and she got on top of him and she threw punches at him as he hid his face....she hit him until she got tired and she stopped and got off him and went to sit on the edge of the bed and she sobbed\*\*\*

Castiel: you satisfied?

\*\*\*she nodded wiping her tears off and Cass

went closer to him and he pulled him up by his bloodied shirt\*\*\*

Castiel: remove your hands from your face damn it!

\*\*\*he said with a stern voice and Thabo did and Cass looked at his bloodied face that was also covered in tears\*\*\*

Castiel: you should be thankful she's the one that hit you and not me cause if I did, your head would end up being hanged at your mother's gate as an artistic souvenir and your body would end up being devoured by pigs in this neighborhood

\*\*\*he said with a scary tone and Thabo shook with fear\*\*\*

Castiel: Phumi is mine now and I'll turn into your worst nightmare if you come at her ever again....if I even hear rumors about her roaming around I'll fucken know it's you and if she gets

attacked I'll also know it's you and if you go to the police then you better be ready to bury your family members one by one until you're the last member remaining then I'll bring hell to earth just for you.....and just so you know, she.....

\*\*\*he pointed at Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: ...just saved your life....now you gonna get the hell out of here and you should never set your feet here ever again do I make myself clear boy!

\*\*\*Thabo nodded repeatedly and he let him go\*\*\*

Castiel: you're still here....VOETSEK MAN!

\*\*\*Thabo ran out crying then Cass looked at Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: pack up...you gonna come stay with me for a couple of days

\*\*\*she looked up at him\*\*\*

Phumi: what?

Castiel: you heard me....pack up and I'll clean this blood in the mean time

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: Castiel don't you think you're moving too fast?

Castiel: no

Phumi: im serious man.....not long ago you were into Kazi and now you're asking me to move in with you

Castiel: Kazi again

\*\*\*he said shaking his head annoyed\*\*\*

Phumi: yes Kazi again.... I fought with my cousin because of you.....you always said to her that she's gonna be yours blah blah blah, you made her fall for you and now that she chose Menzi jiki jiki im your second choice....no no, im not even your second choice but your tool to

make her jealous

\*\*\*Cass chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: wow

Phumi: you can stop pretending now and go to her cause she's really into you now....im sure you'll make a cute couple with cute babies

\*\*\*she said wiping her tears\*\*\*

Castiel: you done?

Phumi: thank you for saving me today but you should stay away from me from now on

Castiel: im giving you three hours to go back to your right senses and to pack up ok

Phumi: haven't I made myself clear Castiel....i said...

Castiel: ENOUGH....YEER..... PARFOIS TU ES FOUTU ENERVANT! ( yeer sometimes you are fucken annoying!)

\*\*\*he shouted the last part in French \*\*\*

Castiel: three hours Phumi!

\*\*\*then he walked out and she sat there and she sobbed with her heart throbbing.....Kazi and Thabo's words were playing in her head, she loved Thabo like no other and he broke her heart more than Kazi did...maybe he was right, she thought. Maybe every man pretend to love her or even like her because of her pussy cause every guy that she flirted with even at the pubs she likes going to always want to sleep with her but none has ever asked her out, well she has never slept with any of them but now everything makes sense because of what Thabo said.... she sighed and she completely wiped her tears off and she went to take the mop and she wiped Thabo's blood off the floor and she went to rinse it outside and she hung it on the washing line.....she locked up her back room and went to the main house and she went to the

spare bedroom and she laid on the bed and soon sleep took over....Her mother came back and she woke her up and they talked for some time, she even told her mother about what Thabo did to her and she was fuming with anger....after some time she fell back to sleep when her mother went to answer her phone and now she woke up to someone shaking her....she opened her eyes and it was her mother again  
\*\*\*

Phumi: mmmmh

P.Mom: vuka man....kune ndoda (wake up man.....there's a guy) outside looking for you

\*\*\*Phumi frowned and she sat up yawning and she caught her mother looking at her suspiciously \*\*\*

Phumi: what?

P.Mom: ukhulelwe Phumelele? ( are you pregnant Phumelele)

Phumi: what...no ofcourse not

P.Mom: are you sure?

Phumi: ma ngithe im not haw( ma I said im not)

P.Mom: mmmmh

Phumi: ma im not pregnant ok and plus I would know if I was

\*\*\*she said getting out of bed and her mother shook her head looking at her now swollen breasts\*\*\*

P.Mom: mmh asazi ke ( mmh we don't know)

\*\*\*Phumi rolled her eyes and walked out and she stopped on her tracks when she found Castiel standing outside and she remained standing inside the house by the door\*\*\*

Castiel: your three hours is over, I even gave you two extra hours

Phumi: im not going with you



Castiel: Phumi

Phumi: im done Castiel... in fact im tired, im gonna lay off relationships for a while so yah....

\*\*\*he rubbed his eyes getting angry\*\*\*

Castiel: uyangithukuthelisa Phumelele ( you are making me angry) and you'll hate me if i get angry now say goodbye to your mother and lets go

Phumi: relationships are not by force

Castiel....look im tired and not feeling well so I don't need this please....leave

\*\*\*she closed the door on his face and went back to her room and found her mother sitting on the edge of the bed\*\*\*

P.Mom: is he the father

Phumi: Ma im not pregnant please stop ok....i would know if I was I mean its my body and I know it

\*\*\*her mother got up and she sighed\*\*\*

P.Mom: I just hope Thabo didn't beat you up cause you were cheating on him Phumi

Phumi: so he has a right to beat me up if I cheat?

P.Mom: ofcourse not I just.....look you and Thabo have been together for a long time for you to just break up just like that

Phumi: ma please do me a favour.... stop being a hypocrite at my expense.....you and Mbuyiseni broke up after being together for many years so don't judge me please

\*\*\*her mother sighed\*\*\*

P.Mom: Mbuyiseni and I weren't in love anymore that's why we broke up

Phumi: and Thabo and I are?

P.Mom: fine.....but you're not getting any younger Phumi, your mates are at their houses married with kids and wena usahlala nami hai

man ( and you're still staying with me)

Phumi: at least I take after my mother which is a clear indication that I wasn't swopped in the hospital after you gave birth to me

\*\*\*she said with attitude\*\*\*

P.mom: at least mina ngihlala kwami ntombazana ( at least im staying in my house girly) and I work what about you huh

\*\*\*Phumi swallowed hard and her eyes filled with tears\*\*\*

Phumi: its fine I'll leave your house then

\*\*\*she walked to the door\*\*\*

P.Mom: stop acting crazy ok....im your mother Phumi and you're my only child and this is your home

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

P.mom....i also want my daughter to get married and have kids....i only said what I said

cause Thabo has been a good boyfriend to you and you said you two broke up cause he hit you and now some strange man comes looking for you...hai man Phumi

\*\*\*Phumi didn't say anything she just rubbed her abdominal area as she felt some cramps\*\*\*

Phumi: can I lay down on the bed you bought ma since I cant afford to pay rent and contribute on food cause i resigned from work because THE MANAGER SEXUALLY ASSAULTED ME

\*\*\* she said reminding her mother why she quit her job\*\*\*

P.Mom: I know all that and we are not talking about you not having a job here Phumi....we're talking about Thabo and that strange man

Phumi: Ma Thabo beat me up because he's cheating again with Sne and that man is a friend and he saved me or else I would have

also became part of the statistics of women killed by their men...now please I just want to rest im not feeling well

\*\*\*her mother sighed\*\*\*

P.Mom: fine robala ankere ke mpeto wa mmagao ( sleep it's your mother's bed after all) and you're the only child mxm

\*\*\*Phumi rolled her eyes\*\*\*

P.mom: and I still say umithi....o nale medical so tsa mo cheka before o belega ngwana wa hethe or wa segole just cause you didn't attend antenatal classes and a wa nwa di vitamins (and I still say you're pregnant ..... you have a medical aid so go and get checked before you give birth to a mentally disturbed child or a disabled child cause you didn't go for antenatal checkups or drank vitamins)

Phumi: IM NOT PREGNANT MAMA JEEZ!

P.mom: hai fotsek go nale samathwane ka

moo ( hei piss off there's a baby in there)

\*\*\*Phumi rolled her eyes as her mother stood by the door\*\*\*

P.Mom: mmmmh "friend" ya gao is handsome yong, at least o na le taste so samatlhwane seo so nna cute a ka se tshwane le boPutjek (mmmmh your "friend" is handsome, at least you have taste so your baby will come out looking cute it won't look like Putjeks)

Phumi: mama tsamaya tuu ( mama go please)

\*\*\*her mother walked out closing the door and Phumi sighed and laid on the bed and she rubbed her belly as she felt more cramps....then she touched her breasts and they were sensitive and she swallowed hard\*\*\*

-----

KZN

\*\*\*Kazi has been trying Menzi for the

umpteenth time and his phone was sending her to voicemail....she sighed and she wiped her tears off and she got up and went to the kitchen, she felt like shit for everything that went down....she wished she could turn the hands of time and make the right decisions.....she made herself some coffee and she sat down on the barstools in the kitchen as her fight with Menzi played in her head\*\*\*

≤ ≤ ≤ FLASHBACKS ≥ ≥ ≥

Menzi: your recent ex is dead so when did you date him

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Kazi: Menzi baba ngiyakucela (Menzi baba im begging you)...put that belt away please

Menzi: khuluma man! ( talk)

\*\*\*he roared\*\*\*

Kazi: I dated them both at the same time....he

was more of a side nigga

\*\*\*She lied and Menzi chuckled not believing what he was hearing\*\*\*

Kazi: I just....Phumi went after him even though she knew he's my ex

Menzi: awuna na mahloni Ntandokazi ( you have no shame Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*she swallowed hard looking down\*\*\*

Menzi: you are fighting with your best friend/cousin over an ex as if awunayo indoda ( as if you don't have a man)

Kazi: its not like that Menzi, she broke our girl code so I was just angry

Menzi: girl code ya masimba, udle indoda yomunye umfazi ( don't tell me about girl code, you fucked another woman's man )and you still talk about girl code!

\*\*\*she frowned looking hurt\*\*\*



Menzi: tell me here why did he call me  
mmh....why didn't Phumi call me

Kazi: I don't know

Menzi: ungazongijwaela amasimba Ntandokazi  
( dont piss me off Ntandokazi)

\*\*\*he said pointing at her and she moved back  
looking scared\*\*\*

Menzi: he said you're claiming him and that I  
should come and take you now why would he  
say that

\*\*\*she started to cry\*\*\*

Menzi: answer me damn it

Kazi: im sorry Menzi

Menzi: I don't want your sorry Kazi I want the  
truth damn it!

\*\*\*he said sounding angrier\*\*\*

Kazi: i....

Menzi: you what...you what huh?

\*\*\*she didn't say anything she just cried\*\*

Menzi: you know what since you don't want to talk I'll call back that bastard and he'll tell me the truth

Kazi: no please don't

\*\*\*she said with a panicking voice and Menzi gave her a suspicious look\*\*\*

Kazi: i....i think I still have feelings for him that's why I reacted like that....i

\*\*\*Menzi's heart sank and he sighed shaking his head\*\*\*

Menzi: I swear ngine bati yezifebe shem ( I swear I have bad luck with whores shame)

\*\*\* then he turned and walked to the door shaking his head\*\*\*

Kazi: Menzi wait...baby I love you so much I just....

\*\*\*He walked out and she ran after him\*\*\*

Kazi: Menzi

Menzi: HAI FOSEK MAN KAZI.....FOSEK  
UYANGIZWA, FOSEK NX! ( hai fuck off man  
Kazi....fuck off you hear me, fuck off nx!)

\*\*\*he said shouting while pointing at her  
looking deadly angry and he walked out of the  
house going to his car and he got in and drove  
out leaving Kazi crying\*\*\*

≤ ≤ ≤ END OF FLASHBACKS ≥ ≥ ≥

\*\*\*she tried his phone again and it still send her  
straight to voicemail and she sighed heavily  
with tears in her eyes, then she thought about  
Phumi and Castiel together....the thought of her  
having him before she did brewed her  
anger...she knew she was sexier than her, yes  
she had the best skin ever without any stretch  
marks or cellulite and the only scar she has is  
the one she got after fighting with one of

Thabo's side dishes.... yes she admitted that she had an ass and curves but her body wasn't toned like hers, she didn't even have a flat tummy so she wondered why Castiel would choose her instead or even be interested in her\*\*\*

Kazi: he's just trying to make me jealous....yah....well its working mxm

\*\*\*she said to herself and she huffed\*\*\*

Kazi: just once Cass just once that's all and I'll let you have her with all her fat nx

\*\*\*then her mind went to Menzi and she swallowed feeling guilty and she covered her face with her hands and she started sobbing\*\*\*

-----

## PHUMI'S HOUSE

The following morning she woke up feeling nauseas, she ran to the bathroom and she

threw up.....after she was done tears ran down her cheeks....she wiped her mouth and she rinsed her mouth and she went outside to her backroom to fetch her toiletries and clean clothes, she opened the door and as soon as she stepped in she found Castiel laying on her bed with only his briefs on\*\*\*

Castiel: I have been waiting since last night

\*\*\*her eyes were popped out while he had his eyes closed....he was lying on his back with one arm under his head while the other one was resting on his lower stomach\*\*\*

Phumi: how did you.... how the hell did you get in Castiel

Castiel: are you gonna ask me that every time?

\*\*\*her eyes travelled to the area where his dick was and he was rock hard....she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Castiel: you want some?

\*\*\*she looked away embarrassed \*\*\*

Castiel: I see my son is showing you flames

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: what son

Castiel: the one growing inside your womb.....i heard you throwing up....i can't wait until you start showing

Phumi: im not pregnant ok!

\*\*\*he turned his head and looked at her and she looked a bit pale\*\*\*

Castiel: go and bath so we can leave

Phumi: im not going anywhere with you

Castiel: I can use force you know that right

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Phumi: Castiel assomblief im not feeling well so I cant deal with you so hamba tuu ( leave please)

\*\*\*he turned his head again facing up and he

closed his eyes\*\*\*

Castiel: hamba uyo vasa bello ( go and bath beautiful) and stop talking crazy

\*\*\*she huffed and clicked her tongue and she went to the bathroom...as soon as she lay back inside the bathtub the door opened and Cass walked in still in his briefs and he closed the toilet lid and sat down\*\*\*

Phumi: privacy bathong!

Castiel: there's no privacy between us

\*\*\*she shook her head and sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: do they hurt

Phumi: what?

Castiel: your twins

\*\*\*he said pointing at her full breasts and she swallowed looking away\*\*\*

Castiel: why is it so hard for you to accept that

you're pregnant?

Phumi: im not pregnant....and plus it's not scientifically possible, we had sex days back so I can't start having symptoms now it's not possible and plus I drank emergency pills

Castiel: I told you im not normal like other people Phumi

Phumi: if, and that's if im pregnant then Thabo is the father and not you

Castiel: uyahlanya....ungitshela amasimba manje ( you are crazy...you're telling me shit now)

Phumi: ungithukelani....iqiniso liya baba angithi ( why are you swearing at me....truth hurts right)

Castiel: fsek..... iqiniso la masimba ( piss off....a shitty truth)...that baby is mine and if you ever say that boy's name in my presence uzosisola Phumelele ( you'll regret it Phumelele)



\*\*\*he said pointing at her and she rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: mpotse mo o sure o le ndofa? (tell me here are sure you're a foreigner)...gape you act like a typical Zulu man wena

\*\*\* ( ndofa is a slang word for foreigner but in an insulting way) Anyway Castiel quickly got up cause he knows what "ndofa" means and he picked her up from the bathtub and went to the bedroom with her and before she could even blink he was sliding inside of her a bit roughly and she gasped as he filled her up.....\*\*\*

Castiel: ndofa se moer ( foreigner my ass)

\*\*\*he said sliding out and she just laid there breathing heavily with her eyes closed....he just fucked her brains out...the moment he was about to lose himself in her, he moved to the floor with her before they broke another bed and he fucked her there....anyway he went to

the bathroom and he peed and after he was done he went back to the bedroom still naked and he crouched down and slapped Phumi's thigh gently\*\*\*

Castiel: ey wake up

\*\*\*she groaned\*\*\*

Phumi: leave me alone

Castiel: wake up and finish bathing we still need to leave

\*\*\*she opened her eyes and she slowly sat up  
\*\*\*

Phumi: I said im not going

Castiel: you want me to go another round cause I can

\*\*\*she swallowed hard cause already her nana was on fire\*\*\*

Phumi: mxm do you always have to threaten me

\*\*\*she said sulking and Castiel just picked her up bridal style with her screaming that she's heavy and he'll drop her\*\*\*

Castiel: to me you weigh like a fly's weight which is nothing so relax

\*\*\*she frowned at him\*\*\*

Castiel: ask no questions and you'll hear no lies

\*\*\*she sighed....anyway they bathed together this time and after they were done getting dressed Phumi brushed her hair cut\*\*\*

Phumi: damn I need to visit a salon

\*\*\*she said looking at her hair cut on the mirror\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll take you to one tomorrow

\*\*\* he said busy concentrating on his phone and she turned frowning at him\*\*\*

Phumi: I'll go after my visit with the doctor today

\*\*\* he looked up at her\*\*\*

Castiel: my brother is a doctor so he'll check you meaning no piece of shit will touch you and I don't get to castrate anyone

Phumi: I don't...

Castiel: please don't argue with me on this  
Phumi

\*\*\*he interrupted her and she sighed and continued with what she was doing\*\*\*

Castiel: let's go

\*\*\*she took her handbag and they went past the main house and she locked up there too and they went out....she followed Cass to his car that was parked between two yard, where Phumi's yard ended and where the neighbor's yard started\*\*\*

Phumi: mmm I see you're confusing the enemy neh....FYI we're going to see your brother who's

a doctor and not going to your house

\*\*\*Cass chuckled....they got inside after he unlocked and he drove off....not long after they left Phumi fell asleep and Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: show her flames my boy plus she's frustrating and she has no filter

\*\*\*then he took his phone and called Ruslan who answered after the third ring\*\*\*

Ruu: what

Castiel: will you stop acting like a woman....we said what we wanted to say and we even beat each other I mean we were even visited and warned by La Parka

\*\*\*He said 'La Parca' with a Latino accent\*\*\*

Castiel: now we should be over that little squabble we had

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: my face is bruised man

Castiel: and my ego is bruised too nigga

Ruu: well Thandi is mad at me

Castiel: fuck her good until she forgives you...anything else?

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: you son of a Dracula

Castiel: you son of a human

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: fine.... what do you want

\*\*\*Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: you know me too well

\*\*\*then he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: the baby is growing fast and she's already feeling the symptoms

Ruu: I still say you shouldn't have marked her and made her pregnant

Castiel: why

Ruu: cause Juana said...

Castiel: she's wrong Madou, Phumi is the one man....she challenges me and she doesn't take my shit, even Juana took my shit but Phumi.....

\*\*\*he chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Castiel: can you believe last night she slammed the door on my face and I ended up sleeping in the backroom alone while she slept in the main house

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: I swear if La Parca didn't confirm she's one of the good ones I would be thinking that she's a demon or a demon's child from hell send to come and torment me

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: look man...when you know you know just like you did with Thandi....and with Kazi I

think she's supposed to be in my life but not as my mate...Juana made a mistake man

\*\*\*he looked over at Phumi and she was still asleep...she was even snoring a bit....he smirked and bit his lower lip looking at her beautiful face as she slept looking cute\*\*\*

Ruslan: as a what.... a side dish?

\*\*\*Cass laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: well I wouldn't mind but I can't cheat now man and you know it....we are one now and you know what will happen if she leaves me

Ruu: Juana left you

\*\*\*Castiel huffed\*\*\*

Castiel: she never existed man....i mean she's supposedly dead but I don't see her spirit anywhere

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: lets hope you right



Castiel: I know I've been wrong so many times  
but this time im right man

Ruslan: ok

Castiel: plus ngicabanga ukuthi  
ngisemathandweni ( I think im in love)

Ruslan: huh?

\*\*\*he asked not understanding the language he  
spoke\*\*\*

Castiel: never mind man I was reading a  
billboard on the road

Ruslan: you said "plus" man so don't make me a  
fool

Castiel: I know Zulu and you don't so believe  
what I tell you

Ruslan: mxm piss off

\*\*\*Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: so you'll come by my place later on for

the spell on the fetus?

Ruslan: yeah whatever moresoona nja

\*\*\*"Msoon wenja" is what he wanted to say and Cass busted out with loud laughter cause he caught what he meant to say\*\*\*

Ruslan: bye dickhead

\*\*\*he said also laughing and they ended the call and Castiel continued to laugh\*\*\*

Phumi: uyarasa man Castiel eish ( you're making noise Castiel)

\*\*\*she said in her sleep annoyed and Castiel held his laugh a bit then he let it all out and he continued to laugh which added to Phumi's annoyance \*\*\*

.  
. .

Phumi: where are we?

\*\*\*She said as she looked around, They just parked inside Castiel's new house.....she was sleeping all the way and she just woke up\*\*\*

Castiel: my brother will come here instead

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: ok

\*\*\*Cass opened his door and got out then he went and opened Phumi's door and he helped her out.....they walked to the door with Phumi admiring the house.....Castiel opened the door and they walked in\*\*\*

Phumi: wow

\*\*\*She said admiring the interior design....the

interior was European royal style, you'd swear it was Queen Elizabeth's palace\*\*\*

Castiel: you like it?

\*\*\*she cleared her throat cause she felt like she was out of place...she has never been inside a house not to mention a mansion like that before\*\*\*

Phumi: its..its yours?

Castiel: it's ours bello

\*\*\*she didn't say anything she just walked further inside admiring it\*\*\*

Phumi: this house is too big for one person  
Cass

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*

Castiel: this house is not the only property I own bello...this one I mostly rent it out to rich people who visit the country and don't want to stay in a hotel in the province

Phumi: mmmmh..... so pila pila you brought me here to show off neh

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: not to show off per se but to impress you

Phumi: same thing to me

\*\*\*he laughed and she smiled then she frowned as she rubbed her belly\*\*\*

Castiel: what's wrong?

\*\*\*he said rushing to her \*\*\*

Phumi: i...ive been having cramps lately and it's like they are getting worse

\*\*\*within a blink of an eye she was in his arms and another blink of an eye they were upstairs to the main bedroom that looked like something out of a Top Billing magazine\*\*\*

Phumi: dude you need to stop doing that

\*\*\*she said as he put her down on the bed  
gently\*\*\*

Castiel: you need to get used to me doing that  
bello

\*\*\*he said as he pulled her shirt up and he  
rubbed her belly gently\*\*\*

Castiel: ok I know I said you should show her  
flames boy but I didn't mean you should hurt  
her man

\*\*\*she frowned and pushed Castiel's hands  
away\*\*\*

Phumi: im not pregnant ok so stop acting like I  
am....its not possible to be pregnant for you  
Cass we had sex days ago so I cant show  
pregnancy symptoms this early....maybe im  
sick...maybe I have cancer or something so  
stop

\*\*\*she said with an emotional voice and he  
sighed and touched her belly again and rubbed

it gently\*\*\*

Castiel: you're not sick Phumi....you're pregnant and I know this cause I got you pregnant

Phumi: I just said....

Castiel: im gonna say this again..... im not normal like everyone else ok, I move like a speed of lightning and I always wear long sleeve shirts, a cap and sunglasses and fingerless leather gloves.... I always cover up when im outside haven't you asked yourself why?

\*\*\*she looked at him with a "thinking" expression on her face\*\*\*

Castiel: I grew up thinking im a Dhampir but the moment I stopped aging I knew I wasn't

\*\*\*her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Phumi: sto...stopped aging?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: yeah

Phumi: ok let me.....ummm what do you mean by that?

\*\*\*She asked confused\*\*\*

\*\*\*he looked at her and he knew it was now or never\*\*\*

Castiel: im a Vampire Phumi

\*\*\*she gave him a confused look for a while then she busted out with laughter.....he let her laugh until she calmed down, she looked at him and he had a serious look on his face then she swallowed\*\*\*

Phumi: you're ser..serious?

Castiel: im a vampire Phumi

\*\*\*her face suddenly had a mixture of different emotions\*\*\*

Phumi: they are not real...you're lying



Castiel: then how do you explain my speed

\*\*\*she wanted to say something but words failed her\*\*\*

Castiel: im a half-breed vampire....i feed on both blood and solid food, I also have genes of a witch so I can do a bit of wizardry things but im not as good as my brother Ruslan, he's a master at it in fact he's one of the best out there in the world

\*\*\*She looked at him like he's out of his mind\*\*\*

Phumi: ummm I think I should go now

\*\*\* she said getting up and Castiel also got up\*\*\*

Castiel: wait i....look I know all this is scary for you but baby I didn't ask to be like this....i was born like this just like that baby in your womb will be born like this but that doesn't mean both me and my child don't deserve to be happy or loved

\*\*\*she just looked at him not knowing what to say with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Castiel: please don't leave ok I'll do anything just don't leave

\*\*\*he begged her and she slowly sat down cause what she just heard was making her dizzy all of a sudden then he breathed out and sat down too\*\*\*

Castiel: all I want is a child Phumi and now you're pregnant and I just....look you'll have complications with this pregnancy but im gonna be here for you and my brother will make sure nothing happens to you

\*\*\*she didn't say anything.....her facial expression showed she was in shock\*\*\*

Castiel: please say something

\*\*\*she remained silent and he brushed his head then his phone rang and he answered\*\*\*

Cass: yeah

Man: boss we have a problem

\*\*\*he got up and move away from Phumi\*\*\*

Cass: im listening

Man: there were some weirdoes wearing all black who were asking questions about you in the club

Castiel: weirdoes?

Man: yes boss, they had American accents and it was a man and a woman

\*\*\*Castiel brushed his hair cause he knew who they are\*\*\*

Castiel: did they approach you

Man: no but they were walking around with your picture asking people in the club if they know you but no one said anything cause they don't know the owner just the club manager

\*\*\*Castiel brushed his hair pacing around \*\*\*

Castiel: ok keep your eyes opened and your ears on the ground and report back to me

Man: sure boss

\*\*\*Then they ended the call and he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: shit!

\*\*\*he looked over at Phumi and she was laying down now rubbing her lower stomach and he sighed rubbing his eyes\*\*\*

-----

AT A RESTAURANT

Mpilo: mama ish Sharia making you sad again

\*\*\*little Mpilo asked Thandi if the unborn baby is making her sad again cause she was way too quiet as they were out having a late lunch date with the boys, every time her hormones acts up Ruu tells the boys that the unborn baby ( Sharia) as Ruu calls her is the one that's making Thandi

sad but the real truth is Ruu explained what happened to her lounge and he also told her about what Castiel really is \*\*\*

Thandi: yes baby but I'll be ok neh

\*\*\*he nodded and continued to eat his food....

Mpe looked at Ruu and Ruu smirked and Mpe smiled shaking his head \*\*\*

Thandi: Mpe how was school

Mpe: it was ok ma

Thandi: is that boy still bullying you

\*\*\*he rolled his eyes\*\*\*

Mpe: ma I dealt with him accordingly that time so he respects me now

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled and Thandi gave him a deadly look and he kept quiet\*\*\*

Ruu: Mpe don't ever roll your eyes when you're talking to an elder ok

Mpe: aaah dad

\*\*\*he gave him a “ try that again” look and Mpe cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mpe: yes sir

Ruu: good

\*\*\*they had their late lunch and went home....they got in and the boys went to their rooms and Ruu went to the kitchen where Thandi was and he stood there with his hands inside his pockets looking at her\*\*\*

Ruu: are you still mad about the furniture or about what I told you about Castiel

Thandi: im not mad

Ruu: come on amor even my pilot saw that you aren't happy

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: I brought new furnisher baby....i even apologized a thousand times.....i even slept on

that small couch as punishment even now my neck and back still hurts

\*\*\*she sighed again\*\*\*

Thandi: he's a vam.... damn it i can't even say it  
Ruu

\*\*\*he went closer to her and cupped her face then he perked her lips, she pushed him away a bit\*\*\*

Thandi: mxm trust you to take advantage ....im still mad at you

\*\*\*he laughed\*\*\*

Ruu: I think its time i paid your bride price no no no cause once I wife your ass this whole body will belong to me...meaning I can kiss you whenever I want

Thandi: mxm..... you think I won't be mad at you if im your wife

Ruu: when you're my wife not if amor

\*\*\*he said pulling her closer and they kissed for some time\*\*\*

Mpe: old people please get a room jeez, we make food in this kitchen bathong

\*\*\*they broke the kiss then Ruslan's phone rang and he walked away answering it\*\*\*

Thandi: o re bo mang ke bo old people wena le tlhogo ya tsuane ( who are you calling old with that tiny head of yours)

Mpe: ah mama

\*\*\*he said shocked by what she said\*\*\*

Thandi: mmmmh askere wa phapha ( you are too forward)

Mpe: shuuh let me go before Sharia anroga ka diprivates

\*\*\*he took out bottled water and he pulled his tongue out for his mother and he walked out leaving Thandi chuckling then she heard Mpe



shouting\*\*\*

Mpe: no dad you're messing up my haircut!

\*\*\*he had his arm around his neck and he was rubbing his knuckles on his hair\*\*\*

Ruu: should I do it again?

Mpe: no no no

Ruu: and how long will I do this for?

Mpe: until im 18

Ruu: why?

Mpe: cause your dad.....

\*\*\*Ruu tightened the grip a bit with his knuckles on top of Mpe's hair\*\*\*

Mpe: grandpa did it to you until you reached 18

Ruu: so...

Mpe: so it's a family tradition

Ruu: that's my boy

\*\*\*he let him go and Mpe sulked walking towards the stairs leaving Ruu and Thandi who was now standing not far from them laughing\*\*\*

Mpe: you know I feel sorry for some people cause they never got a chance to behave like kids cause they were born old now some of us have to suffer

Ruu: what did you just say boy?

\*\*\*he said pretending to run to him and Mpe quickly climbed the stairs laughing\*\*\*

Ruu: I'll get you for that smart mouth!

Mpe: I love you too dad

\*\*\*he shook his head and turned to Thandi and found her with tears in her eyes....he rushed to her \*\*\*

Ruu: are you ok...is it Sharia?

\*\*\*he said as he put his hand on her belly\*\*\*

Thandi: she's ok I just..... they are happy  
Ruu.....you make them happy and that makes  
me happy

\*\*\*he sighed with relief then he smiled and  
kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Ruu: im their father so it's my job

Thandi: thank you for loving us.... I appreciate  
you Ruu a lot

\*\*\*he blushed a bit\*\*\*

Ruu: I know you do baby and I appreciate you  
too

\*\*\*then they went to sit down and Ruu  
sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: about Cass

Thandi: I don't have a problem with him being a  
vam...

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Ruu: just say vamp

Thandi: it's just so unreal....even having powers is unreal in my world but I guess im as blind as everyone in this world who don't believe in supernatural things, vampires and so on...what im trying to say is as long as he won't feed on me or any of my kids then im cool with him

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: he won't, he doesn't drink human blood amor, well it's not that he can't it's just human blood is not part of his diet

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: listen to you talking about drinking blood as if it's a normal thing

Ruu: he's my brother amor....its just me and him left

\*\*\*she breathed out\*\*\*

Thandi: I know and like I said I don't have a

problem with him I just have to get used to him being a vamp....

\*\*\* she shook her head\*\*\*

Ruu: thanks amor its sad cause he was born like that

Thandi: and the girl who's pregnant for him, will she make it I mean she's carrying his child baby

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: both Cass and I will make sure she makes it

Thandi: so the baby might kill her

Ruu: that baby will grow too fast inside of her that her body and womb won't have time to adjust to it and plus its gonna get heavier the more it grows so..... but don't worry ever since Cass told me one day he would like to have a child I knew he wasn't talking about adopting so I did my research and I have potions that will

help her but it won't be easy and yah she might die but we won't let it get to that

\*\*\*she sighed heavily\*\*\*

Ruu: I know this is too much for you amor and I told you about Cass without his consent cause they both gonna need me so I didn't wanna lie to you continuously about where im going in the middle of the night and so on and the girl will need a friend cause she's about to go through a traumatic experience

Thandi: I understand..... I just feel sorry for her, I mean you said she doesn't even know that he's a vamp

Ruu: im sure he'll tell her one of these days

Thandi: yuuh ya neh.... Thandi o tsamaya o jola le wena man yeer

\*\*\* she said to herself\*\*\*

Ruu: I hope you're not swearing at me

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: we should learn each other's languages cause this speaking English all the time thing is turning me into a coconut

\*\*\*Ruu laughed and Thandi joined him....then his phone rang, it was Ray so he answered\*\*\*

Ruu: bros

Ray: Ruu can you come to my house its urgent

\*\*\*he sounded a bit off\*\*\*

Ruu: sure.... what's wrong man you sound a bit off?

Ray: just come man, I already called Cass, Jabu and Heath over

\*\*\*then he dropped the call and Ruu frowned looking at his phone\*\*\*

Thandi: what's wrong?

Ruu: I don't know he sounded off....I need to go

now

Thandi: ok I hope it's nothing serious

Ruu: I hope so too

\*\*\*they kissed for some time and broke it then  
Ruu kissed her belly\*\*\*

Ruu: I love you ok

Thandi: I love you too

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead and walked to the  
door....she watched him walk and he had that  
walk man you know, that "I got my shit  
together" walk.....She breathed out with a smile  
on her face then she rubbed her belly\*\*\*

Thandi: that's your daddy princess

-----

AT RAY'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Mbali was holding Cataleya in her arms with  
her eyes blood shot red and swollen from all



the crying she did.....she kept on brushing her curly hair....she looked at her bruises on her face and she swallowed hard....she was walking around with her in her arms while Kalu was sleeping in his cot....the doorbell rang then the door opened and Ruslan walked in and he stopped on his tracks when he saw Mbali holding a baby girl\*\*\*

Mbali: Ruu

Ruslan: his flower....what's going on?

\*\*\*he said walking to her slowly and she let her tears fall, he got closer to her and held her but not too tight to squeeze the baby\*\*\*

Mbali: he hurt her Ruu, he hurt her

\*\*\*he looked at the baby\*\*\*

Mbali: Cataleya

\*\*\*his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Mbali: Diego and Mateo brought her here, they

stole her from the hospital in Venezuela when they found out that she was abused physically and sexually by the adopted father

Ruslan: what?!

Mbali: she's just a baby Ruu and he hurt her

\*\*\*she said crying and Ruu wiped her tears\*\*\*

Ruslan: its ok....he'll pay...i'll make him pay....we will make him pay ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he continued to wipe her tears and he helped her sit down\*\*\*

Ruu: where's Ray

Mbali: in his study with the guys...he's losing it  
Ruu

\*\*\*she said as she sniffed\*\*\*

Ruu: ok lets me go see him I'll be back ok

\*\*\* she nodded and he kissed her forehead and went to the study....he walked in, he greeted

everyone by bro-hugging all of them except for Ray who was looking down with a bottle of whiskey on his hand.....he just squeezed his shoulder and went to sit down\*\*\*

Ruu: what happened?

Mateo: I was getting more information about the couple that adopted Cataleya, I even told Diego to send one of our guys in Cuba to go stake out the house

Diego: then our boy told me that the woman and Cataleya never leave the house or even sit outside which was odd, then two days back I got a call that an ambulance and the police arrived at the house apparently the woman committed suicide, she was found by her sister when she tried to call her for a couple of days and she didn't answer and he also found out the baby wasn't there apparently she has been in the hospital for a couple of days and the husband was nowhere to be seen....he paid a

nurse at hospital to get him information about the baby and what he found out...

\*\*\*he shook his head then Ray got up and he threw the bottle to the wall with force\*\*\*

Ray: he...he abused my daughter....he...he.... that son of a bitch abused my daughter Ruu!

\*\*\* he said shouting with veins popping on his forehead and Ruslan quickly got up and went to him then he chanted a spell touching his arm and Ray closed his eyes and Ruu caught him before he could fall...Heath got up and helped Ruu and they put him down on the couch \*\*\*

Jabu: what did you do to him?

Ruu: I put him to sleep..... he needs to calm down so he can think clearly

\*\*\*Jabu nodded\*\*\*

Ruu: so he abused her physically and sexually

Mateo: yeah man...fucken pedophile!

\*\*\*Ruu sighed shaking his head...he was angry\*\*\*

Diego: so I called Mateo and we decided to take her out of that country before we can tell Jefe because her safety was our number one priority.....that puta was at large and the only witness to his sick crime “committed suicide” so Cataleya was the only thing that will send that motherfucker straight to jail and...

Mateo: and we did what we had to do before we could tell Jefe

Castiel: you did good!

Diego: the bastard ran away and the wife “committed suicide” and the results from the doctor says that it wasn’t the first time she was abused

Jabu: hai man what has this world come to

\*\*\*he said shaking his head thinking about his daughter Jabulile\*\*\*

Mateo: and that puta is a brother to a notorious gangster there so they gonna do anything possible to make sure there's no evidence of what he did

Heath: including killing her and making sure her body is never found

Jabu: a ka nnyela nnyammae..... a tle mo ko mo kgaola marete....he should come o tlo bona masepa

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Diego: our boy also found out that the docket in the police station went missing so you know where all that was leading to

Jabu: those fuckers should come here...i pray they come here looking for her cause I wanna see something

Heath: yeah they should Mjava

\*\*\*Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Ruu: is she bad?

Mateo: they treated her but she's gonna need you man, she's in pain and.....you need to do your thing cause the hospital can only do so much

Ruu: let me go take care of her now

\*\*\*then he looked at a silent Cass\*\*\*

Ruu: Cass you good

Castiel: im about to be a father so what that fucker did touched a sensitive place in me which is hardly touched and we should all chill cause La Parka will deal with him, our focus should be on the little one

\*\*\*he got up\*\*\*

Jabu: heh Mshikaro kganthe dinwa madi di kgona go imisa ka nnete? ( Mshikaro can vampires impregnate for real)

\*\*\*he whispered to Heath and Heath shrugged

his shoulders\*\*\*

Castiel: let me go check on Phumi

\*\*\*he walked out and Ruu followed him\*\*\*

Ruu: hey what's wrong man...something is off with you

\*\*\*Cass stopped moving and he sighed looking at Ruu\*\*\*

Castiel: the brethren are getting closer, they were at one of the clubs I own in Durban and they were asking questions about me

Ruu: what...damn it!

Castiel: im just lucky none of my employees have met me and only my boy Brain who is part of the security detail knows how I look like...he's the one that called me

Ruu: they are now getting on my fucken last nerve!

\*\*\*he said pissed off\*\*\*



Castiel: can you believe those fuckers where going around with my picture asking my customers and employees if they've seen me before

Ruu: let's deal with this first then we'll deal with them once and for all

Castiel: yeah

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: let me go check on Phumi

Ruu: how is she?

Castiel: the baby is growing fast and she's starting to feel pains

Ruu: let me go see Cataleya first then I'll come see her

Castiel: ok

\*\*\*he patted his shoulder and walked away\*\*\*

UPSTAIRS

Castiel: does it hurt too much

Phumi: not too much but it's painful

\*\*\*he continued to rub her belly\*\*\*

Phumi: I need to pee

\*\*\*she said with a low tone, she couldn't even look him in the eyes.....anyway he helped her stand then she took one step and she felt dizzy, she then felt the room spinning and Cass caught her before she could hit the ground\*\*\*

DOWNSTAIRS

\*\*\*Ruu felt Cass mind-connecting to his\*\*\*

Ruu: "Cass"

\*\*\*he mind communicated with him\*\*\*

Cass: " come upstairs Phumi just fainted...she's regaining consciousness but im...."

Ruu: " im coming"

\*\*\*he got up\*\*\*

Ruu: I'll be back just continue to rub her wounds with this

Mbali: ok

\*\*\*he rushed upstairs\*\*\*

UPSTAIRS

\*\*\*the door opened and Ruu walked in\*\*\*

Ruu: the way she's moaning I thought you two are having sex

\*\*\*he said walking further in\*\*\*

Castiel: really man?

\*\*\*he walked to Phumi\*\*\*

Ruu: hi im Ruslan his brother....nice to finally put a face to a name

\*\*\*she shook his hand and she noticed that his body temperature was normal unlike Castiel's\*\*\*

Castiel: he's the youngest and im the oldest

\*\*\*Ruu looked at him\*\*\*

Castiel: she knows

Ruu: ooh ok then

\*\*\*he sat next to her, she was sweating profoundly and shaking a bit\*\*\*

Ruu: may i?

\*\*\*she nodded and he put his hands on her belly looking away from Phumi.....he mumbled a spell and his eyes turned yellow.....after some time his eyes went back to normal and he put his hand on her forehead for some time then he pulled it back and sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: what it is?

Ruu: you're right he's growing too fast and her body has started taking strain

Castiel: how long will she be able to carry him?

Ruu: 9 weeks

Castiel: damn

Phumi: ni...nine weeks

Ruu: yeah but don't worry we will be with you every step of the way ok

Castiel: yeah bello we will be with you every step of the way

\*\*\*Ruu raised his eyebrow looking at him and he ignored him\*\*\*

Ruu: ok

\*\*\*he gave Castiel a small bottle filled with a potion\*\*\*

Ruu: help her drink it, it's bitter and she will feel some..... ummm pain but it will fade away in a few seconds

\*\*\*he got up and Castiel sat down and helped Phumi to drink the mixture and Phumi made a face and Castiel kissed her forehead and Ruu raised his eyebrow again.....after a few

seconds she started groaning with pain\*\*\*

Phumi: ahhhh

\*\*\*she screamed holding her belly.....Castiel brushed her hair gently\*\*\*

Ruu: it will fade away hold on

\*\*\*she continued to scream with tears gushing out.....Cass was busy brushing her hair with his right hand and holding her left hand with his left hand...she held on until the pain faded away and she lay there breathing heavily with her eyes closed and Castiel wiped her tears off\*\*\*

Castiel: you still feeling pain?

\*\*\*she shook her head no slowly and Castiel kissed her forehead again\*\*\*

Castiel: its ok...its ok

\*\*\*he said kissing her forehead again and he perked her lips and Ruu raised his eyebrow again then suddenly her belly grew a bit, you

could now see a bump\*\*\*

Ruu: " I didn't know she meant this much to you"

\*\*\*he mind-communicated with Cass\*\*\*

Castiel: "piss off man"

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: how are you feeling now?

Phumi: I feel lighter and the pain is gone

\*\*\*Castiel kissed her forehead and he rubbed her belly and he noticed the bump and he looked at Ruu\*\*\*

Ruu: "relax or you'll freak her out but damn Cass I thought I was whipped but you take the trophy man"

\*\*\*he mind communicated with Cass\*\*\*

Castiel: " fuck off"

\*\*\*Ruu chuckled\*\*\*

Ruu: well the potion will last for 48 hours then you'll have to drink it again....i'll make enough to last her for 9 weeks

Castiel: thanks bro

Ruu: ummm Phumi thank you for....carrying his seed..... I know you might have not given your consent

\*\*\*He said looking at Castiel who gave him a deadly stare\*\*\*

Ruu: but you're about to make his sorry ass a father and me an uncle so Thank you

\*\*\*she opened her eyes but she didn't say anything her eyes just got teary\*\*\*

Ruu: ok let me go back to Cataleya I'll come check up on her later

Castiel: ok call me when Ray wakes up

\*\*\*he nodded and walked out, closing the door on his way out and Castiel sighed\*\*\*



Castiel: you sure you ok

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Phumi: I still need to pee

Castiel: ooh yah

\*\*\*he picked her up bridal style and went to the bathroom with her on his arms\*\*\*

-----

AT KAZI'S PLACE

\*\*\* she has been trying Menzi for some time now and she still can't get hold of him, she even went to his place and the maid said he took his kids to his parent's house and she hasn't seen him since....she looked at the phone numbers on her phone screen for some time then she sighed and she bit her lower lip calling them, the phone rang and it got answered on the fourth ring\*\*\*

Castiel: yah

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

Kazi: hi

Castiel: what do you want?

\*\*\*she couldn't believe he was this cold towards her while that time he made her cum without even touching her\*\*\*

Kazi: can you talk

Castiel: what do you want?

Kazi: can we meet up, I wanna talk to you about something

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: you need help Kazi, this entitlement syndrome you have going on will be your downfall if you're not careful

\*\*\*then he dropped the call...she looked at the screen of her phone not believing that he said that then she clicked her tongue feeling angry\*\*\*

Kazi: mxm hlala nesdudla sakho nx ( stay with your fat person)....you don't know what you're missing out on nx you fucken asshole!

\*\*\*she then tried Menzi's numbers again and it send her straight to voicemail\*\*\*

Kazi: AARG!

\*\*\*she threw the phone on the couch next to her and she sighed with her hands covering her face\*\*\*

-----

Snakes: you look like shit ndoda

\*\*\*Menzi looked up and found Snakes standing by the door of his office in one of his clubs\*\*\*

Menzi: Mamba

\*\*\*he walked further in and sat down then he put a usb stick on the table\*\*\*

Menzi: is it all the intel on him

Snakes: yeah

Menzi: ok I'll study it and tell you the day and time

Snakes: alright but know that baba wants it done asap

Menzi: yeah I know don't worry

Snakes: now spill it out udla yini ndoda ( what eating you up)

\*\*\*Menzi sighed and he sat back\*\*\*

Snakes: woman problems?

Menzi: eish you have no idea

\*\*\*Snakes chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: she confessed to still having feelings for her ex

Snakes: daaamn!

Menzi: I don't know what to do with that or how to feel about it man

Snakes: how the fuck did she even confess to that

Menzi: she was fighting with her cousin then she told me she's gonna go and fix thing and im like super cause bese ngikhathele ( I was tired) with their fight then i got a call from a guy she later said its her ex Castiel and nigga said.....

Snakes: whooooh

\*\*\*he interrupted him\*\*\*

Snakes: did you say Castiel?

Menzi: yeah uyamazi? ( do you know him)

Snakes: uyabona lapho mfowethu.....khohlwa ( you see there bro.... forget it)

Menzi: huh?

\*\*\*he said confused\*\*\*

Snakes: phuma kuye ndoda ( leave her man)

Menzi: what?

Snakes: khohlwa ngaye ndoda....phuma lapho  
( forget about her man....leave her) its for you  
own good

Menzi: wait...you know the guy?

Snakes: you don't wanna mess with him nja  
yami ( my dog)....trust me she's not worth it

Menzi: who is he?

Snakes: satan's last born

Menzi: heh?

Snakes: look if you still want to fix things with  
her then take her to a Saint John  
church...ubatshela bamchathe, bamgabhise  
futhi bamgezise isinyama .... then take her to  
iZCC church and ubatshela bamfafaze  
ngemanzi wesawoti and bamnike tee  
etshesane and bamfake ne safety belt then take  
her to eShembe, you know what they should do  
to her there then take her to abofire-fire church  
so they pray for her in tongues

\*\*\*Menzi was still confused as to who the hell is this Castiel of a person for Snakes to be this freaked out about him....what he didn't know is Snakes wasn't freaking about "him" per se but about what he is cause him and supernatural things they don't mix at all\*\*\*

Menzi: who the fuck is this guy?

Snakes: like I said satan's last born...

\*\*\*he got up\*\*\*

Snakes: walk around with a small bible in your pocket and some garlic and a holy rosary just incase

Menzi: but it didn't seem like he's still interested in her, he told me to come take her or he'll end her cause she was insulting her cousin...yeah some shit like that

Snakes: mfowethu do what I just advised you to do and stay the fuck away from that bloodsucking motherfucker uma ufuna ukuphila

isikhathi eside ( if you want to live long) and yah  
if he says he'll kill her believe him

\*\*\*Menzi brushed his beard worried\*\*\*

Snakes: another advice, if you really love her  
give her some space until she knows what she  
really wants cause you have kids ndoda and  
they should come first...shap

\*\*\*he walked out leaving Menzi thinking hard\*\*\*

.

18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....27

.

.

.



Ray: lure them here

\*\*\*they all looked at him\*\*\*

Mat: jefe

Ray: I said lure them here, I want them to come here looking to finish her off

Jabu: nou wa ova big Ray ( now you're talking)

\*\*\* he said with a smirk on his face then he then looked at Mat\*\*\*

Jabu: lure them here Mateu....we wanna show them something

\*\*\*Mat sighed\*\*\*

Mat: ok I'll leave a trail that will lead them here

Ray: and track their every move

\*\*\*Mat nodded then he walked out with his laptop to the basement where he likes to work without being disturbed and Cass got up too\*\*\*

Cass: the notorious gang leader brother is mine

\*\*\*then he walked out and Jabu looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

Jabu: o mo nwa madi Ruru?...nx eish kane setsotsitaal ke dololo mo wena ( will he suck his blood Ruru?....eish I forgot you cant understand the thug language)... so i said will he drink his blood Ruru

\*\*\*Heath chuckled and Ruslan shook his head chuckling too\*\*\*

Ruslan: human blood is not part of his diet man

Jabu: then how will he deal with the brother

\*\*\*Ray got up\*\*\*

Ray: good luck Ruu

\*\*\*he walked out and only Ruslan, Heath, Diego and Jabu were left sitting down\*\*\*

Ruslan: he can rip his heart out or detach his head from his body....or he can just pluck out his eyeballs

Heath: damn!

Jabu: o sa re damn ( you're saying damn),  
Observer, Caesar and Mad dog can do that

Diego: who are those?

Jabu: his multiple personalities

Diego: wait....you have those hombre ( man)

Jabu: he does keng e ka re ( why is it like) you  
don't believe me

Diego: I've never met someone who has  
personalities before so im surprised

Jabu: sa wara ( don't worry)...when those  
fuckers gets here im sure you'll meet one and I  
hope its Observer even though I despise the  
nigga

Heath: or maybe he won't come out....how  
about that!

\*\*\*he said getting up\*\*\*

Jabu: Observer is full of shit and he likes attention so believe me he'll come out

\*\*\*Heath shook his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: why do you even seem excited about those fuckers coming here Jabu

\*\*\*Jabu smirked\*\*\*

Jabu: cause I wanna see senwa madi ( the bloodsucker) in action live

\*\*\*Heath laughed and he took out his phone and dialed his wife\*\*\*

Naledi: my love

Heath: Obim....

\*\*\*he said walking out and Jabu also got up and he took out his phone\*\*\*

Jabu: let me call my own wife too.....a ka se mphale lenna

\*\*\*he walked out dialing Amo's numbers\*\*\*

Ruslan: he's a special case this one

Diego: puedes decir eso otra vez ( you can say that again)

\*\*\* They chuckled\*\*\*

Diego: damn...I've never seen jefe that angry and broken man

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: well I have and it's not a nice sight to see

Diego: do you think it's a good idea to lure them here

Ruslan: no but it's good for La Parca

Diego: ooh yah

Ruslan: how long will you be in the country for?

Diego: three weeks

Ruslan: ok I need a favour man

Diego: estoy escuchando (im listening)

Ruslan: the brethren are here in the country  
looking for Castiel and i

Diego: fuck no

\*\*\*he said with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Ruslan: they are going around asking about  
Castiel using his old photo in KZN

Diego: bastardos ( bastards)

Ruslan: so can you....

\*\*\*he interrupted him\*\*\*

Diego: I'll speak to the Cubans deployed there

Ruslan: make sure they don't approach them....i  
just want to know where they are and where  
they headed

Diego: I almost forgot how dangerous they are

Ruslan: and it's those annoying twins Cosmo  
the bitch and Constantine the asshole

Diego: damn it

Ruslan: war is coming hombre and it's gonna be nasty as hell

Diego: I guess we all better get ready then

\*\*\*then they saw the lights flick vigorously and Ruslan quickly got up\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh damn it!

\*\*\*he rushed out\*\*\*

-----

UPSTAIRS ( a few minutes ago)

\*\*\* Mbali was sleeping with Cataleya and Kalu next to her, she was deep in her sleep when suddenly she opened her eyes and she was lying on the cold floor, she quickly got up looking around and she could see she wasn't in her house.... her heart beat fast cause she could now clearly see that she wasn't in her house.....she heard some shouting and she saw a vase and she picked it up and walked there

slowly, she saw two figures a man and a woman arguing but what freaked her out was the way they are.... they looked like holograms, even the way they moved wasn't normal...the man slapped the woman hard and she fell on the ground and he pulled her up by her hair while she screamed....Mbali rushed there\*\*\*

Mbali: LET HER GO YOU SON OF A BITCH!

\*\*\*she shouted but it was like they couldn't see her or hear her, she got to them and she tried to hit the man with the vas but it just went through him.....she moved back slowly shocked with her heart beating out of her ribcage\*\*\*

Mbali: what's going..... ooh my God RAY...BABY!

\*\*\*she called out for him looking around but Ray didn't answer\*\*\*

Mbali: ooh my God...where am i...

\*\*\*then she heard a faint cry of a baby behind her, she turned and looked around but she



didn't see any baby but the cry didn't stop...she followed the cry until she ended up in a bedroom and on top of the bed was a baby, covered in blood faintly crying....she rushed there and stopped on her tracks and the vas she was holding slipped out of her hands and smashed on the floor when she saw the identity of the baby\*\*\*

Mbali: ooh my God Cataleya

\*\*\*she said with her hands shaking with tears running down her cheeks\*\*\*

Mbali: Leya?

\*\*\*she tried to pick her up but she couldn't touch her also, her hands just went through her.....she saw the blood on her naked lower body and she shook her head moving backwards, she was visibly shaking and crying\*\*\*

Mbali: Leya...Le....ooh my God....ooh my

God...ooh my God...no...no...no

\*\*\*she said then she let out a painful cry.....she went to her again and tried to pick her up but she couldn't touch her\*\*\*

Mbali: why can't I touch her....why can't I touch you Leya

\*\*\*she said trying to pick her up countless time but she couldn't....she turned and ran out of the bedroom screaming for help and she found the man and woman not there , she ran to the door and tried to touch it so she could open it but she couldn't...she screamed for help then she ran back to the bedroom and the bed was empty even the bloodied sheets were now clean\*\*\*

Mbali: Leya...Cataleya!

\*\*\*she called out for her looking around and she couldn't find her\*\*\*

Mbali: someone please wake me up

please....this has to be a dream....it has to be a dream

\*\*\* she said crying then her mind thought of Saint the demon\*\*\*

Mbali: yes..yes.....SAINT....SAINT....SAINT BABY PLEASE HELP ME....HELP MOMMY!

\*\*\* AND THAT'S WHEN RUSLAN AND EVERYONE IN THE HOUSE SAW THE LIGHTS FLICK \*\*\*\*

DOWNSTAIRS

\*\*\*Ray and Ruslan met on the staircase running, they didn't say anything to one another they just ran up the stairs and budged inside the main bedroom and rushed to Mbali.....she was mumbling things in her sleep\*\*\*

Ray: baby wake up...wake up!

\*\*\*he said shaking her but she wasn't waking up....Ruslan looked over at Kalu who's sleeping

next to Cataleya and his were opened and they were black in colour \*\*\*

Ruslan: Saint is in there

Ray: what the fuck is going.....Mballi open your eyes baby...open them please

\*\*\*she then started shaking vigorously and tears gushed out of her closed eyes and Ray held her trying to restrain her\*\*\*

Ray: Mballi wake up...please don't do this to me im begging you!

\*\*\* Castiel mind communicated with Ruu\*\*\*

Cass: "what's going on Madou"

Ruslan: " its Mballi and Saint....come and take Cataleya"

Cass: " ok"

\*\*\*within a blink of an eye he was here\*\*\*

Castiel: what's happening?

Ruslan: her spirit is trapped somewhere and it can't come back

Cass: damn it.... tell me what to do

Ruslan: take Cataleya and make sure her and Phumi are ok, im sure Phumi is freaked out by all this lights flicking

Cass: yeah

\*\*\*He took Cataleya and walked out then Ruslan put his palm on her forehead and his eyes turned black\*\*\*

BACK TO MBALI

\*\*\*Saint was now covering Mbali with his black smoke to prevent her from seeing the woman hanging on the ceiling....then they heard Ruslan's voice\*\*\*

Ruslan: Saint take her out of there!

Saint: only mommy can get herself out

\*\*\*by now Ray was sitting on the edge of the

bed holding Mbali's shaking body\*\*\*

Ruslan: right...Mbali I need you to create a door that only you can open

Mbali: i...how...i can't do that...i cant?

Ruslan: yes you can Mbali remember that place is not real, it exists in real life but right now it's not real his flower.....you are being shown what really happened there, whatever you're seeing has already happened so please his flower create a door that only you can touch....you can do it, Cataleya is here with me and she's crying for you

Mbali: she..she's there?

Ruslan: yeah now use your mind to create that door so you can come out of there

Mbali: ok

\*\*\*she closed her eyes and she imagined a pink door on the wall and it appeared\*\*\*

Saint: mommy you did it

\*\*\*he moved her towards the door and only opened a small way from the black smoke and Mbali reached out to the door handle and she could touch it then she quickly opened the door\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Ray saw her opening her eyes and she gasped for air then black smoke came of her nostrils, mouth and ears and it formed a figure next to the bed and Mbali's breathing became normal but all of a sudden she started breathing fast and she jumped up ready to ran but Ray was holding her tight.....as for Saint, he went back to sleep\*\*\*

Ray: its ok you're save now...you're safe baby...you're save

\*\*\*she looked around with her eyes popped out then she heard Kalu crying....Ruslan picked him

up and Mbali frowned\*\*\*

Mbali: where's Cataleya....where is she

\*\*\*she said panicking\*\*\*

Ray: relax she's safe, she's with Castiel and Phumi....she's sleeping

\*\*\*she breathed out then she indicated that Ruu give her Kalu and he did since he was crying his lungs out....she kissed him all over his tiny handsome face \*\*\*

Mbali: thank you baby....Thank you Saint....you did good baby....you did good

\*\*\*he stopped crying and his eyes switched from normal to black then to normal again and he made cute baby sound and Mbali smiled...she then took out her breast and fed him.....Ray brushed Kalu's hair and he bend down and kissed his forehead\*\*\*

Ray: you did good my boy....keep it up



\*\*\*Saint made cute sounds while sucking on her mama's breast then Ray kissed Mbali's forehead and he wiped her face\*\*\*

Ray: don't ever scare me like that my flower

Ruslan: what happened his flower?

\*\*\*she told them what happened \*\*\*

Mbali: please tell Cass to bring Leya

Ruslan: ok

\*\*\*he mind-communicated with Cass\*\*\*

Ruslan: this gift of hers is dangerous Ray

Ray: I know but its like its triggered by traumatic shit that she experiences

Ruslan: with Zambo?

Ray: Whoever or whatever gave her this gift was trying to show her the danger approaching her family but unfortunately Zambo saw her spirit

\*\*\*Ruslan nodded then Cass walked in with a

sleeping Cataleya....Ray took Kalu from her since he was done feeding and she took Cataleya and kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Mbali: when will she wake up?

\*\*\*she said looking at Ruslan\*\*\*

Ruslan: two hours tops....she needs to rest

\*\*\*she nodded then she sniffed\*\*\*

Mbali: why would they show me that.....that man hanged her wife she didn't commit suicide so what's that got to do with me

\*\*\*Ray kissed the top of her head\*\*\*

Ruslan: there's a reason why they took you there and made you see all that you saw his flower....you'll figure it out as time goes by

Mbali: I don't wanna think about it....i don't wanna see Leya like that ever again

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Ray: its ok....you don't have to.....im just glad you're ok my flower

\*\*\*he kissed the side of her head and she continued to brush Leya curly hair gently sniffing....Ray got up with Kalu in his hands and he whispered to his ear\*\*\*

Ray: analyze what you saw in there and find out why they took mommy there but do it discreetly

\*\*\*Kalu made cute baby sound and Ray kissed his forehead\*\*\*

## DOWNSTAIRS

\*\*\*Cass and Phumi walked down the stairs and found the guys sitting in the lounge eating pizza except for Ray and Mbali they were still upstairs with Leya and Kalu\*\*\*

Cass: wow so ya'll are eating without us

Mateo: relax we left some for the couples

\*\*\*Jabu stopped eating and he looked at Phumi

and he smirked looking at Castiel\*\*\*

Cass: what

Jabu: where are your manners Mr night walker...etsa di intro man ( introduce us man)

Diego: did you just call him Mr night walker hombre

\*\*\*he said holding in his laugh\*\*\*

Jabu: yah he's the night walker and im a day walker

\*\*\*they busted out with laughter\*\*\*

Cass: ignore him bello he's the special one

Jabu: esmaar net you know I cant kick your ass because of....that..... so you're lucky....mara voetsek

\*\*\*Heath laughed while other chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: you done

Jabu: no

\*\*\*he got up and he extended his hand out to Phumi for a handshake\*\*\*

Jabu: Jabu is the name and handsome is my middle name so wena beautiful what's your name

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

Phumi: Phu...Phumi

\*\*\*she shook his hand and Cass pulled Phumi's hand away from the handshake\*\*\*

Cass: that's enough handshake

\*\*\*Jabu chuckled\*\*\*

Jabu: yeer isikhwele esingaka Castiel ( so much jealousy Cass)

Castiel: tsek

\*\*\*Jabu laughed and he went to sit down\*\*\*

Ruslan: she shouldn't stand too long Cass

Cass: umm Phumi these are my

brothers....Mateo, Diego, Heath and Mr day  
walker Jabu and you already know Ruslan....Ray  
is upstairs with his wife Mbali, you met her  
when we got here

Phumi: nice to meet you all

Them: same here

Cass: alright then see you tomorrow, tell Ray I'll  
call him later

Jabu: wa vaya? ( you're leaving)

Cass: Phumi needs to rest

Jabu: wait a minute....let her sit for a minute  
hao

Cass: no...no no...not happening

\*\*\* the guys laughed at Cass's reaction\*\*\*

Ruslan: let her sit for a minute Cass like I told  
you she's not supposed to stand for a long time

Jabu: yah

Cass: mxm

\*\*\*him and Phumi sat down and Cass held her hand and the guys looked at each other\*\*\*

Cass: stop acting like you've never seen a man and woman holding hands

Mateo: well we have never seen you holding a woman's hand

Diego: mmmmh

Cass: wow you too Dee?

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Diego: yho man they are influencing me im telling you....i think I should just go back to Cuba before I lose myself and become like them

\*\*\*he said with his deep Spanish accent and they all laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: so suster Phumza

\*\*\*she looked at him smiling shyly\*\*\*

Jabu: so you are pregnant heh

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Jabu: wa no motlogela a go banisa njalo nje  
( you just let him impregnate you just like that)

\*\*\*she didn't know what to say to that so she  
just kept quiet\*\*\*

Jabu: wa jaja gore why kere ke nightwalker ( do  
you understand why I call him the nightwalker)

\*\*\*she looked at Cass and nodded looking  
down\*\*\*

Jabu: wa jaja ( you know)

\*\*\*he asked with a shocked voice\*\*\*

Phumi: yeah

Cass: Jabu!

Jabu: and o shap ka dai deng (and you're cool  
with that)



\*\*\*he ignored him and she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: he was born like this and its not like he can change who or what he is

\*\*\*Cass smirked and Ruslan was happy with her answer\*\*\*

Jabu: damn dimpya tse dingwe di lucky jong  
( damn some dogs are lucky)

Heath: Mjava

\*\*\*he said holding in a laugh\*\*\*

Cass: you making her uncomfortable Jabu

Jabu: relax man....yehlisa isikhwele kancane  
( take the jealousy down a notch) man night walker before you scare off our very own Jill Scott

\*\*\*Phumi looking down trying not to laugh and Cass gave him a deadly look\*\*\*

Jabu: don't mind him im sure he has never met someone like you that's why he's behaving like

this and plus these are the perks of dating a million years old man, you should ask Thandi Ruslan is like that with her too

\*\*\*loud laughter erupted\*\*\*

Ruslan: fuck you!

Jabu: it's the truth hao

Cass: let's go bello cause once he starts he doesn't stop

Jabu: wait kancane hao entlek ujugeleni ( wait a little why are you in a hurry)....anyway JS we both know your man here is old like ancient old so aren't you scared your child will come out looking wrinkled with a grey beard and grey hair like an old man

\*\*\*loud laughter erupted\*\*\*

Castiel: voetsek Jabu man

Jabu: ah ah ngiyazibuzela nje ( im just asking)

Heath: don't mind him Phumi most of the time

he's worse than this

Jabu: o nya go reng Mshikaro (what are you trying to say Mshikaro)

Heath: gore you forgot to take your pills

Jabu: fosek

\*\*\*then he looked at Phumi\*\*\*

Jabu: ka dlala JS ( im playing Jill Scott) I just want to embarrass him nyana

\*\*\*Phumi laughed a bit\*\*\*

Jabu: mara on a serious note this nigga better buy you a private jet as a push out present cause yeses gape nthwe e rwele tlhogo suster ( this thing has a big head sister)

\*\*\*Heath laughed and Phumi laughed too, she tried to hold herself but she couldn't \*\*\*

Cass: really bello so now you're laughing at his stupidity

Jabu: tsek.... stupidity is that huge head of yours that has been filled with problems of the universe since 1847 when you were born

\*\*\*more loud laughter and Cass stood up and Jabu also stood up and went to stand behind Ruslan\*\*\*

Jabu: you better do something Ruu remember you're dating my sister

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

Castiel: uzonya Jabulani ( you'll shit yourself Jabulani)

\*\*\*he said pointing at him\*\*\*

Jabu: nna my wife smears me with the holy oil  
Cass you touch me and you'll burn to ashes

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

Cass: lets see if I'll burn then

\*\*\*he said moving towards him\*\*\*

Jabu: RUU YOU BETTER DO SOMETHING!

Ruslan: Cass stop it man

\*\*\*he said wiping his tears off still laughing as for Phumi she tried not to laugh but it was just too hard\*\*\*

Cass: so you talk shit and embarrass me in front of my woman cause you know Madou will save your ugly ass heh

Jabu: vele ( yes) gape you have powers and I don't.....if you want us to fight man to man wena thatha ubuvampire bakho ububeke le ( take your vampire side and put it away ) then we will fight like men skhiphane inkani once....not what you want to do, imagine man vs vampire even okhokho bami (my ancestors) will complain cause its not fair

\*\*\*Phumi's tears were now running down her cheeks as she laughed her ass off, she couldn't believe how crazy Jabu was\*\*\*

Jabu: ah ah you'll just push me once and I'll land on that wall and crash my insides and they'll turn into mince meat instantly then I'll become an ancestor leaving fuckers to eat my wife's pussy while ngimele aboHeath, big Ray and noMJ ukuthi bazongithelela isnuff se6landi nomqombhothi wemamSibiya that was made by otikoloshi bakhe ethuneni lam babusy bangitshela inkinga zabo zoknuka ingathi yimi uJesu owafa esiphambanweni ngenxa yezono zabo ( waiting for Heath, big Ray and Mj to come and pour R6 snuff and mamSibiya's traditional beer that is prepared by her zombies to my grave busy telling me their useless problems as if im Jesus who died on the cross for their sins)..... awunyi perhaps

\*\*\*Heath was now on the floor while Phumi couldn't even breathe will all the laughter she was having\*\*\*

Jabu: I'll never rest in peace because of Heath,

big Ray and more especially Mj with their endless problems so they need to become ancestors first so when I finally become one I'll get to rest in peace

\*\*\*More loud laughter and Cass just laughed shaking his head as he was defeated\*\*\*

Jabu: so if you wanna fight me take out your Vampire side and put it aside first until then im bound by the blood of Jesus so touch me and uzosha ndoda ( you'll burn man)

\*\*\*Cass just helped Phumi up gently\*\*\*

Cass: let's go bello

\*\*\*he said chuckling and they walked out laughing and Jabu went to sit down\*\*\*

Jabu: yeeer that was close

\*\*\*they laughed some more \*\*\*

-----

LATER ON AT CASTIEL'S HOUSE

Phumi: is Mbali ok now

\*\*\*Cass sighed\*\*\*

Cass: yeah this thing that happened to Leya hit her hard

\*\*\*Phumi sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: I would go crazy too so I can't imagine what she's going through

\*\*\*Cass brushed her belly and he felt a move and smiled while Phumi frowned\*\*\*

Cass: you felt that

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Cass: he didn't hurt you right

Phumi: it was more like a light cramp

\*\*\*she sighed and Cass looked at her\*\*\*

Cass: I know it's a lot to take in bello but im here with you and I'll be with you every step of the way



Phumi: im scared Cass

\*\*\*she said and tears ran down her cheeks then  
Cass quickly pulled her in for a hug\*\*\*

Cass: I know...im scared too

\*\*\*she sniffed\*\*\*

Phumi: what are you scared of, im the one who  
might die not you

Cass: if you die I'll die too and I feel like this is it  
you know, what I have been longing for bello....a  
family of my own so im scared that if you die I  
won't have it....im not scared of death but im  
scared of dying before I get to experience how  
it's like to be a family man

\*\*\*she kept quiet and she wiped her tears\*\*\*

Phumi: what do you mean you'll....die  
too....vamps can't ....die right?

Cass: in the eyes of higher beings im a creature,  
an abomination and im not supposed to

associate myself with humans especially the ones favoured up there

Phumi: I don't understand

\*\*\*she said getting off his hold and she looked at him\*\*\*

Cass: you belong to the man upstairs while I....

\*\*\*he kept quiet\*\*\*

Phumi: why do you call yourself a creature?

\*\*\*she said sitting up and supporting her back with the headboard\*\*\*

Cass: cause that's what im called

Phumi: by who?

Cass: some powerful higher beings

Phumi: God?

\*\*\*Cass laughed\*\*\*

Cass: ofcourse not

Phumi: then fuck those higher beings

\*\*\*he gave her a shocked look\*\*\*

Phumi: only God can judge you Cass and since God doesn't judge then to hell with everyone else

\*\*\*he was still shocked\*\*\*

Phumi: I know its hard to always ignore comments or people who look down on you.... I know cause most of the time they get to me and hit me where it hurt the most but I always remind myself that as long as God doesn't see me as less of a woman, a failure or a fat unattractive woman then im not

Cass: you're not fat Phumi....you're chubby..... I mean have you seen yourself, your ass and curves....your smooth skin as if you bath in milk.....you have no stretch marks or cellulite I mean people would give anything to have your skin and your genes

Phumi: well not everyone shares your sentiments Cass

Cass: you mean Kazi

\*\*\*She sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: anyway what I wanted to say is until God himself calls you a creature to your face, then you're not....who knows maybe they are jealous that you stopped aging and you'll forever look handsome while they look like izinto ezisabekayo ( scary things)

\*\*\*Castiel busted out with loud laughter when he thought about how La Parca looks.....she waited for him to calm down which took some time\*\*\*

Cass: you're crazy you know that

\*\*\*she smiled a little\*\*\*

Phumi: so don't call yourself a creature ever again

Cass: yes mam.....but tell me here why would he be protective of you while you swear like this

\*\*\*she frowned\*\*\*

Phumi: who?

Cass: the man upstairs

Phumi: how do you know he's....you know what im not even gonna ask

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: and she's learning

Phumi: mxm

\*\*\*she punched him a bit but nigga didn't flinch or anything it was like he was hard rock\*\*\*

Phumi: ouch

Cass: don't ever do that you'll break your hand bello

\*\*\*he took her hand and massaged it a bit then he kissed it\*\*\*

Cass: tell me here do you even pray?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Phumi: it's more like God is my therapist and im his patient.....i talk to him a lot and talking to him has helped me a lot and saved me from doing stupid things that would have had me killed or landed me in jail

\*\*\*she said looking down\*\*\*

Cass: im listening

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: I once caught Thabo and some girl named Sne at the local pub looking cozy, she was sitting on his lap and they were kissing.....i fought with the girl and even beat Thabo up then I left going back home, it wasn't that far from my house so I walked there in the middle of the night, my aim was to get there and take a knife, I wanted both of them dead for making me a fool I was ready to go to jail....the anger I

felt was uncontrollable and deadly and I felt like seeing them lying dead was gonna be the only thing that will make the pain and anger to go away

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: I got home grabbed the biggest and sharpest knife I could find and as I was heading to the door I heard a voice in my head, it told me to kneel..... I tried to ignore it but it kept on telling me to kneel....and at the same time there was this low pitched voice at the back of my mind pushing me to go back to that pub and kill them and guess what I chose my therapist instead, I kneeled down and I let it all out....all the hurt I was feeling, the betrayal and the anger I told them all to him and the best part is he's a good listener and he never interrupts you when you talk to him or give you empty promises, you just see through his actions that he got your back and he had mine..... so I just talked to him

until I passed out on the floor

\*\*\*Cass looked at her with an intense look\*\*\*

Phumi: my biggest mistake was forgiving  
Thabo cause he never stopped messing around  
with that woman

\*\*\*Cass clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Phumi: I almost threw my life away for that man  
and if it wasn't for God I would either be dead or  
in jail and since then God is my confidant and I  
talk to him especially when im at a crossed  
road and I don't know what to do

Castiel: allow me to send a letter to your people

\*\*\*he said out of the blue and she looked at him  
with a frown on her face\*\*\*

Phumi: what?

Castiel: for ilobolo( dowry) and damages

Phumi: Cass....



\*\*\*she said with a low tone shaking her head\*\*\*

Cass: allow me please

\*\*\*she opened her mouth to say something but words failed her\*\*\*

Cass: you have until tomorrow morning to give me your consent or I'll send it either way

\*\*\*he perked her lips and got up\*\*\*

Cass: let me go prepare dinner

\*\*\*he walked out leaving her still tongue tied\*\*\*

Phumi: the fuck!

\*\*\*she whispered to herself\*\*\*

-----

GIYANI

\*\*\* its Friday and everyone was waiting for the hearse to bring kokwane's body, the family lied and told people that she died in her sleep. As for Joe he was still in a coma and the doctors

can't find out what's wrong with him, Jackson has been taking the whole thing hard, it was all weighing down on him.....while his uncle was at a verge of losing his mind.....every day he left the house he would feel like he was being followed and every time he looked in the mirror for a split second he would see James' face.....he couldn't even make it to his own mother's funeral that's how bad it is, all he does is lock himself inside his study and drink himself away.....

Anyway the hearse made a turn and it reversed towards the gate, people gathered and the mortuary man opened the back door and he took out the thing they put the coffin on top of and he walked inside the house and men took the coffin out of the hearse as people started singing church songs....then the moment Jackson laid his eyes on the coffin he started scratching his body, he then screamed jumping

up and down as he felt like his body was on fire and everyone stopped to look...he continued to scream taking off his jacket then continued to scratch his body screaming some more .....the "good" uncle rushed to him...by now people were whispering amongst themselves \*\*\*

Uncle: what's wrong with you Jack

Jackson: na tshwa malome ( im burning uncle)

Uncle: heh

\*\*\* the men took the coffin inside while people stood there watching and whispering...then Jackson took off his shirt and that's when family members grabbed him\*\*\*

Jackson: let go of me....let go of me

\*\*\*then he froze and his entire body shook....he was staring at "James" and it seemed like he was the only one there that could see him \*\*\*

Jackson: Ja...James

Uncle: heh

James: why?

Jackson: James nikhomele....nikhomele nako kombela ( James forgive me....forgive me im begging you)

\*\*\*he said crying and shaking with fear\*\*\*

Uncle: Jackson what's going on with you?

\*\*\*by now he was sweating and tears were running down his cheeks then "James" took a step forward and Jackson screamed and he ran out of the yard begging James to forgive him, his family members ran after him but he was too fast for them, the aunt's daughter went inside to her mother and told her what happened and the aunt's world came crushing down instantly cause Jackson is her favourite and Jackson going down like this meant she was next.....she told her daughter to tell the male family members to go find Jackson and

take her to her house\*\*\*

-----

## THE FOLLOWING DAY

\*\*\*kokwane was laid to rest and Jackson was still missing....on other news Heath and Jabu along with Lesedi went to Kitso's funeral and after that they went to join Castiel while Ray, Ruslan and Ray's grandfather went to pay for Phumi's dowry.....yes she finally agreed for Cass to pay for her dowry and damages after Cass thoroughly convinced her until she agreed, as for Phumi she told her mother the lie her and Cass cooped up about her being six months pregnant, she told her mother that she knew all along that she was pregnant but she was ashamed and scared to tell her cause apparently she had a one night stand with Cass six months ago and he disappeared on her, then when she went to KZN to visit Kazi they bumped into each other and she told him about

the pregnancy and that time he came to see her he was trying to convince her to allow him to do right by her but she was still with Thabo so she was ashamed, her mother was hurt that she kept the pregnancy from her but after a lot of apologies she forgave her and now she's happy that her only child is about to give her a grandchild she has been longing for and the man responsible for her pregnancy wants to do right by her, so even though it was short notice the lobolo negotiations went ahead and everything was paid\*\*\*

P.mom: how are you feeling now that you are Mrs Monteneiro

\*\*\*Phumi rolled her eyes\*\*\*

Phumi: the same mama bathong

\*\*\*she was helping her pack.....Phumi's mother only told her brothers to come and represent Phumi since she doesn't know her late

husband's immediate family, her late husband paid people to come and represent him when he wanted to marry her and his reason for not telling his family was that they disowned him so she just understood and never pushed to know more about the matter cause he didn't want to ever talk about his family\*\*\*

P.mom: you know this is all I ever wanted for you

\*\*\*she looked at her mother\*\*\*

P.mom: for you to meet a guy who will take good care of you.....a man who'll+ looks at you like you're the only precious thing on earth

Phumi: ma we don't even know each other that well so I don't know what you're talking about

P.mom: he loves you

\*\*\*she gave her mother a bored look\*\*\*

P.mom: im telling you and the way he's been

calling you since maabane ( yesterday)  
checking up on you and the baby its just cute,  
the man is head over heels nana

Phumi: he's just excited of being a father  
remember this is his first child so ofcourse he'll  
call a million times ma bathong

P.mom: ooh stop being in denial....that man  
loves you Phumi I know these things....just like I  
knew you were pregnant

\*\*\*Phumi just shook her head and her mother  
hugged her smiling emotionally\*\*\*

Phumi: mama you're being weird

P.mom: hai suka....you'll soon be a mother so  
one day you'll understand why im being like  
this.....i know I've been hard on you but it's  
because I only wanted what's best for you nana,  
im not gonna be around forever so I just wanted  
you to experience true love like I did with your  
father, I wanted to die knowing you're secured



and that you're in good hands when I go join my love in the after life

\*\*\*Phumi sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: can we not talk about death please

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

P.mom: he would have been proud you know...your father I mean

Phumi: I miss him

\*\*\*she said with tears in her eyes\*\*\*

P.mom: me too but I know he's waiting for me and he's also looking over us and now he's smiling from ear to ear cause his baby girl is married

\*\*\*Phumi faked a smile\*\*\*

P.mom: look I know you said you don't know each other that well but make it work nana...meet him half way and let him love you, that man just proved gore he knows what he

wants unlike boThabo ba ba go jeleng for 10 years for mahala nje ( Thabo who had sex with you for 10 years for free) and he couldn't even give you a promise ring at least nx

\*\*\*Phumi sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: Thabo neh

\*\*\*she remembered few days back when he beat her up and called her names\*\*\*

P.mom: mxm bona that stupid boy is your past now focus on your husband and your unborn baby....ba re ( they say) you don't know how precious a jewel is until you lose it and wa bona that failpop ( and you see that fool) he's about to realize what he lost when he lost you shame

Phumi: remember you used to love the same failpop mama

P.mom: mxm im sure he bewitched me moloile ( that wizard).....i don't even know why I tolerated his skinny ass for 10 years antse a ja

my only child for mahala ( while he fucked my daughter for free), entlek masepa a gae le boyellow ekare ke guava ya go bola ka mogare ( you know what fuck him with his yellow self like he's a ripe guava that's rotten inside)

\*\*\*Phumi laughed then they heard a knock and Phumi's mother went to check who it is and it was Castiel\*\*\*

P.mom: aah my son

\*\*\*Phumi held her laugh when she said that\*\*\*

Castiel: ummm I came to take her bags to the car....well that's if she's done packing

\*\*\*they were leaving the same day\*\*\*

P.mom: she is.... come in

\*\*\*he walked in and he smiled at Phumi then her phone rang and it was her man\*\*\*

P.mom: excuse me let me take this

\*\*\*she walked out answering it\*\*\*

Phumi: she should have said “aah mkhulu wami” instead of my son

Castiel: tsek

\*\*\*she laughed and he went to her and brushed her belly\*\*\*

Castiel: I was worried about you last night I even had to send Jabu to make sure you're ok

Phumi: but for him to wake me up from my sleep Cass...no man

Cass: I needed to make sure both of you are ok and plus Madou needed to do his things so the this little one doesn't give you problems

Phumi: but 24 hours wasn't over

Cass: I want you by my side at all times bello....i lose my mind when you aren't so talking to you made me calm the hell down cause believe me I would've been the one who knocked on the door next if you didn't wake up to go see Jabu

\*\*\*She sighed and looked up at him and he stole a kiss\*\*\*

Cass: I know were moving too fast but it will all be worth it at the end you'll see

Phumi: I hope so

Cass: well I know so

\*\*\*he then kissed her forehead\*\*\*

OUTSIDE

\*\*\*after Phumi's mother talked to her man another call came through as she was about to go back inside Phumi's bedroom and it was Kazi\*\*\*

P.mom: Ntandokazi

Kazi: ma unjani ( how are you ma)

P.mom: hai ngiyaphila ntombi yam and wena?  
( im alright my girl and you?)

Kazi: hai nami ngiyaphila ( im also alright) I just

miss you nje

P.mom: hai suka, you know where I live nje

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

Kazi: ahh work is keeping me super busy but I promise I'll make time when im not too busy

P.mom: mmmmh miss business woman, so how is it going baby

Kazi: aahh well im making money so the workload is worth it at the end of the day

P.mom: that's my girl, make that moola wena girl and come and spoil your favourite aunt

\*\*\*Kazi laughed\*\*\*

P.mom: so tell me here entlek nilwelani wena noPhumi ( why are you and Phumi fighting)

Kazi: huh

\*\*\*she was caught off guard\*\*\*

P.mom: today was her lobola negotiations and

you didn't come and when I ask her why you aren't here to celebrate with her athi nilwile but she won't tell me why

Kazi: wait amalobolo for Phumi? ( Phumi's dowry negotiations).....heh so uThabo has finally proposed?

P.mom: mxm oho don't tell me about that useless boy.....a guy named Castiel is the one that paid for her lobola

Kazi: wh....what did you say his name is ma?

P.mom: Castiel...heh yazi you girls can keep a secret I swear ningabulala umuntu ( you two can kill a person) and take the secret to the grave with you, imagine Phumi being six months pregnant and she hid it from me....six months nogal then boom some handsome man is the one that's responsible and not the boyfriend I know....hai but at least that man is responsible and he's doing right by her unlike

that failpop who wasted 10 years of her life nje

Kazi: oooh my God....oooh my God....it cant  
be...no it cant be

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice and Phumi's  
mother frowned\*\*\*

P.mom: Kazi are you ok

Kazi: she....she's pregnant with his child  
and....and he paid ilobolo for her?

P.mom: yeah...what's wrong, you sound funny....  
are you ok?

\*\*\*then she heard something falling hard on the  
other side of the phone\*\*\*

P.mom: Kazi?

\*\*\*nothing\*\*\*

P.mom: Kazi....Ntandokazi are you still there?

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

P.mom: hebanna



\*\*\*she looked at the screen and Kazi didn't drop the call\*\*\*

P.mom: hello....hello Ntandokazi?

\*\*\*still nothing\*\*\*

P.mom: mxm

\*\*\*she dropped the call\*\*\*

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....28

.

.

.

\*\*\*it's been a few hours since Kazi woke up she was now at her place drinking to numb the pain

in her heart....Well one of her employees found her passed out on the floor and she sprinkled some water on her face and she woke up.....she couldn't believe that Castiel paid dowry for Phumi but what baffled her the most is the fact that Phumi was six months pregnant...six months!\*\*\*

Kazi: maybe...maybe the baby is Thabo's and Castiel shoots blanks so this was the only way he could be a father....yah that's the only explanation

\*\*\*She said to herself then she took her other new phone and dialed Castiel's numbers....it rang for some time and send her to voicemail\*\*\*

Kazi: nx

\*\*\*she tried it again and he answered\*\*\*

Cass: yah

\*\*\*his voice made her swallowed hard\*\*\*

Kazi: hi

\*\*\* she said with a low tone, even his voice nje had a strong effect on her\*\*\*

Castiel: who's this?

Kazi: it's Kazi

Castiel: what do you want?

\*\*\*he was so cold towards her\*\*\*

Kazi: so I see you're ready to father another man's child

Castiel: what are you talking about?

Kazi: the child Phumi is carrying, we both know its Thabo's child so let me guess you're impotent and now you want to father another man's child

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: is that what your tiny brain is telling you?

Kazi: don't insult me Castiel, I know what im

talking about

Castiel: maybe Phumi and I met six months ago and we fucked how about that

Kazi: Phumi would have told me

Castiel: we got together behind your back and now she's even my wife and she's pregnant and she still didn't tell you

\*\*\*she kept quiet getting angry\*\*\*

Castiel: why are you like this Kazi, its like you feel entitled to shit or some sort

Kazi: you and Phumi betrayed me...you used me and when it was convenient for you you dumped me just like that

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: I think you're bipolar or something woman...how did we betray you or is it me making you cum without touching you or showing interest in you that made you think

you're entitled to me

\*\*\*she gasped\*\*\*

Kazi: im sure it makes you feel proud neh

Castiel: listen here Kazi, I used to want you but I don't anymore now I want Phumi and her alone and the sooner you accept that the better.....where's your dignity man, your desperation is appalling and a total turn off

Kazi: why her heh, what does she have that I don't

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Castiel: a kindred heart, beautiful smile and a beautiful mind

Kazi: what....dude my body is goals that every man out there would give up their wealth just to have me so don't tell me about that rubbish

\*\*\*she laughed bitterly\*\*\*

Kazi: "a beautiful mind and a kindred heart"

while on the other hand she looks like a whale and im sure you're even embarrassed to take her to your business functions or to even meet your friends

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Castiel: in other words you saying Phumi is fat?

Kazi: we both know she is, she's just lucky all that cholesterol helped her have an ass and curves if not she would be a round big jojo tank

\*\*Castiel laughed again\*\*\*

Castiel: she's chubby Kazi not fat and there's a difference but I wouldn't put my money on you to get it cause you a dumb bitch.....and just so you know her "fat" body gives me a hard on every time I look at her

Kazi: hahaha wow trying to convince yourself that you made the right choice?

Castiel: I know I made the right choice and body

shaming another woman is a total turn off if you didn't know

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone\*\*\*

Kazi: wait... did you just call me a dumb bitch?

Castiel: and things register slowly in that tiny brain of yours, why am I even surprised

\*\*\*he chuckled\*\*\*

Kazi: fuck you uyangizwa ( you hear me)....fuck you and that fat pig of yours nx I hope she loses that bastard she's carrying msoon!

\*\*\*Castiel chuckled then he got serious\*\*\*

Castiel: you the one who'll die single and alone for being an evil bitch nx..... and just so you know the baby my Phumi is carrying is biologically mine and now she's living the life you were supposed to live and its all your fault....now this should be the last time you call me...you don't exist in our lives so stop with

your obsession, I don't want you now get that through your fucken skull.... I choose Phumi so concentrate on your hitman and stay the fuck away from us!

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone and he dropped the call leaving Kazi hurt.....her bottom lip was trembling and she felt stupid for calling him...she wished she didn't call him...she had a mixture of hurt and anger in her, she knew from that instant she despises Phumi for turning her into this person\*\*\*

Kazi: mxm they can both go to hell

\*\*\*she wiped her falling tears and she got up\*\*\*

-----

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S NEW HOUSE

\*\*\*Cass shook his head after he dropped the call\*\*\*

Castiel: all because I made her cum without



touching her and now she's acting like a crazy  
ex nx

\*\*\*he said to himself and went back to making  
late lunch for him and Phumi\*\*\*

Phumi: you must have been really hurt when  
she chose Menzi over you, I mean like you said  
to her, she could be living my life now if she  
knew what she wanted...so yay lucky me the  
second choice

\*\*\*she said the last part sarcastically with tears  
in her eyes and as soon as Castiel turned to  
look at her tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Castiel: bello

\*\*\*he said feeling like shit\*\*\*

Phumi: keep on entertaining her akere she's  
your first choice

\*\*\*she walked away wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Castiel: damn it!

\*\*\*he switched the stove off and went after her\*\*\*

Castiel: bello

Phumi: don't call me that

Castiel: Phumi come on

Phumi: leave me alone Castiel!

\*\*\*she said with a warning tone and Cass raised his eyebrow\*\*\*

Castiel: im not entertaining her bello

\*\*\*she chuckled\*\*\*

Phumi: I'll never catch a break will I, I guess im unlovable

Castiel: are you trying to hurt my feelings on purpose

Phumi: what feelings Castiel when you have an option to go back to your first choice

\*\*\*Castiel just shook his head and he chuckled

which meant he was now pissed off\*\*\*

Castiel: im just gonna pretend like you didn't  
just say that

\*\*\*he said with a pissed off tone\*\*\*

Phumi: pretend all you want but it's the truth

\*\*\*she said not even looking at him\*\*\*\*

Phumi: and just so you know im not insecure  
cause I know you don't love me and that im just  
your incubator....im just hurt that you entertain  
another woman to a point that you even feel  
free to talk about how fat I am with her

Castiel: that's not what....

Phumi: respect me Castiel, you may not love me  
but atleast respect me cause im out here  
putting my life at risk just so you can be a father  
so respect is all I need from you

Castiel: that's not how it went Phumi....can we  
just not fight about this please

Phumi: I don't care just respect me Castiel  
that's all

\*\*\*he sat down cause he felt like she was giving  
up on him or something\*\*\*

Castiel: bello look Kazi is...

Phumi: I don't wanna hear that name ever again  
Castiel.....look I said my peace and what I asked  
for is not a lot I just want you to respect me  
that's all so please I need to rest excuse me

\*\*\*she got up slowly and she went to the  
bedroom that is downstairs\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck!

-----

KAZI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*its been a week and she still felt  
embarrassed and stupid for chasing after a  
man that didn't want her anymore.... nigga even  
called her a dumb bitch and he didn't even

apologies which was now clear indication to her that Castiel wasn't into her anymore or maybe he wasn't to begin with he was just infatuated by her nje or maybe he just wanted some pussy and move on but what still baffled her was the fact that Phumi was six months pregnant and Castiel confirmed that the pregnancy is his, that is what hurt her the most cause it meant that they knew each other all along and pretended not to know each other around her.....she then felt bad for her relationship with Menzi, she knew she loves him and he loves her back and she hoped that he understands that this was just a stage she's not proud of and that she's ready to put everything behind and fix things with him....she tried his numbers and it send her straight to voicemail, she sighed and tried to call him using her other new phone with a new simcard and it rang\*\*\*

Kazi: ooh my God he blocked me

\*\*\*she said to herself hurt\*\*\*

Menzi: hello

Kazi: so you blocked my numbers Menzi

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: Ntandokazi

Kazi: I know I hurt you but to block my numbers  
Menzi, I've been worried about you and wena  
you blocked my numbers

Voice: look what I came up with Ngcobo.....ooh  
sorry

\*\*\*she whispered the last part and Menzi  
cleared his throat\*\*\*

Kazi: who the hell is that?

\*\*\*she asked sounding worked up\*\*\*

Menzi: look I have to go....ummm I'll unblock  
your numbers

Kazi: MENZI WHO THE FUCK IS THAT!

Menzi: she's a colleague Kazi and I don't like your tone!

Kazi: YOU DON'T LIKE MY TONE, ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME!

Menzi: I have to go shap

\*\*\*he ended the call and she sat there shocked by the turn of events....she looked at her screen and she huffed looking angry\*\*\*

Kazi: nx

\*\*\*she got up and went to her bedroom to change and she locked up and got inside her car and drove out\*\*\*

-----

AT MENZI'S HOUSE

Lorraine: sorry about that I wasn't aware you're on the phone

Menzi: its ok don't worry about it

Lorraine: ok now look what I came up with  
\*\*\*he looked at the papers and a smile formed  
on his lips\*\*\*

Menzi: ok now this figures makes sense and I  
can work with them

Lorraine: am I good or am I good?

Menzi: mxm stop bragging...uyazama nje  
( you're just trying)

\*\*\*she laughed and she pushed him and he  
chuckled\*\*\*

Lorraine: mxm uyabora shame

Menzi: so should I fill up your glass madam

Lorraine: yeah but this is my last glass, I still  
need to drive home

Menzi: don't worry I'll gladly drive you back  
home provided you make that lasagna I found  
you eating in your office...it looked delicious  
and smelled good



\*\*\*she laughed beautifully\*\*\*

Lorraine: I knew it....i saw your eyes kept going to my lunchbox every now and then

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Menzi: now you know so?

Lorraine: I don't want to over stay my welcome Menzi and plus I don't wanna get comfortable in another woman's kitchen cause hey women of today bathela ubuso ngeacid unye nyi for their man so eish ( they'll pour you with acid on your face for their man so eish)

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled\*\*\*

Menzi: that kitchen belongs to me Raine so relax and make me that Lasagna assomblief....my mouth is even watering just thinking about it

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Lorraine: ooh God what have I gotten myself

into

\*\*\*Menzi smiled as she made a face that looked cute\*\*\*

Lorraine: fine but im leaving with an unopened bottled of one of that fine wine we are drinking

Menzi: done

\*\*\*she looked at him and she shook her head with a smile on her face\*\*\*

Lorraine: fine I hope you have lots of cheese cause that wasn't some typical traditional lasagna but a custom made one

\*\*\*he chuckled following behind her looking at her ass moving and he bit his lower lip and put his hands inside his pockets\*\*\*

Menzi: Custom made huh?

Lorraine: yep....wow nice modern kitchen  
Ngcobo

\*\*\*she said turning to look at him and also

admiring the kitchen and he quickly cleared his throat\*\*\*

Menzi: thanks

\*\*\*he showed her where everything was and she started with her preparations with Menzi helping here and there while they held a nice conversation....after a while she was done and she dished up for the both of them and they went to the lounge and ate while watching Tv\*\*\*

Menzi: damn this is good nkosazana

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Lorraine: its my favourite dish actually that's why I perfect it like this

Menzi: now its my new favourite dish

\*\*\*she blushed some more\*\*\*

Lorraine: I'll write down the recipe so your helper will cook it for you sometime

Menzi: nope I want you to prepare it for me

\*\*\*he said looking at her and she shyly looked down to her plate and Menzi smirked then they heard a door bell ring.....he cleared his throat and put his plate down\*\*\*

Menzi: let me get that

\*\*\*he went to the door and opened it then he frowned\*\*\*

Menzi: Ntandokazi...what are you doing here?

\*\*\*she raised her eyebrow at him\*\*\*

Kazi: askies?

Menzi: I mean why didn't you tell me you were coming

Kazi: you've been ignoring my calls Menzi

Menzi: we talked like an hour ago!

\*\*\*he said with an annoyed voice\*\*\*

Kazi: how was I to tell you when you dropped the call on me!

\*\*\*she said sounding angry and she pushed him out of the way and she walked in and saw a woman sitting in the lounge with a plate and a glass of wine next to her and she raised her eyebrow at her\*\*\*

Kazi: and who might you be ntombazana ( girly)

\*\*\*she asked with a bit of attitude\*\*\*

Menzi: Ntandokazi!

\*\*\*he warned her\*\*\*

Kazi: whoa yimakancane bhuti ( wait a minute), im sitting at home worried sick about you cause your numbers weren't going through and wena you're here entertaining whores

Raine: whoooh....whooh.....i don't know you and you don't know me so let's not step on each other's toenails ntombazana

\*\*\*she said getting up\*\*\*

Kazi: askies....uthini kimi wena sfebe ( what did

you just say to me bitch)

Menzi: Ntandokazi that's enough!

\*\*\*he said with a firm tone\*\*\*

Menzi: uyahlanya yini ( are you crazy), how dare you come to my house and insult my guest!

\*\*\*He said with an angry voice and Lorraine wore her heels not looking pleased\*\*\*

Menzi: Raine look im sorry about all this embarrassment

Kazi: so im an embarrassment now Menzi

\*\*\*she said sounding hurt \*\*\*

Raine: its ok.... just get back to me about those figures and a contract that will benefit both of us cause im not settling for anything less than what I spoke to you about

\*\*\*Menzi cleared his throat as she packed her laptop inside her laptop bag along with some papers and she picked her handbag and she

walked towards the door with Menzi following behind her.....she stopped walking and she turned and looked at an angry looking Kazi\*\*\*

Raine: never call me a whore or a bitch again Ntandokazi cause I may be a classy and respectable woman but I'll wipe this tiled floor with your pretty face if you ever disrespect me like that ever again....im glad we understand each other....have a lovely evening

\*\*\*she turned and walked out with Menzi following behind her shocked by what she just said.....she opened the back door and she put her laptop bag inside and she closed it\*\*\*

Menzi: im sorry about what happened Raine....i didn't know she was coming and I didn't expect her to behave that way

\*\*\*he said sincerely as she opened the driver side of her car\*\*\*

Raine: from now on we work in either your

office or mine so something like this doesn't happen again

\*\*\*Menzi sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: it won't happen again trust me

Raine: I trust no one Ngcobo so from now on we keep things professional ok

Menzi: come on Raine it hasn't gotten to that

Raine: I was called isfebe so it has gotten to that im afraid

\*\*\*he sighed disappointed\*\*\*

Raine: but I had a great time and I'll wait to hear from you about the contract...bye

\*\*\*she got inside her car and Menzi closed the door for her, she buckled up and started the car then she reversed out....Menzi watched her until she drove away then he sighed and walked back in\*\*\*

Kazi: you took your time!



\*\*\*he ignored her and he picked the plates up and went to the kitchen with them and Kazi followed him\*\*\*

Kazi: are you cheating on me Menzi

\*\*\*she asked with a voice filled with hurt\*\*\*

Menzi: do you still have feelings for your ex

\*\*\*she swallowed\*\*\*

Kazi: it was only feelings Menzi, I didn't say I love him and want to be with him

Menzi: you haven't answered my question

Kazi: yes...now are you cheating on me?

Menzi: no....my dick hasn't fucked another woman's pussy if that's what you're asking

\*\*\*she felt relieved cause she knew she couldn't take another heartbreak\*\*\*

Kazi: im sorry Menzi, I messed up....i know I hurt by admitting to having feeling for another

man but I swear I have never acted on them and I have decided to let Phumi and Castiel be

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Menzi: who exactly is this Castiel of a guy and what powers does he have that made you admit to still having feeling for him to my face

Kazi: babe can we just move on from this please.....im sorry I acted that way, I love you Menzi and its you that I want not him

\*\*\*Menzi looked at her intensely\*\*\*

Menzi: what happened to you Ntandokazi, you're not the woman I fell in love with months ago.....its like ever since you came back from being kidnapped you're a different woman all together and it got nothing to do with the trauma you went through.....you just insulted my guest like you're some hood rat for no reason whatsoever and you're fighting with your best friend over an ex while you had a man who

loved you like his life depended on it

Kazi: Menzi....

Menzi: you don't know what you want Kazi and im not about to have another Buhle in my life

\*\*\*tears ran down her cheeks\*\*\*

Kazi: im nothing like your ex-wife Menzi...I've never cheated on you and I truly love you

Menzi: find yourself Ntandokazi then we will talk cause im not about to fight for you with that man, a friend of mine warned me about him and he said I shouldn't even think of going into war with him cause I have children in case you forgot and they come first!

Kazi: what are you saying Menzi, you don't have to go to war with anyone

Menzi: YOU TOLD ME YOU'RE STILL INTO THIS GUY AND YOU'RE EVEN HATING ON YOUR BEST FRIEND BECAUSE OF HIM....YOU'RE

DOING ALL THIS KNOWING VERY WELL THAT I  
LOVE YOU NTANDOKAZI...DO YOU EVEN  
KNOW HOW DANGEROUS THAT MAN IS

\*\*\*she was just crying\*\*\*

Menzi: HE EVEN CALLED ME NTANDOKAZI TO  
COME AND TAKE YOU CAUSE YOU WERE  
INSULTING PHUMI AND THAT DIDN'T GIVE  
YOU THE HINT THAT AKAKUFUNI ! (he doesn't  
want you)

Kazi: I don't want him too...i want you!

\*\*\*she said wiping her tears off\*\*\*

Menzi: when did you realize that huh, after he  
paid ilobolo for Phumi or before?

\*\*\*she froze a bit\*\*\*

Kazi: he paid that cause she's pregnant, there's  
nothing special about that

\*\*\*Menzi chuckled defeated\*\*\*

Menzi: you need help wena

\*\*\*he then walked away\*\*\*

Kazi: Menzi...

Menzi: hai fokof man

\*\*\*she swallowed hard\*\*\*

-----

RAY'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Ray walked inside the kitchen where Mbali was busy making breakfast for the both of them holding Kalu\*\*\*

Ray: she's clinging on to you as if you'll run away

\*\*\*Mbali laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: I even had to strap her on my back so I can work

\*\*\*He didn't say anything he just stared at her with an intense look asking himself what he did so good to deserve her\*\*\*

Mbali: what?

Ray: what did I do to the man upstairs to deserve you my flower

Mbali: you saved my life remember

\*\*\*She said smiling and he chuckled...he got closer to her and they kissed for some time\*\*\*

Ray: I love you

Mbali: I love you too baby

Ray: don't cook lunch we are going out the four of us

\*\*\*she smiled surprised cause it's been a while since they went out\*\*\*

Mbali: ok

\*\*\*she continued making breakfast for them\*\*\*

Ray: my flower

Mbali: mmmmh?

Ray: you're not a house wife and you'll never be

one ok

\*\*\*she didn't say anything she just smiled lightly at him\*\*\*

Ray: I have big plans for you my flower, and it starts with you going back to school to finish your degree

Mbali: how will I juggle two kids, being a wife and being a student Ray

Ray: you're not a single mom and besides we will make it work you'll see....i can't wait for the day you'll graduate just so I can see your father and your grandmother's faces

\*\*\*She smiled emotionally\*\*\*

Mbali: I can't wait too

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Ray: we gonna be a force to be recon with, just wait a see

\*\*\*she smiled at him and he perked her lips

then her phone rang, it was Naledi and she answered\*\*\*

Mbali: mamkhulu

\*\*\*Naledi laughed\*\*\*

Naledi: mamncane unjani

\*\*\*Ray kissed her forehead and Cataleya's forehead and he walked away with Kalu\*\*\*

Mbali: hai ngiright wena ( im good and you)

Naledi: ngiright nami( im also good) so i want your advice on something

Mbali: ok im listening

Naledi: what do you think about baby pink and cream white?

Mbali: umm they are nice I guess...why?

Naledi: you don't sound convincing mamncane

\*\*\*Mbali laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: for someone else im sure will be nice but



for me it's a no no

Naledi: ok what would your colors be then?

Mbali: gold and baby pink

Naledi: wow ok

Mbali: ok so are you hosting a party or what

Naledi: yeah one of the girls we're funding is turning 21 so we were thinking of throwing her a party and plus she's doing really well with her studies

Mbali: wow that's thoughtful of you, im sure she'll be happy especially with those colors

\*\*\*Naledi laughed\*\*\*

Naledi: let's hope so

Mbali: I know so trust me

Naledi: ok fingers crossed..... well let me call the décor people we will talk later ok

Mbali: ok and please send me pictures

Naledi: I will shap sthandwa

Mbali: shap babe

-----

NALEDI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*she called Thandi's numbers and she answered on the third ring\*\*\*

Thandi: a reng? ( what did she say)

Naledi: gold and baby pink

Thandi: wa bona ( you see)....i told Ntombi gore she's now grown bopink and purple ke tsa eng

\*\*\*Naledi laughed\*\*\*

Naledi: mmh even le Pink and cream white was a no no for her

Thandi: ai bontombi ba tla re irisa boshamedi waiti ( ai we nearly messed up because of Ntombi)

\*\*\*Naledi laughed\*\*\*

Naledi: hai..... anyway how's Phumi...i hope I'll meet her ko parting

Thandi: o shap its just her pregnancy is showing her flames shame, I don't even think she'll be able to make it cause Castiel o over protective ka yena shame ( with her)

Naledi: ai ok retla bona ka yena ( ok we will see if she comes)

Thandi: mmmmh mara shame you'll like her....gai pone ( she doesn't think highly of herself) and she looks like the younger version of Jill Scott...she's just pretty and cute with that million dollar smile of hers no wonder Castiel is smitten shame

Naledi: mmmmh now I can't wait to meet her..... anyway wena call the déco people and give them di colors

Thandi: alright I love you

Naledi: I love you too my love

Thandi: mwaaaah

\*\*\*Naledi laughed and they ended the call\*\*\*

.

.

INSERT.....29

.

.

.

.

AT PHUMI AND CASTIEL'S NEW HOME

\*\*\*Phumi was sitting by the balcony staring into space while rubbing her belly..... the pregnancy was already taking a toll on her. Ruslan was doing his bit to help with the pregnancy but it was weighing down on her every single day, she can't stand for too long and she was losing

weight, well she's not as skinny as Bella on twilight was but you could see that she was losing weight..... everything that she's going through is all worth it every time the baby moves or kicks which happens a lot these days, the pregnancy is only four weeks old but the baby was already moving.....as for Castiel he has been an amazing partner, he's with her 24/7 and he takes care of her, every day he falls deep for her and he cant even help it.....Anyway he walked in with two glasses filled with blood and he gave her her glass and he sat down next to her and gave her a straw, she put her straw inside the glass and started drinking while moaning and Cass smiled.....She started craving for blood few days back when she started with her weight loss cause she couldn't stomach solid food..... when he gave her a glass filled with blood just to see if she can stomach it since she cant stomach solid food that well, she drank it without any problem so

from there on he started giving her two glasses of blood per day with soft porridge and half-done meat between even vegetables were a no no for her\*\*\*

Castiel: have you vomited today after eating the porridge?

Phumi: no but I felt nauseas, I still do even now  
\*\*\*Cass sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll tell Madou and see if he can't help you with that

\*\*\*he sighed looking at her\*\*\*

Castiel: when will you stop being mad at me?

\*\*\*Phumi didn't say anything\*\*\*

Castiel: Bello

Phumi: I don't know

\*\*\* she said dismissing him and he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: I don't want her anymore and you know

it

Phumi: in other words im a rebound or your second choice

Castiel: you're not and you know it

\*\*\*she chuckled bitterly\*\*\*

Phumi: you think im your fool wena, just because I accepted a lot of shit about you you think im a YES girl kao bona ( I see)

\*\*\*she said with an angry tone\*\*\*

Castiel: calm down and we're not fighting about this anymore....i wont let Kazi come between us Phumi and im dead serious!

\*\*\*he said with a firm tone\*\*\*

Phumi: this is not about Kazi Castiel its about you, she can call you a million times and if you're entertaining her this shit is about you not her cause you had a choice to ignore her or even block her but you didn't cause you enjoy

her insulting and calling me names so this is about you and not her cause im not married to Kazi and im not carrying her child!

\*\*\*she put the glass down and she looked away feeling emotional\*\*\*

Castiel: I hear you and I have said im sorry for the hundredth time.....i don't want Kazi and I never will, its you I want Phumi so can we let this go

\*\*\*She didn't say anything\*\*\*

Cass: Bello

Phumi: leave me alone Castiel....please just let me be.....i swear the day I'll deal with you e tlore ge o bona ( you'll see) a woman passing by you'll quickly look the other way.....you don't know me wena continue disrespecting me and you'll see

\*\*\*He frowned looking at her then he raised an eyebrow shocked by the threats..... he then



breathed out and sat back with a serious look on his face..... they heard a car driving in and he could tell it was Ruslan and he was with Thandi, he sighed cause they knew about the Kazi issue and Thandi wasn't pleased with him\*\*\*

Castiel: Madou and Thandi are here

\*\*\*she didn't say anything and he sighed and got up taking her glass and he went and put both glasses inside the mini fridge in their bedroom and he went back to Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: let's go

\*\*\*she raised her hands and he picked her up bridal style and went downstairs with her, he didn't want her to go up and down the stairs on her own....anyway he put her down gently on the couch and he sat down next to her then the door opened and they walked in, Phumi forced a smile\*\*\*

Thandi: girl!

\*\*\*she shouted and Phumi chuckled\*\*\*

Phumi: hey

\*\*\*Thandi got to her and kissed her cheek and she sat down chowing on her biltong\*\*\*

Thandi: Castiel

Cass: our wife...so when will I go back to being called Cass

Thandi: the day you stop entertaining hoes

\*\*\*He chuckled shaking his head\*\*\*

Ruslan: Phumi

Phumi: hi Ruu

\*\*\*Ruslan looked at Cass\*\*\*

Ruslan: joined me

\*\*\*He then looked at the ladies\*\*\*

Ruslan: excuse us

\*\*\*Phumi nodded and Thandi gave Cass a nasty

look and Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: what?

Thandi: mxm I hope you cooked or ordered pizza for me

Cass: I cooked

Thandi: good

\*\*\* he followed Ruslan shaking his head...she went to dish for herself, she wanted to dish for Phumi too but she said she was ok.....she came back and sat next to Phumi and started eating\*\*\*

Thandi: o right?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Phumi: it's just I feel like a YES girl when it comes to Castiel and I hate feeling like that

Thandi: wena why do you agree to everything he says or wants

\*\*\*Phumi sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: I don't know maybe wanloya (he's bewitching me)

\*\*\*Thandi laughed\*\*\*

Phumi: serious..... the day I was coming back from KZN he said lets go to my place and I'll drive you home the next day and I was like Ok.....then at night he said ithi ngilifake kancane ( let me put in only the tip) and I was like OK then boom I fell pregnant.....then he said let me send my people to your people and I was like OK..... the next thing he said im a Vampire and im like COOL....jiki jiki this baby might kill you and im like YIPPY

\*\*\*Thandi was laughing her ass off\*\*\*

Phumi: so I think ungidlisile or oyangiloya ( I think he fed me a love potion or he's bewitching me)

\*\*\*Thandi wiped her tears off still laughing \*\*\*

Thandi: hai shame udlile ( you were fed love potion) for sure

\*\*\*Phumi shook her head\*\*\*

Thandi: mara le tlo ba shap ankere ( you'll be fine right?)

Phumi: I cant help but feel used somehow, I mean I feel like he just wants a baby from me and I also feel like since Kazi chose Menzi I became his second option when we met and I also feel like it's the only way he could hurt her through me

\*\*\*she said with a sad tone\*\*\*

Thandi: look I may be mad at him for hurting you by entertaining that desperate bitch but I can see love in his eyes when he looks at you Phumi, the way he's protective over you

\*\*\*Phumi shook her head\*\*\*

Phumi: he's doing all that for his child

Thandi...im just an incubator and nothing more to him and the sooner I accept that the better..... I mean I might even die during delivery of this baby so maybe im just the incubator and him and Kazi will work things out and raise the baby together

\*\*\*Thandi sighed\*\*\*

Thandi: I don't think so Phumi I truly don't.....i can see he loves you believe me on that, he may have a funny way of showing it but he does

Phumi: ai aritsi ( hai I don't know)

\*\*\*she said shrugging her shoulder\*\*\*

Thandi: well nigga is so into you and I stand by that

Phumi: trust me he doesn't, he may care deeply but that's it

Thandi: hai re tla bona ( we will see ) as times goes on, he's gonna prove you wrong....anyway

on a lighter note I feel like it's not fair  
you're pregnant and losing weight while im also  
pregnant but gaining weight

\*\*\*Phumi's eyes popped out\*\*\*

Phumi: bathong Thandi we both know why im  
losing weight

Thandi: well sometimes I low key wish Ruu was  
a vamp too...i can't fit into my clothes anymore  
and that breaks my heart each time I try  
something on

\*\*\*she said sulking and Phumi giggled\*\*\*

Phumi: trust me you don't want to carry a  
vampire's child

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: girl you lost weight and you're being  
pampered and carried around like an egg as for  
nna I only get carried when nigga wants some  
pussy other than that dololo

\*\*\*They laughed\*\*\*

Phumi: atleast wa kukiwa hao ( at least you're being carried haw)

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Thandi: it's not the same and you know it

\*\*\*Phumi chuckled\*\*\*

-----

IN THE STUDY

Ruslan: you look like shit

Cass: well I feel like shit

Ruslan: she's still mad?

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Cass: yeah...a whole fucken week man....a week of total horror

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed and he took a sip of his drink\*\*\*



Ruslan: do you blame her?

Cass: she's not a rebound Madou nor is she being used to make that bitch jealous....i don't even know why I entertained her cause im in shit.....for fucks sake I never even dated Kazi or fucked her so how is she a rebound?

\*\*\*He said sitting down since he was standing by the window\*\*\*

Ruslan: want some?

Cass: nah you know I cant mix blood and alcohol or I'll start acting crazy

Ruslan: ooh you were feeding?

Cass: yeah we were when you were driving in

Ruslan: she's hurt man you can see it behind that smile she forced on her face

Cass: she's hurting herself cause I told her time without number that it's her I want, her insecurities are the ones hurting her.....im here

with her 24/7, I paid for her dowry but still that is not enough...she's letting Kazi ruin things between us then she puts the blame on me...aarg fok man

\*\*\*He said with an annoyed tone and Ruslan raised an eyebrow looking at him\*\*\*

Cass: don't look at me like that

\*\*\*Ruslan sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: anyway will you make it for Mbali's surprise party

Cass: how when Phumi will be 7 weeks... I don't wanna take chances

Ruslan: yeah i almost forgot, don't worry I'll take a video for you

Cass: mxm

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: its nice what Ray is doing for her

Cass: yeah, she's been through the worst man

Ruslan: mmmmh I cant believe how much he has changed

\*\*\*Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: that's what love does to you

Ruslan: speaking from experience?

Cass: mxm and she cant even see it cause she's hang up on Ntando fucken Kazi

\*\*\*Ruslan laughed\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*after their talk they went back to the lounge and found Phumi and Thandi now talking about this Cass and Kazi issue\*\*\*

Thandi: wow I didn't know that's how you two met

Phumi: you see, one minute Kazi was telling me about this guy called Castiel she met that made

her cum without touching her, she even said he made her chose between him and Menzi her boyfriend and she chose Menzi the next thing he's interested in me....it's clear im the second choice or he's using me and stupid me fell for it

Cass: is that how you really feel Phumi

\*\*\*both Phumi and Thandi froze and Ruslan sighed cause he knew what was about to happen\*\*\*

Cass: I asked you a question?

Ruslan: Cass

Cass: stay out of this Madou!

\*\*\*he looked at Phumi\*\*\*

Cass: you think im using you Phumi

Phumi: I have nothing to say

\*\*\*Ruslan cleared his throat\*\*\*

Ruu: amor lets go to the kitchen so they can

talk in private

\*\*\*she got up and looked at Cass\*\*\*

Thandi: calm the hell down

\*\*\*then they walked away\*\*\*

Cass: you think im using you?

Phumi: if Kazi knew what she wanted she'll be the one carrying this baby, she'll be the one whom you paid lobola for

\*\*\*Castiel shook his head\*\*\*

Cass: your insecurities will be your downfall.....you should talk to your God about that cause they are getting out of hand!

Phumi: Just go to hell Castiel nx.....stop pretending as if you give a fuck about me for fucks sake....that's what pisses me off the most, ga o nrate and gao nratele le bophelo ( you don't love me and you don't care if I live or die) so stop pretending as if you care!

\*\*\*she said shouting and Cass chuckled\*\*\*

Cass: talk to your God so you can calm the fuck down before you upset my child

\*\*\*he said with a chilled out voice and he started walking away\*\*\*

Phumi: Fuck you uyangizwa ( you hear me).....fuck you uyinja Castiel....umgodoyi wenja nx!

\*\*\*she said getting up\*\*\*

Castiel: THAT'S ENOUGH  
PHUMELELE....UNGAZONGIJWAELA  
AMASIMBA UYANGIZWA ( don't piss me off).....I'LL FUCKEN SLAP YOU ONCE AND YOU'LL WAKE UP IN FRONT OF THE GATES OF HEAVEN WITH MISSING TEETH....WHO DO YOU THINK YOU ARE TALKING TO LIKE THAT!

\*\*\*he roared with total anger visible on his face\*\*\*

Phumi: try it....come and try it....you think im scared of you wena just because you're a vampire angithi...well o fitlhile park station monna! ( well try that shit on me)

Ruslan: Cass calm down!

\*\*\*he said walking in with Thandi\*\*\*

Phumi: no leave him....let him slap me...slap me Castiel, o poo wena askere ( you're Mr. tough guy right).....o goliathe wena askere ( you're Goliath right) so come and slap me!

Ruslan: enough Phumi!

\*\*\*he roared\*\*\*

Ruslan: im not about to have another Ray and Mbali shit going on here Castiel so calm the fuck down...in fact take a walk!

\*\*\* Cass chuckled and he turned and attempted to walk away and Phumi picked a remote and threw it at him and it hit him on his back\*\*\*

Thandi: Phumi!

Phumi: don't fucken walk away from me Castiel!

\*\*\*she said looking extremely angry and Ruslan shook his head while Castiel turned and looked at her looking angry\*\*\*

Castiel: ufunani kimi wena Phumelele ( what the hell do you want from me Phumelele)

Thandi: Cass please calm down remember she's pregnant

Cass: answer me damn it what the fuck do you want from me!

\*\*\*he shouted and both Thandi and Phumi jumped up scared\*\*\*

Thandi: its probably hormones Cass

\*\*\*he pleaded on her behalf\*\*\*

Phumi: you know what...im going back home and I'll tell my mother to send you your stupid lobola money cause I see ke yona e go fang



makoko a gondisrespecta nx ( I see its what giving you the balls to disrespect me nx)

Thandi: Phumi stop....calm down  
assomblief.....Cass walk away please!

Cass: try it and you'll see...just try it!

\*\*\*she walked away and Cass went after her,  
Thandi attempted to go after them but Ruslan  
pulled her back\*\*\*

Thandi: Ruu....

Ruslan: leave them, he made her angry now let  
him experience what happens when you make a  
pregnant woman who's carrying a hybrid baby  
with wizardry genes in him

Thandi: what if he hurts her

\*\*\*she said with a worried tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: he won't but she will

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: sit down and stop stressing my princess

\*\*\*he pulled her to sit down\*\*\*

-----

Cass: Phumelele im fucking talking to you!

\*\*\*she saw a screw driver and two nails on top of a side table with a vas filled with flowers that was next to the stairs, she picked the screw driver angrily and turned.....by the time she realized what she has done Castiel was holding the screw driver that was penetrated on his chest.....she started shaking as she looked at it stuck on his chest..... his eyes were popped out as he was shocked by what she just did then he slowly looked at the object stabbed right through his chest\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh my God...ohh my God....oooh God what have I done.....what have I done...he's gonna die....he's gonna die....

Cass: MADOU!

\*\*\*He shouted as he could see that she was going into shock....she was visibly shaking and her breathing pattern wasn't normal anymore.....then she started having a panic attack\*\*\*

Cass: MADOU!

\*\*\*he said catching her before she could hit the floor and that's when Ruslan walked to him.....her eyes landed on the screw driver stuck on his chest and she passed out\*\*\*

Ruslan: I told you to calm down didn't i!

Cass: not now ok just put her down gently so I can take off this thing from my chest

\*\*\*Ruslan put Phumi down gently\*\*\*

Thandi: ooh my God Phumi...what did you do to her!

\*\*\*when her eyes landed on the screwdriver she

screamed loud\*\*\*

Thandi: ohh my God!

Cass: relax im fine

\*\*\* he said with a chilled out voice and Ruslan quickly pulled her to his chest and Castiel pulled the screw driver out and he groaned as he did then he threw it on top of the table as the wound closed itself up slowly.....he then picked Phumi up from the floor and took her upstairs\*\*\*

Thandi: ooh my God did she?

Ruslan: he deserves it, he should know better than to argue with her and relax he heals quickly and he doesn't bleed out..... all in all you need to chop his head off to kill him so he's good, he felt a bit of pain when he pulled the object off which he deserved but he's fine

\*\*\*Thandi looked at him with a horrified look on her face\*\*\*

-----

Ruslan and Thandi did leave after Phumi woke up, they needed to make sure she was fine..... anyway she was now in the bedroom resting, her eyes were blood shot red from all the crying she's been doing ever since Ruu and Thandi left, she couldn't believe she stabbed Cass like that.....she sat up straight slowly and she moved her right leg to the edge of the bed slowly then she breathed out cause that was a job and a half for her, she then moved her other leg slowly and she moaned as she moved her body towards the edge of the bed... that fainting scene put some strain on her body and the baby, her belly felt heavier now.....she sat there for a while trying to gather all the strength she can get to stand up on her own and that's when Cass budged in\*\*\*

Cass: what are you doing....you know you can't move around on your own

\*\*\*she ignored him and attempted to get up and  
Cass rushed to her and held her\*\*\*

Castiel: what do you think you're doing  
Phumelele!

Phumi: I want to go and pee

\*\*\*she said with a low tone\*\*\*

Cass: and why didn't you call me

Phumi: im not disabled Castiel ok!

\*\*\* She snapped at him and he looked at her  
with an angry look on his face\*\*\*

Cass: you're starting to piss me off  
manje.....you're getting on my fucken last nerve  
and you'll hate me for real when im angry so  
don't push me!

\*\*\*she felt chills down her spine and she looked  
down feeling scared by the change of his tone  
and tears filled her eyes\*\*\*

Castiel: you're angry at me fine but leave my

child out of it siyazwana

\*\*\*he picked her up and took her to the bathroom and she did her business and he took her back....she lay down and faced the other way then Cass walked out then her tears gushed out, she cried herself to sleep.... her hormones where all over the place and she didn't know what to do..... Anyway she was deep in her sleep when she felt something on her pussy entrance.....she moaned in her sleep and Cass whispered to her ear\*\*\*

Cass: wake up

Phumi: huh?

Cass: I said wake up

\*\*\*she opened her eyes\*\*\*

Cass: you still angry?

\*\*\*he sucked on her neck gently and her breath hinged\*\*\*

Cass: you can't talk now

Phumi: im...im trying to sleep Cass

\*\*\*\*"Im Cass now" he thought then he smirked\*\*\*

Cass: I asked if you're still mad

\*\*\*he pushed the tip in which made her moan then he stopped moving\*\*\*

Phumi: Cass...

Cass: what was that?

\*\*\*She swallowed hard\*\*\*

Phumi: please

\*\*\*she said with a pleading tone\*\*\*

Cass: you still mad?

\*\*\*she quickly shook her head, she didn't let him touch her for a week and now he was about to have her....he then pushed it all inside and she gasped as he stretched her wide\*\*\*



Phumi: ooh God!

Cass: are you done acting crazy now?

Phumi: Cass...

Cass: are you?

Phumi: ye...yes

Cass: and you'll never do the shit you did to me ever again

Phumi: ye..yes

\*\*\*He kissed her neck and he started moving which made her to moan out loud\*\*\*

Cass: moan for daddy my beautiful YES girl

\*\*\*and he started moving slowly as he held her right leg up\*\*\*

Phumi: ooh gosh!

\*\*\*he increased his pace going in and out of her and she moaned grabbing tight to the sheets...he had her until they both came and he

pulled out of her and reached for a towel and he cleaned both of them then he kissed her neck and held her from behind with his hand on her belly and the baby moved a bit\*\*\*

Castiel: usuthi boy?

\*\*\*he then chuckled and rubbed her belly\*\*\*

Castiel: just so you know.....im in love with you and your craziness bello

\*\*\*her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Cass: yeah I do and I've been showing it to you through my actions but you're just too crazy to see it

\*\*\*she pushed him a bit\*\*\*

Phumi: im not crazy

Cass: you are and we both know you know that you are and now i have a scar to prove it

\*\*\*she sighed\*\*\*

Phumi: im sorry Cass, I don't know why I did that .....im sorry.....i

\*\*\*she said with a breaking voice\*\*\*

Cass: you wouldn't be my mate if you weren't a little crazy trust me

\*\*\*she sniffed and wiped her tears off and he kissed her neck then he pulled her leg up and entered her again and they both moaned\*\*\*

Cass: fuck his pussy will be the death of me

-----

A WEEK LATER

\*\*\*Kazi was sitting in bar drowning on her sorrows.....Menzi have been giving her the cold shoulder and she just couldn't take it anymore, he kept telling her that he still loves her but that she needed to deal with her shit first and to also find herself again and until then she should give him some space.....she regrets ever saying that

Cass is her ex and she still have feelings for him to his face cause it was about to cost her the only man that truly loves her.....she didn't know how to start dealing with the obsession she has with Castiel and she doesn't even know where to start finding herself again.....Castiel is all she thinks about and she can't help it.....the fact that he chose Phumi over her is what she can't get over cause she feels she's way better than her in every way, she has never had a problem with getting any man she wants no matter how handsome, rich, crazy or abusive they may be and the fact that she can't get Castiel was driving her nuts and turning her into a crazy woman and she hated it.....Anyway she was lost in her thoughts when a beautiful slender black woman sat next to her\*\*\*

Woman: barman give me it a glass of red wine please

\*\*\*she said with an American accent\*\*\*

Barman: coming right up

Woman: hi

Kazi: hi

\*\*\*she drank her martini then the barman gave the lady her drink... then the woman chuckled\*\*\*

Woman: to think I gave that son of a bitch my all and all I got is betrayal and a heartbreak

\*\*\*she then sniffed and chuckled again\*\*\*

Woman: 5 years...5 fucken years and I find out he's married with kids

\*\*\*then she looked at Kazi who just cleared her throat\*\*\*

Woman: im sorry i.....i have no one here in fact I don't know anyone here.....i came all the way from the United States for a fucken married man can you believe it

Kazi: wow

\*\*\*she wiped a tear and she sniffed and played with her drink\*\*\*

Kazi: how did you find out he's married...if you don't mind me asking

Woman: I became suspicious cause he always flew back here whenever he receive a certain call he said it's from his interim CEO in one of his companies..... and he always made excuses every time I wanted to meet his family....a friend of mine advised me to hire a PI on the internet back here to find out more about him and what he came back with shocked me so I came here to see it for myself and I wish I didn't come

\*\*\*she sniffed and wiped her tears off and continued to play with her drink\*\*\*

Kazi: damn....i hate him

\*\*\*they chuckled\*\*\*

Woman: I wish to hate him but my heart won't let me

Kazi: I know what you're talking about

Woman: im Carmine by the way but my friends call me Cosmo

Kazi: Ntandokazi but my friends call me Kazi

\*\*\*they shook hands and giggled, Cosmo was wearing those finger popping half gloves and she was wearing all black\*\*\*

Cosmo: so what's your story

Kazi: my ex and my best friend betrayed me

Cosmo: they fucked?

Kazi: worse she's even pregnant and he married her

Cosmo: ouch....i take it you still had feelings for the ex

Kazi: worse we were trying to make it work again then boom he saw her and went for her instead

Cosmo: wow that sounds like something that happens in the movies

Kazi: you know I cant believe Castiel did that to me.....he made me fall for him then boom he goes for my best friend mxm

\*\*\*tears filled her eyes and she chuckled pushing them back\*\*\*

Cosmo: that name sounds odd to be South African

\*\*\*she said trying not to sound pushy\*\*\*

Kazi: I know and its even weirder cause he's black and he even speaks isiZulu one of our official languages but his eyes man....yho every time he looks into your eyes you feel like he's looking into your soul....its creepy but a turn on at the same time

Cosmo: interesting....i mean maybe one of his parents is not South African



Kazi: mmmmh maybe

Cosmo: so they betrayed you just like that

Kazi: yeah can you imagine

\*\*\*she said sounding hurt\*\*\*

Cosmo: I hate them

\*\*\*they giggled\*\*\*

Kazi: and like you my heart can't seem to allow me to hate him but I despise that bitch Phumi to the core

Cosmo: cheers to hating the bitch then

\*\*\*they toasted and giggled\*\*\*

Cosmo: so he's also from here...i mean the way he hurt you I wouldn't be surprised if he's related to Jacob my now married ex

\*\*\*they both giggled\*\*\*

Kazi: I think so but now he's in Pretoria living with that fat pig

Cosmo: ooh ok

\*\*\*she looked at her watch\*\*\*

Cosmo: ooh look at that.....well let me go before it gets too late and plus I have an early morning flight back home

Kazi: ooh but you didn't touch your drink

Cosmo: im a bloody Mary kinda girl I don't even know why I ordered this

\*\*\*she pushed it to her\*\*\*

Kazi: its stress girl

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Cosmo: but you can have it....it was really nice meeting you Kazi...im feeling better already

Kazi: same here

\*\*\*she walked away and the other guy that was sitting at the far corner also got up and walked out\*\*\*

## OUTSIDE

Constantine: wow that was an Oscar winning performance sis

Cosmo: well thank you very much brother

\*\*\*she said taking a bow and Constantine chuckled\*\*\*

Cosmo: and I told you it's her.....her scent gave her away, she was at that house that those bastards burned down.....i told I'll find her

\*\*\*Constantine rolled his eyes\*\*\*

Constantine: and I could tell by her scent that her blood tastes good

\*\*\*he said and his fangs came out\*\*\*

Cosmo: calm down.....elders said no feeding on humans here....we don't want people to ask questions, we're here for the brothers.....you don't wanna go against the elders' orders and you know it and you know I can't lose you

Constantine: you no fun.....im tired on feed on animals

\*\*\*he sulked\*\*\*

Cosmo: then go back home and I'll deal with this on my own.....

Constantine: you know I won't let you do that

Cosmo: fine now stop acting crazy and let's wait for her to get out of that hideous place so we can get her phone and maybe those lovely earrings she's wearing

Constantine: you and earrings

\*\*\*he shook his head and they went to stand by the dark\*\*\*

.

.

INSERT.....30

.

.

.

\*\*\*Kazi walked out of the bar and she went to her car and within a blink of an eye something passed her like a speed of lightning and she turned around quickly to see what that was and she didn't see anything but she heard laughs....her heart started beating\*\*\*

Kazi: who's there?

\*\*\* Constantine laughed some more walking slowly towards her and she looked around for help and saw two guys walking towards them and she screamed\*\*\*

Kazi: HELP ME!

\*\*\*with a blink of an eye she felt herself being carried and she saw herself being thrown down to the ground then more laughter...she then had a flash of a memory of the same thing happening before where she was carried and

the thing that carried her moved at the same speed\*\*\*

Voice: be careful bro she's pregnant

\*\*\* Then the woman laughed and Kazi shook off the memory from her brain and she looked around and she could see she wasn't at the place she was a second ago\*\*\*

Kazi: who's there.....please don't hurt me im begging you

\*\*\*she said getting up slowly and Cosmo came out of the dark with Kazi's handbag on her hand and Kazi's eyes popped out\*\*\*

Kazi: YOU!

Cosmo: you know I knew humans are stupid and gullible but you take the cup

\*\*\*she said with her American accent \*\*\*

Kazi: what....i thought....

\*\*\*she said with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Cosmo: you know its fine to talk to a stranger about your problems cause there's a saying that goes like " a problem shared is a problem half solved" but you darling are just too gullible.

Kazi: who...who are you and what do you want from me

Constantine: we want Castiel and his "fat wife" as you call her

Kazi: wh....what?

Constantine: you see the only people we are here to kill are Castiel and his family

Cosmo: and guess what your cousin is part of that family now and you're like cause it would be you if she didn't steal him from you

\*\*\*Kazi started shaking\*\*\*

Kazi: what noo....nooo please nooo

\*\*\*Constantine took out a large knife and Kazi moved back crying and shaking\*\*\*

Kazi: please don't hurt me....please

Constantine: they said we shouldn't feed on you useless humans but they didn't say we shouldn't drive this beautiful knife right into your stupid human gut and twist it until you take your last breath

Kazi: please don't hurt me please....please

\*\*\*she pleaded crying and shaking\*\*\*

Constantine: where is your cousin from?

\*\*\*Kazi shook her head crying\*\*\*

Constantine: you think about playing little girl

Cosmo: just make it snappy will ya we have a vampire and a wizard to kill

Kazi: please....

Constantine: talk!

\*\*\* she told them and Constantine put the knife on her throat and it cut her a bit and blood



came out and Constantine liked it and he moaned\*\*\*

Constantine: fuck it tastes so good!

\*\*\* she cried shaking with fear then all of a sudden she started feeling dizzy and she fell to the floor unconscious\*\*\*

Constantine: weak ass fuck!

\*\*\*Cosmo laughed....then they heard voices of people coming their way and within a blink of an eye they were gone\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*She opened her eyes and she blinked for some time then she scanned the room and her eyes landed on Menzi who was standing by the window looking outside....she cleared her throat and she felt pain on her throat and that's when Menzi turned and rushed to her\*\*\*

Menzi: hey you're awake

Kazi: wa...water

\*\*\*he poured water into a glass and helped her drink\*\*\*

Menzi: who did this to you.....the guards I paid to look after you from a distance said they saw you talking to a man and then you just disappeared into thin air....they searched for you until they found you laying unconscious in a dark alley bleeding on your throat

\*\*\*she swallowed hard...she wanted to tell him all about the twins but that meant she would have to mention Castiel's name and she just knew it will piss him off....right now she was angry at herself for being so obsessed with Castiel to a point that it almost got her killed\*\*\*

Kazi: they took my bag which had everything, my phone, money, and purse then the guy said...

\*\*\*tears filled her eyes and she let them fall\*\*\*

Menzi: they?

\*\*\*she nodded\*\*\*

Kazi: a man and a woman....the man wanted to cut my throat and....and the woman said he should make it fast.....they had my bag and they still wanted to kill me

\*\*\*she said crying, she was even shaking.....all that talk about Vampires and wizards and killing Phumi was just too much for her\*\*\*

Menzi: its ok you're safe now....im here no one will hurt you anymore

\*\*\*he said holding her as she cried loud until a nurse rushed in and she was sedated\*\*\*

-----

LATER ON

Menzi: tell me good news man

\*\*\*he was talking to his IT guy on the phone, he wasn't as good or even close to being as good as Snakes but he could do his job really well\*\*\*

Guy: I emailed you the CCTV footage from the bar and also outside the bar and you wont believe what you'll see boss

Menzi: ok let me check it first and I'll call you back

Guy: ok

\*\*\*they ended the call and Menzi went to his emails and saw it, he opened it and saw two attached documents and he downloaded them and the first video played....he saw Kazi being approached by something he couldn't explain..... The figure was that of a woman but the video showed her skin glistening like small diamonds....all he saw was a figure built like a woman but her face and the rest of her body were her skin was visible, was glistening like bright diamonds.....what confused him the most was the fact that people in the bar weren't aware of what he was seeing especially Kazi.....he looked to the far end of the video

and he saw another figure sitting there but he couldn't make out if it was a man or a woman but he could see some glistening from that figure too.....then after some time the woman walked out and the figure that now looked like a man followed her.....outside he couldn't see the two figures up until Kazi walked out....he saw the man approaching her and they spoke for a bit, then she started screaming and then they disappeared\*\*\*

Menzi: what the fuck!

\*\*\*he looked at Kazi and he swallowed hard and he dialed his IT guy\*\*\*

Guy: boss

Menzi: what the fuck was I watching Kyle?

Kyle: I don't know boss, I don't even know how to explain what or who those things were....only the madam can answer those questions

Menzi: ok...keeping searching for them, they

have her belongings especially her phone so as soon as its turned on track it or when one of her cards are used let me know

Kyle: ok boss

\*\*\*they ended the call and Menzi forwarded the email to Snakes and asked him to analyze it for him and that it's a matter of life and death\*\*\*

-----

A WEEK LATER

AT RAYS HOUSE

\*\*\*he held her from behind and kissed her neck pushing his boner on her back and she moaned\*\*\*

Ray: you don't know how happy I am this morning

Mbali: mmh I can feel it

\*\*\*they both chuckled\*\*\*

Ray: you showed me flames last night Mrs  
Owoh-Masden

\*\*\*she chuckled\*\*\*

Mbali: can you go take a cold shower so I can  
feed my kids please

Ray: please just help me out with this and I  
swear my flower I won't bother you for the rest  
of the day

\*\*\*Mbali chuckled\*\*\*

Mbali: ah ah

Ray: please

\*\*\*he begged her pushing his hard rod on her  
back some more and he groaned on her ear.....  
he then grabbed her ass and squeezed tight\*\*\*

Ray: fuck my flower...please just one round

Mbali: my babies Ray

Ray: ok a quickie then in the laundry room

please

\*\*\*she turned and when her eyes landed on his boner she gasped\*\*\*

Mbali: ok tell the truth did you drink Viagra pills

Ray: I don't need those shitty things to get hard my flower....I've been starving for quite a while now and last night just woke the horny beast in me

\*\*\*she laughed and she went to check on Leya and she was concentrating on the TV with cartoons playing\*\*\*

Mbali: ¿estas bien cariño? (you're ok baby?)

\*\*\*she asked in Spanish ( she has been learning simple Spanish words to communicate with her and she speaks English and Zulu to her too) and Leya nodded then Mbali kissed the top of her head and she went to the crib to check on Kalu and he was sleeping \*\*\*



Mbali: you sleep too much my handsome prince  
no no this is too much

Ray: let him enjoy it cause once he starts  
walking Saint will keep him busy

\*\*\*she sighed and bend then she kissed his  
forehead and whispered to him\*\*\*

Mbali: I love you

\*\*\*she turned and she found Ray with his hands  
inside his pockets \*\*\*

Ray: please

\*\*\*he begged and she looked at Leya and she  
was concentrating on the cartoons\*\*\*

Mbali: let's go before you scare my baby with  
that huge tent

\*\*\*he cleared his throat and they went to the  
laundry room and as soon as Mbali closed the  
door he attacked her with a kiss which took her  
by surprise, he took off her gown still kissing

her and she was wearing her very short silk night dress without any underwear.....and when his hand landed on her cookie and he could feel she wasn't wearing any underwear and that she was wet his body visibly shook\*\*\*

Ray: fuck!

\*\*\*he picked her up and pinned her to the wall and she wrapped her legs around his waist as they kissed hungrily.....he left her mouth and started sucking on her neck which drove her crazy, his hand went between them and he took out his hard dick and inserted it inside her wet nana and she lost it\*\*\*

Mbali: ooh fuck baby!

Ray: you gonna the death of me Mbali I swear to the high and mighty you gonna be the death of me

\*\*\*he started moving\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*\*he was now hitting it from behind as she held on to the washing machine with one of her shirts gagged inside her mouth to minimize her screams....Ray was holding her waist tight as he fucked her hard with his own groans filling the room...his wet dick slid in and out of her fast, he was sweating all over his body and so was she....he went fast hitting all the right spots and her body shook for the third time as another orgasm hit her \*\*\*

Mbali: ooh God....ooh God

\*\*\*she said almost out of breath\*\*\*

Ray: Ahhh..... shit my flower!

\*\*\* he said that without stopping with sweat dripping down his body as he fucked her good and hard....he went faster and deeper with his grip getting tighter as if he wanted to rip her body apart and she took out the shirt from her mouth\*\*\*

Mbali: RAY!

\*\*\*he went too fast with Mbali screaming, he was close..... he then gave her one powerful thrust and he pushed himself in deeper as he released hard inside of her\*\*\*

Ray:

ahhrg....ahhrg....ahhrg....shit...shit..mmmmh  
h

\*\*\*he said with a deeper voice then he stood there with his shaky legs looking down with his eyes closed.....he then slowly pulled out and his semen ran down her trembling thighs and he stumbled back a bit and he balanced himself with a dryer while Mbali slowly went down to the floor and she lay there panting\*\*\*

Ray: My flower you ok?

\*\*\*she didn't respond\*\*\*

Ray: Mbali!

\*\*\*he said panicking as he went to her\*\*\*

Mbali: im fine but you have killed me today....no sex for you for the rest of the week

\*\*\*she said with a lazy voice and Ray chuckled as he sat next to her\*\*\*

Ray: you're the one who have killed me my flower....my dick is numb I can't feel it

Mbali: angithi you drank Viagra pills and fucked me like a porn star

\*\*\*he frowned\*\*\*

Ray: don't say that my flower....i respect you too much to even think of treating you like a porn star ok

\*\*\*she chuckled and smiled at him\*\*\*

Mbali: I know baby and I was kidding

Ray: well don't joke like that my flower

\*\*\*she touched his now flaccid dick and it didn't

get hard\*\*\*

Ray: its out of service until further notice

\*\*\*Mbali laughed and he joined her\*\*\*

Mbali: let me go check on OUR KIDS we just forgot about

Ray: shit I forgot about them

\*\*\*they laughed and got up and quickly cleaned themselves and got dressed then they walked out with Mbali limping and Ray chuckled and when she gave him a bad stare, he stopped but he smiled naughtily..... anyway they found Cataleya smiling and laughing as Tom and Jerry played and they smiled looking at her\*\*\*\*\*

Ray: she's slowly becoming free

Mbali: mmmmh...i thought it will take her longer but im glad it didn't and I must say you make beautiful babies

Ray: we make beautiful babies

\*\*\*she looked at him then she shook her head\*\*\*

Ray: don't forget we have somewhere to be at two o'clock ok

Mbali: how will I forget when you have been reminding me since yesterday?

Ray: just be ready by then please

\*\*\*he turned her face and smooched her lips\*\*\*

Ray: let me go take a quick shower....i love you Mrs me

Mbali: I love you too Mr me

\*\*\* he walked away laughing and she went to the kitchen\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*Its been a week and Kazi has been too quiet for Menzi's liking and too closed off and he's worried about her especially after finding out that she's pregnant...he couldn't believe that

she's pregnant and he regretted stressing her out like that, he tried to find out more information from her about the two figures that attacked her and she just doesn't wanna talk about it, she just cries each time he asks her about it so he decided to stop.....Snakes got back to him and he also couldn't understand what or who those things were but he said he'll ask around and maybe someone might know something but that didn't stop Menzi from doing his own research.....as for Kazi she wondered if she should call Phumi or Cass to warn them about the dangers coming at them but she decided against it even though she wished to ask Cass a few questions about what the twins said about him and his brother....and again she remembered that Cass did warn her never to call him ever again and just thinking about that conversation she felt like she didn't owe them anything after all they did to him.....she's at Menzi's house, he didn't want



her to be all alone in her house after all she went through more over because she's pregnant.....Anyway Menzi was outside in the balcony talking on his work phone while his personal phone that was on top of the table, it suddenly rang and she glanced on the screen and Raine was plastered on it.....she remembered the woman she found in the house with Menzi and he called her Raine, she looked at Menzi and he seemed like he was having an intense conversation on his other phone so she picked the phone up and answered it\*\*\*

Kazi: yes?

\*\*\*she answered with attitude which caught Lorraine by surprise \*\*\*

Raine: umm hi can I speak to Menzi please

Kazi: listen here ntombazana..... Menzi is mine unyangizwa and we are about to be parents and yes im pregnant so stay in your lane and leave

my man alone!

\*\*\*Raine was caught off guard but she regained her composure quickly \*\*\*

Raine: listen here girly....i don't have time for an insecure thing like you ok....just give Menzi the damn phone and stop talking rubbish

Kazi: ungiwaela kabi wena....you think I'll just sit back and let you take my man angithi, well bitch you clearly don't know me!

Raine: you know what I don't argue with fools so I'll try him again later on on his business numbers since the number is busy now nx

Kazi: you know your desperation makes me feel sorry for you cause I know he's just using you, that man chose me over his wife...his own wife so wena who do you think you are mmmmh....im sure all he wants from you is just your pussy then he'll pretend like you don't exist

\*\*\*Raine swallowed hard cause she's been hurt

and dumped before by a man she gave her all to but she regained her composure again cause she didn't want her thinking she hit a nerve\*\*\*

Raine: I should be the one saying that cause yho its clear you're one of those baby mamas that no guy wants and just so you know, if I wanted Menzi believe me I'll have him just like that and sweetly he'll even forget your existence once im done with him

Kazi: uyanya msoon....try that shit and believe me i'll practice witchcraft ngawe msoon kanyoko nx!

\*\*\*tu tu tu Raine dropped the call leaving Kazi fuming with anger....she threw the phone on top of the couch and tears ran down her cheeks, she lost Castiel so the thought of her losing Menzi to another woman too broke her heart some more....\*\*\*

Menzi: hey why are you crying?

\*\*\*he said walking to her\*\*\*

Kazi: your bitch called and...and

Menzi: wait you answered my phone?

\*\*\*he asked with a serious tone and she chuckled with more tears gushing out\*\*\*

Kazi: you know I wish those creepy fucks killed me instead....i mean I have nothing to live for so they should have just killed me

\*\*\*she got up and he sighed\*\*\*

Menzi: Ntandokazi...

Kazi: LEAVE ME ALONE NXA!

\*\*\*she walked away\*\*\*

Menzi: sthandwa sam...

Kazi: go to the nearest hell Menzi along with your bitch nxa!

\*\*\*she said climbing up the stairs and he sighed brushing his head and he sat down shaking his

head then he called Lorraine back a couple of times but she didn't answer his calls\*\*\*

-----

## AT RUSLAN AND THANDI'S HOUSE

Ruslan: you in my house....whatever you want to talk to me about must be big

Snakes: for a week I have been trying to figure out what the hell is going on on this video and there's no logical explanation so maybe you can explain it better

\*\*\*he sighed then he showed him the video\*\*\*

Ruslan: where did you get this?

\*\*\*he asked standing up\*\*\*

Snakes: first tell me who or what the fuck they are

Ruslan: damn it!.....fine...ummm they are vampires and I think it's the twins Cosmo and Constantine

\*\*\*he brushed his head pacing around\*\*\*

Ruslan: damn it...damn it!

Snakes: you seem freaked out man....what the hell is going on

\*\*\*he asked with a serious tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: who else knows about this?

Snakes: do you even have to ask, ofcourse my brothers do now answer my question

\*\*\*he breathed out\*\*\*

Ruslan: im not freaked out cause im scared of those fuckers but because I have Thandi and the boys while Cass has Phumi and Ray has....Mbali and the kids too

\*\*\*Snakes frowned\*\*\*

Snakes: what does Mbali got to do with vampires?

Ruslan: she's Ray's wife

Snakes: so?

\*\*\*Ruslan just gave him a bored look\*\*\*

Snakes: hei hei hei...lalela la wena ( listen here)....you and your brothers better make sure nothing happens to my princess uyangizwa.....hei I'll take my phobia of supernatural things and put it aside and fucken deal with the three of you.....Mbali is off limits!

\*\*\*He shouted at Ruslan and Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: well go tell them that

Snakes: im telling you angithi you're the one that brought those fuckers here so im telling you!

\*\*\*he said feeling worked up\*\*\*

Ruslan: ok I heard you now answer my question....where did you get that

\*\*\*Snakes huffed and he got up\*\*\*

Snakes: those two Godforsaken things attacked

Kazi, Menzi's gi....

\*\*\*then his face fell and he closed his eyes  
shaking his head\*\*\*

Snakes: why didn't I put two and two  
together..... they attacked her because of  
Castiel right?

Ruslan: you know her?

Snakes: answer my question

Ruslan: I don't know man...unless they...damn  
it.....they must have caught her scent the day  
Eden found us

Snakes: what do you mean her scent....so she  
really fucked Castiel..... yah neh I swear abafazi  
will even sleep with a gorilla as ugly and scary  
as it looks as long as it has a huge dick, fucks  
good and has money

Ruslan: fucked h...ooh hell no.....he didn't sleep  
with her, he just saved her life the time Menzi's



wife send people to kill her

\*\*\*he defended his brother\*\*\*

Snakes: whooo....whooo...whooo...whooo..... so  
Castiel was the one that kidnapped her

\*\*\*he asked surprised\*\*\*

Ruslan: he didn't kidnap her ok, he saved her  
life....saved her life man

\*\*\*Snakes shook his head\*\*\*

Snaked: yah neh

Ruslan: look she's alive today because of Cass  
ok

Snakes: then why is she so obsessed with  
him.....i mean she even told Menzi that Castiel  
is her ex and she still has feelings for him

Ruslan: well something must be wrong with her  
head cause they never dated or fucked

\*\*\*Snakes frowned\*\*\*

Snakes: what?

\*\*\*he was confused\*\*\*

Ruslan: look tell your hit-boy to make sure his girl is protected by all times....she shouldn't leave the house at all cause they can't enter someone's house without being invited in it or else they'll kill her thinking they'll lure Castiel and I out

\*\*\*Snakes sighed\*\*\*

Snakes: all I care about now is my little sister Ruu....all of you better make sure nothing happens to her or we as her brothers excluding Thor will be the least of your problems cause Pops and Mkhulu and Thor will fucken rip you apart

Ruslan: we got everything under control so chill and it's like you forget what we're capable off Mamba....your little sister as you call her is La Parca's wife and Saint's mother

\*\*\*He said with a serious tone and Snakes looked at him with a serious look on his face too\*\*\*

Snakes: and never forget that she's Nighthawks only daughter and Killer the dragon slayer's only granddaughter and Spilotro, Krane, Mamba, black Jesus and Thor aka Beast's only sister

\*\*\*then he took his phone and car keys and walked out ..... Ruslan shook his head then he dialed Ray and told him about the twins then he dialed Castiel\*\*\*

Castiel: bad timing man...bad fucken timing!

Ruslan: wait don't tell me you're having sex with Phumi in her condition Castiel

Castiel: what condition?

Ruslan: she's fucken carrying a vampire baby what do you mean what condition and she's close to giving birth.....what the fuck is wrong with you!

\*\*\*he said shouting\*\*\*

Castiel: and Thandi is carrying a witch so you mean to tell me you don't fuck her too

Ruslan: shut the fuck up!

Castiel: shut the fuck up too and let me enjoy my wife in peace.... ah ah this nigga...don't be a cockblocker man

\*\*\*Ruslan shook his head defeated\*\*\*

Ruslan: you know what...whatever and its not even why I called.....we have a problem

Castiel: wait

\*\*\*he heard him talking to Phumi\*\*\*

Castiel: I'll be back ok

Phumi: ok

\*\*\*she said softly and he heard them kissing and Phumi moaned and Ruu quickly moved the phone from his ear making a face\*\*\*

Castiel: ngiyakthanda yezwa

\*\*\*then he chuckled\*\*\*

Castiel: yeah what's the problem man?

Ruslan: you didn't have to make me listen to porno on the phone you know that right

\*\*\*Castiel laughed\*\*\*

Ruslan: anyway Cosmo and Constantine got to Kazi and almost killed her

Castiel: what....is she ok?

\*\*\*he asked with a worried tone\*\*\*

Ruslan: ooh so you care about her well being?

Castiel: what ...ofcourse not..... I just don't want her involved in shit that got nothing to do with her

Ruslan: yeah right anyway I think they caught her scent that time we killed Eden

Castiel: damn it.....i hope she didn't sell me out

Ruslan: you think she would

Castiel: she's obsessed with me man and she believes I betrayed her by getting with Phumi

\*\*\*Ruslan breathed out\*\*\*

Ruslan: she has your numbers man and they took her bag and im sure they took her phone as well so they might track your numbers they got from her phone if they haven't already

Castiel: or Phumi's numbers if she told them about her and i ...damn it...i swear if anything happens to my wife and child that bitch is dead!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice and then he heard him walking\*\*\*

Ruslan: you need to move from that house now!

Castiel: not happening... and you better stay where you are cause they might know my location but they don't know yours

Ruslan: im not gonna let you do this alone Cass

Cass: believe me they wont strike until they see you....they might act touch but we both know they are afraid of you so attacking us both at once and not one at a time is the best option they have

\*\*\*Ruu sighed\*\*\*

Ruslan: wait what if Kazi gave out Phumi's home address since she doesn't know yours

\*\*\*Cass froze\*\*\*

Cass: shit....let me call you back

\*\*\*he dropped the call and dialed his mother in law's numbers and they rang for some time then a woman's voice answered\*\*\*

Voice: hello

\*\*\*he knew that voice pretty well\*\*\*

Cass: is she still alive

\*\*\*he said with a serious tone and Cosmo laughed\*\*\*

Cosmo: what do you know....and he calls.....

\*\*\*she laughed\*\*\*

Cosmo: you know I wondered what  
Mmm...kh...we...ni...whatever she saved you  
with means

\*\*\*Cass clenched his jaws\*\*\*

Cass: you're so pathetic you know that...going  
after an old defenseless woman just because  
you can't face my brother and I head on

Cosmo: what gave you the idea that we cant  
face your stupid asses

Cass: cause my brother took ya'll on all by  
himself so imagine what will happen now with  
others backing him

Cosmo: I don't have time for games

Castiel.....her life for yours and your brothers

\*\*\*Cass laughed\*\*\*

Cass: go ahead and kill her, she and her



daughter don't see eye to eye in fact they cant stand each other so do it

Cosmo: if she means so little to you then why does she have your numbers

Cass: this is Africa you dumb bitch....to marry someone's child here you need to pay the dowry to the family before she becomes yours and how the hell do you think I would know what to do without communicating with her

\*\*\*Cosmo didn't say anything and Castiel hoped that she buys the story\*\*\*

Cass: anyway just make sure you don't make too much of a mess cause we both know the brethren hate incompetent, disposable and useless errant boys and girls who likes causing unnecessary mess for the world to see

Cosmo: im gonna get you you son of a witch and I'll enjoy killing all your loved ones as you watch then I'll rip that useless head of yours

and burn you bitch

Cass: still a ranting bitch I see.....say hi to that  
ass loving twin of yours

\*\*\*he chuckled then he dropped the call\*\*\*

Cass: shiiittt...fucken shittt!

\*\*\*he dialed Ray's numbers\*\*\*

Ray: Cass

Cass: I need a favor man it's a matter of life and  
death

Ray: im listening

\*\*\*he told him about the call with Cosmo\*\*\*

Ray: damn it, sit tight I'll go there myself don't  
worry

Cass: thanks bro

\*\*\*they ended the call and he called Ruslan  
back and told him everything\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*well Ray met up with Mat at Phumi's home and they found Phumi's mother passed out with a serious head injury and the twins where nowhere in sight.....they rushed her to the hospital and she has been in a coma ever since, well Castiel decided not to tell Phumi about her mother because of her condition\*\*\*

-----

A WEEK LATER

\*\*\*The Khumalo brothers did pay Ray a visit and he told them everything he knows about the brethren and promised them that Mbali is safe cause they are here for Ruu and Cass and not him, but he also told them that it doesn't mean he won't lay down his life for Cass and Ruu cause come rain or sunshine he will be part of that fight alongside his brothers....they didn't fight or argue with him cause they themselves knew they would do the same if they were in his shoes\*\*\*

-----  
Ray: come on my flower we're getting late

Mbali: can you just wait a bit

Ray: I have been waiting for an hour come on

Lady: we are almost done sir

Ray: what the hell are you doing to her face for an hour

\*\*\*the lady laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: you the one that brought her here to make me look good so chill please

Ray: and now I regret it....just finish up we gonna be late

\*\*\* he said with an annoyed voice and he walked out and Mbali rolled her eyes then they laughed quietly \*\*\*

Lady: ai.... men

Mbali: you can say that again

\*\*\*they laughed some more then she continued doing some finishing touches on her make up since she was done with her hair then she helped her wear her custom made evening dress and the lady packed her things and Mbali took her clutch bag\*\*\*

Lady: you look like you're about to enter a Miss South Africa pageant damn girl

\*\*\*Mbali laughed blushing\*\*\*

Lady: hai shem jealous down umuhle girl

Mbali: thanks love...lets go before he comes back here and drags me out

\*\*\* they laughed then they walked out\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\*she walked down the stairs slowly with the make-up lady in front on her...when Ray saw the make-up lady walking down the stairs he got up\*\*\*

Ray: finally!

\*\*\*the lady chuckled and when he saw the madam of the house walking down the stairs slowly his jaw dropped and his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Mbali: close your mouth hubby

\*\*\*she said chuckling and he swallowed hard and put his hands inside his pockets...she looked beautiful and sexy in her dress no lies....he has never seen her like this before and he wondered how she will look wearing a white wedding dress if she looks this exquisite now\*\*\*

Ray: wow my flower

\*\*\*she smiled looking at his face...she got to him and he kissed her cheek and whispered to her ear\*\*\*

Ray: im hard as a rock by just looking at you damn

\*\*\*she chuckled and blushed\*\*\*

Ray: you look beautiful my flower....i....i.... don't even know what to say.....im just speechless.....damn

\*\*\*she blushed some more then Ray turned to the make-up lady\*\*\*

Ray: thank you

Lady: my pleasure sir....ummm have fun.... bye

Mbali: bye

\*\*\* the lady walked out and he pulled her face closer and perked her lips\*\*\*

Ray: lets go before I have you right here and now

\*\*\*she laughed and they took their kids and their bags and walked out.....Soon they arrived at the venue, it definitely wasn't where she thought they would go....the venue was at some ranch farm place deep inside the woods but the

building was beautiful and huge....the farm had horses, cows, donkeys, goats, sheep, chicken and pigs....it also had swings for kids, jumping castles and bar shades for elders to sit and watch over the kids having fun while they drank and there was also a hall room where conferences, wedding and parties where held...it was just a perfect venue to host a party for the men but not as much for the women\*\*\*

Mbali: ok I didn't think we will reach a place like this after we drove for some time inside these woods

\*\*\*he smiled at her, for the men it was a perfect place to have a party cause it was far from people's houses for just in case something happens since the Brethren are in town and even though it wasn't ideal for the women but it was a fun and relaxing place \*\*\*

Ray: its just perfect for our privacy



Mbali: mmmmh

\*\*\*she saw cars she didn't recognize parked in the front yard.....she looked at Ray and he laughed\*\*\*

Ray: what?

Mbali: why are we here Mr

Ray: for some kid's party my flower

\*\*\*she remembered Naledi's phone call \*\*\*

Mbali: ooh it's a party for that girl Naledi is funding

Ray: mmmmh

Mbali: ok I hope im not over dressed

Ray: no you're not believe me

Mbali: ok

\*\*\*he got out of the car and opened the door for her and helped her out\*\*\*

Ray: you look breathtaking baby..... but damn its

gonna be one hell of a day for me cause im sure  
I'll have a boner for the rest of the day

\*\*\*she blushed then she laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: well you look handsome too baby so im  
sure I'll have a wet underwear for the rest of the  
day

\*\*\*he chuckled and kissed her cheek and they  
took the kids out of the car\*\*\*

Ray: let's go

\*\*\* they walked to the door \*\*\*

Mbali: wait why did we bring kids to a 21st  
birthday party of a girl we don't even know Ray

\*\*\*Ray opened the door ignoring her and  
everyone screamed " SURPRISE " .....she  
jumped startled which made Cataleya and Kalu  
to cry with Cataleya clinging tight onto  
Mbali....everyone laughed and they went to a  
shocked Mbali who was frozen on the

spot....Ruslan took a crying Kalu and hushed him and Ray took Leya and he hushed her too....she was clinging to him shaking while crying as everyone was hugging Mbali\*\*\*

Ray: its ok baby...its ok I told you daddy will castrate anyone who even attempts to hurt you

\*\*\*he brushed her back until she calmed down....he went back to Mbali and she was busy wiping her tears off looking emotional\*\*\*

Mbali: I can't believe you guys did this for me

Ntombi: you should thank your hubby for that princess...we just made phone calls here and there while he coughed out the hard cash

\*\*\*she looked over at Ray who was smiling wide and she got closer to him and perked his lips\*\*\*

Mbali: thank you baby

Ladies: wuuuuh

Mbali: what

\*\*\*they laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: and wena Mamkhulu

\*\*\*Naledi laughed\*\*\*

Naledi: I had to lie I had no choice love

\*\*\*Heath kissed her cheek smiling at her, he was in love with her and it was written all over his face\*\*\*

Mbali: well thank you for helping hubby and thank you to everyone who was involved in planning this party

Muzi: what about us who didn't help plan this

\*\*\*everyone laughed\*\*\*

Mbali: well since I see that we're only family here then thank you all for being in my life, for loving me and protecting me

Muzi: I love you princess

\*\*\*he went to her and hugged her\*\*\*

Mbali: I love you too bhuti

\*\*\*Snakes also went to her they hugged and she whispered to him\*\*\*

Mbali: my favourite bro

\*\*\*he chuckled and they hugged for some time\*\*\*

Snakes: damn you're no longer a baby my princess

\*\*\*he said with a sad tone\*\*\*

Mbali: but I know I'll always be your little princess no matter what

Snakes: damn right....

\*\*\*they laughed and Jase and Jay hugged her too\*\*\*

Jase: I love you baby and enjoy your appreciation party

Jay: does this kind of party exist out there or  
kunyelwa thina la

\*\*\*laughter\*\*\*

Snakes: uRay uyasinyela straight ( Ray is  
messing with us)

\*\*\*laughter\*\*\*

Kedi: language guys haw there are kids in here

\*\*\*Jase perked her lips\*\*\*

Jay: ngiyadlala and askies his heart....you  
deserve it baby

\*\*\*he kissed her cheek then the mighty Thor  
walked to her and her eyes got filled with  
tears....he hugged her lifting her off from the  
ground and she held on to him tight  
sobbing....he put her down again and she didn't  
let go.....after some time she broke the hug and  
he wiped her tears off....the wives also wiped  
their tears off too\*\*\*

Thor: I hope these are tears of joy my princess

\*\*\*she nodded as he looked down at her\*\*\*

Thor: mother of two

\*\*\*she chuckled and he looked over at Ray and he shook his head then he looked back at her\*\*\*

Thor: im proud of you my princess....you have Ma's kind heart and even though she couldn't make it cause baba just can't get enough of travelling the world with her by also entering God forsaken countries for a baecation with uMa which makes it hard for us to contact them, I know she would be saying how proud she is of you and as for baba and pops, well they would be busy threatening him

\*\*\*he pointed at Ray and everyone laughed...well he lied about the baecation, Ma was recovering from the cancer after a successful surgery \*\*\*

Snakes: Pop's flight got delayed so he'll land

tomorrow in the afternoon but he said he loves you and asked what is an appreciation party and what is he supposed to get you for it

\*\*\*more laughter...Thor kissed her forehead\*\*\*

Thor: I love you

Mbali: I love you too bhuti

\*\*\*Heath and Jabu also went to her and hugged her\*\*\*

Mbali: my husbands

\*\*\*laughter\*\*\*

Jabu: yah neh rich people's things...an appreciation party from lepara la gao while rena le di birthday party di ya pala from bowifey ( an appreciation from hubby while we don't even get birthday parties from our wives)

\*\*\*he looked over at Amo who gave him a death stare as everyone laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: ka dlala rato laka man ( im playing my



love)...mmmh thambo lam lomkhutlhane ( my  
flue bone)

\*\*\*more laughter \*\*\*

Jabu: kao rata wautlwa my nunuza ( I love you  
ok baby)

\*\*\*Amo blushed and Jabu chuckled \*\*\*

Heath: well dad and ma couldn't make it  
apparently dad strained his back changing the  
bulb but we both know he never changes bulbs  
in the house so im sure sex send him to the ER

\*\*\*laughter\*\*\*

Mbali: ooh my God

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

Ruslan: you deserve this party and more his  
flower

\*\*\*he hugged her and kissed her forehead and  
she looked at him with tears in her eyes\*\*\*

Ruslan: you look stunning by the way

Mbali: thank you

\*\*\*Mj and Sbu hugged her too and all the kids also hugged her...Mj couldn't even joke around with Mbali cause he was still mesmerized by how beautiful she looked in her dress especially the way it hugged her curvaceous body \*\*\*

Ray: my flower

\*\*\*she looked at him and smiled\*\*\*

Mbali: yes baby

Ray: this party is for you, it's an appreciation party for being the best wife I could've ever asked for.....this party is from me to you for accepting and loving Cataleya as your own...for taking care of Kalu and accepting him and also embracing what he is

\*\*\*they wives were confused by the Kalu part\*\*\*

Ray: it is also an appreciation party from me to

you for accepting me with all my flaws, for having my back and for loving me unconditionally...i love you so much my flower...you truly are my missing rib and im glad to have you as my wife with all your craziness

\*\*\*laughter....Mbali was a crying mess along with the wives...Thandi included\*\*\*

Ray: and this is your push out present, I know it's a bit too late but I feel like this is the right time

\*\*\*he gave her car keys and her eyes popped out\*\*\*

Mbali: A MASERATI RAY?

\*\*\*Ray nodded and she screamed jumping up and down\*\*\*

Mbali: where is it....where is it

\*\*\*She asked with an excited voice \*\*\*

Ray: at the back

\*\*\*she ran towards the door in her high heels and everyone followed her laughing....and when she saw that it was custom made exactly the way she always told Ray about her dream car whenever they had their pillow talk ....she screamed and cried....Ray hugged her for some time until she calmed down\*\*\*

Mbali: A 2019 ROSE GOLD MASERATI GRAN TURISMO RAY....you bought me a.....

\*\*\* he nodded with a huge smile on his face and she cried some more until she calmed down again then she unlocked it and got inside wiping her tears.... everyone congratulated her admiring the car\*\*\*

Sbu: hai shame mfowethu o ka se loke daar ( bro you can't handle her)....a fucken brand new Maserati man

\*\*\*Mj punched his shoulder and he laughed\*\*\*

Mj: yes she's fine as hell but im no longer there

Sbuda, my demons just got silenced by that sexy mamasita with long sexy legs and a fine round ass standing with Mphile .....damn who is she?

\*\*\*Sbu looked where Mj was looking and it was Tiara\*\*\*

Sbu: sisMbali's niece

Mj: damn... what the hell are they feeding the ladies in that family...no man im sure whatever that thing is its not even legal

\*\*\*he said looking at her body and his eyes landed on her yellow thighs showing on her short dress and he put his hands inside his jeans cursing and Sbu laughed shaking his head\*\*\*

Sbu: hah mfowethu net so ( bro just like that)

\*\*\*he said laughing at him\*\*\*

Mj: voetsek sani

\*\*\*they both laughed\*\*\*

Mj: I think I just met my soulmate Sbuda, even my crush on Mbali just vanished into thin air man

\*\*\*Sbu laughed and Mj called Omphile over and she walked to them\*\*\*

Omphile: rangwane ( uncle)

Mj: who's that

\*\*\*she looked and she smiled looking back at him\*\*\*

Phile: Tiara...she's pretty neh...and she's nice too and she said I should ask dad to move from my school to hers next year....its an all girls school and she said I'll enjoy schooling there

Sbu: ooh so now you're best friends?

Phile: I think it will lead to that...she's so cool and down to earth

\*\*\*Mj cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mj: do you have her numbers

\*\*\*she frowned looking at him suspiciously\*\*\*

Phile: why?

Mj: just answer my question princess and stop asking me questions

Phine: ok yeah I have them

\*\*\*Mj looked at Sbu and he smirked\*\*\*

Mj: send them to me

Phile: askies

Sbu: don't be like that man Mphile

MJ: how much do you want for them

Phile: nothing but you can ask her for them

\*\*\*then she called Tiara over and Mj's eyes popped out and Omphile smirked at him\*\*\*

Tiara: hi guys

Mj: "fuck her voice"

\*\*\*he thought\*\*\*

Sbu: sho ntwana

Mj: h...h

\*\*\*he cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mj: hi

Tiara: girl what's up?

Mj: ummm nothing she just...wanted to introduce you to us

\*\*\*Omphile and Sbu held in their laughter as they looked at a panicking MJ\*\*\*

Tiara: ooh ok

Phile: Tee this is my brother Sbu and this my uncle MJ

Tiara: uncle?

Mj: im her father's younger bro so that makes me her uncle

Tiara: ooh ok I get I guess your family is as



traditional as mine

\*\*\*she smiled at them and Mj's face flushed as all his blood rushed to his already hard dick\*\*\*

Mj: " she even looks like an angel when she smiles...fuck!"

\*\*\*he thought to himself\*\*\*

Omphile: ummm ok then....excuse us guys

Tiara: nice meeting you guys

Sbu: same here

\*\*\*Mj cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mj: ye...yeah same here

\*\*\*she walked away with Omphile and Phile turned and she silently laughed looking at Mj and Mj showed her a fist...as for Sbu he laughed his ass off looking at Mj\*\*\*

Mj: fuck you man

Sbu: fuck you too

\*\*\*he continued to laugh\*\*

Sbu: damn you got it bad man

\*\*\*Mj rubbed his face\*\*\*

Mj: fuck...i think im in love man

Voice: be in love all you like but all her fathers will skin you alive boy....look at them, do you see how buffed up the dark one is, he's an ex Special Forces man.... he's one dangerous mother fucker

\*\*\*it was Ruu and Mj cleared his throat\*\*\*

Mj: brother Ruu

Ruslan: im glad you're over the little crush you had for Mbali but you see with that girl, your own won't be as easy as Rays...they'll literally kill you....think about that

\*\*\*he walked passed them with Kalu in his arms and both Sbu and Mj swallowed hard\*\*\*

Mj: this time God don butter my bread bros so

im not about to be ungrateful.... next year when I move this side im gonna make her mine come rain or sunshine

Sbu: didn't you hear uncle Ruu

Mj: big Ray made it so im sure I'll make it too

Sbu: Amen!

\*\*\*he said defeated.....Anyway the party started with Mj and Sbu as Djs, Mj kept on looking at Tiara every now and then and he was glad this was a family thing or else he would be losing his mind when he sees her talking to another boy ....the party didn't have waiters or waitresses... even the owners of the ranch weren't around, Ray booked the whole place and even paid extra for them to leave to give them the privacy they'll need and they didn't mind cause the money Ray paid didn't give them any reason to refuse...they danced, ate and danced some more....the kids even enjoyed

themselves outside riding horses and playing on swings and running around on the green grass, all in all it was a fun party that even the wives enjoyed themselves including the Khumalo brothers....in the afternoon the kids went side to eat again and suddenly Ruu got up\*\*\*

Ruu: they are here

Ray: what

\*\*\* he said getting up and the Khumalo's also got up then the front door opened and 15 men and one woman stood there wearing all black\*\*\*

Ray: I swear they all gonna pay for ruining my wife's party nx

\*\*\*he said looking angry\*\*\*

-----

TO BE CONTINUED.....

## MARRIED AGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

### CONTINUATION OF INSERT 30

\*\*\* They stood by the door wearing all black which caught everyone's attention...then they looked around and their wondering eyes landed on Ruslan who looked angry.... Sbu stopped the music wondering what was happening by the hall entrance \*\*\*

Cosmo: mmmmh this is nice...is this a family reunion?

\*\*\*she said with her American accent and Constantine and the others chuckled\*\*\*

Constantine: and he thought we wouldn't find him....where's that annoying brother of

yours....ooh I forgot he's nursing his dying wife  
cause we all know she wont make it, that baby  
will kill her

\*\*\*he asked Ruslan then he laughed\*\*\*

Jay: so these are the stupid fucks who calls  
themselves the broken

Jase: they are called the brenden Jay

Muzi: no I think Ruu said they call themselves  
the brackets

Snakes: nah they are called the Mahotella  
Queens the first since they are a million years  
older than our lovely Mahotella Queens

\*\*\*his brothers looked at him and laughter  
erupted \*\*\*

Jabu: heh mfo I think ba ipitsa Lesilo brass  
band ( bro I think they call themselves the  
Lesilo brass band)

\*\*\* ( Lesilo is a Zombie from a 1980s South

African horror series called Lesilo rula) Anyway more laughter erupted then Mbali held Ray's hand, Ray had Leya on his other hand while Kalu was held by Ruslan...as for Thorsten he was standing there looking at them with a serious look on his face...all he was thinking off was how he was gonna take the women and children to safety\*\*\*

Jabu: heh Mshikaro ba busy ba timpetse lebosetlha ekare ba tlhaga komeng mесоono ( they look pale as if they just finished with their traditional initiation in the mountain)

\*\*\*More laughter\*\*\*

Heath: keng ekare ba rouletse satan ka all black so? ( why is it like they are mourning for satan with all black)

\*\*\*more laughter\*\*\*

Cosmo: ENOUGH!

Mbali: what's going on Ray?

Ray: this are the bad guys.....im sorry but your appreciation party is about to be ruined

\*\*\*he said looking at her with an apologetic look\*\*\*

Mbali: what?

Ray: they are not human so Saint needs to take the women and kids out of here to a safe place and he should protect all of you

\*\*\*she looked around with her heart beating fast\*\*\*

Constantine: no one will save you sweetie

\*\*\*he said looking at Mbali who held on tight to Ray's hand....the Khumalo wives gathered their children and so did Thandi, Amo and Naledi while MJ and Sbu moved closer and they stood together wondering what was going on....MJ looked over at Tiara and she was holding on to Nomhle and he sighed\*\*\*



Ruslan: you really gonna do this here

\*\*\*Cosmo indicated that the rest of The Brethren move further in and Jabu and Heath took out their guns\*\*\*

Sbu&MJ: ooh shit!

Ruslan: put those guns away they won't work on them

\*\*\*Constantine looked at them\*\*\*

Constantine: you wanna shoot bitch....take your best shot come on plus it's been a while since I've been tickled by those weak ass things

\*\*\*he said stretching his arms wide then the rest of The Brethren laughed\*\*\*

Jabu: eish konje ( ooh right)

Snakes: Ntombi give me the holy water and holy oil daar

\*\*\*he said with a serious voice\*\*\*

Jay: really Mamba?

Snakes: I think there's also food here that was cooked with garlic....we should also tie butter knives and forks to make crosses, im sure they'll get scared and leave

Constantine: you disrespecting me human

\*\*\*he said sounding angry\*\*\*

Snakes: you're disrespecting yourself lesilo

\*\*\*within a blink of an eye he was holding Snakes by his neck and Ruslan's eyes changed colour to clear white and he pointed at Constantine and he flew away letting Snakes go but he turned midair and he gained control of his body and he landed on the floor with his one hand balancing on the floor and he smirked looking at Ruslan.....screams where heard from the wives while the kids looked scared\*\*\*

Mbali: Saint wake up now and take all the women and children to a safe place and protect

them!

\*\*\* she shouted and the room got darker and black smoke covered the tall ceilings and The Brethren looked up wondering what the heck was going on\*\*\*

Ray: NOW SAINT!

\*\*\*The Brethren rushed to the women and children but black smoke quickly covered them and loud roars erupted inside the hall and Jay and Jase's beasts charged at The Brethren that were going to the women.... with a human eye they wouldn't see them as they moved as fast as lightning but in a beast form they could see them.... they intercepted The Brethren before they could reach the women and children even though Saint was ready for them and they hit them hard and they flew away hitting the wall at the far end but they quickly got up and charged at them again, Cosmo and Constantine were surprised to see beasts in Africa of all

places.....Anyway one of the vampires charged at Ray and Mbali and Ruslan put his palm up and lightning stroke and it hit the vampire and it made him fly up and he hit the ceiling and landed on the floor hard which made a large crack on the tiles...all along Thorsten was standing there watching the whole thing....Ruu made another blue lightning and it hit The Brethren that were fighting with Jay and Jase's beasts\*\*\*

Cosmo: fucken wizard!

\*\*\*she said sounding pissed\*\*\*

Snakes: eish uyabona manje...lightning, shitty things moving at a high speed and beasts....angizwane nalamasimba mina ( I don't like this shit at all)

\*\*\*he breathed out shaking his head meanwhile MJ and Sbu where now hiding under the table that had food on top looking scared\*\*\*

Muzi: I wish I had a beast too at this moment

Snakes: hai kabi but mina ngigrand (no thanks im good)

Jabu: fuck.... ledimpya tsa naga.... mos ke twilight fela mo ( fuck... wild dogs too?....i swear this is like twilight)

\*\*\* he said with his eyes popped out and his heart beating fast...as for Heath, he had a serious look on his face....Mad Dog was out to play\*\*\*

Ray: Saint now!

\*\*\*the black smoke disappeared with the women and children and the beasts growled looking around\*\*\*

Ray: they are safe relax!

\*\*\*they looked at him and then they calmed down and looked at The Brethren\*\*\*

Mj: Chineke m..... di...did you see that man?

\*\*\*he whispered to Sbu who just nodded slowly with his eyes popped out\*\*\*

Cosmo: don't just stand there go after them and kill them all!

\*\*\*The Brethren stood still\*\*\*

Vamp1: they just disappeared into thin air  
Cosmo how the hell are we supposed to follow them

\*\*\*she looked at him and her eyes changed color and the vamp covered his ears screaming for some time then she blinked and he stopped screaming....then the black smoke came back again and Mbali, Kalu and Leya disappeared too\*\*\*

Cosmo: DAMN IT!

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Muzi: damn he's good!

Cosmo: you think you're all clever right

Ruslan: you shouldn't have come to this country  
Cosmo.... believe me you shouldn't have

\*\*\*the beasts grunted with their thick saliva  
dripping from their mouths\*\*\*

Constantine: that was a nice move you did with  
that demon but he's not here to save all of you  
cause im sure he's protecting all those weak  
humans and babies so let the games begin

\*\*\*Ruslan chuckled\*\*\*

Ruslan: oohh Constantine you're so clueless

Thorsten: my wife is pregnant Ruslan so let's  
deal with this shitty things so I can go be with  
her

\*\*\*he said with his deep manly voice....Cosmo  
was taken by his voice as she looked at  
him....she scanned him up and down and she  
bit her lower lip cause nigga looked fine as hell  
not that all the guys in the hall didn't look fine  
but Thorsten had that thing man you

know....that thing\*\*\*

Cosmo: I wouldn't mind having you for one night lover boy

\*\*\*she said looking at Thorsten\*\*\*

Thorsten: you'll have to die a million times more to make my dick get hard for your ugly ass

\*\*\*he face fell and the rest of The Brethren held in their laughs\*\*\*

Ruslan: Beast let's kill them all and burn them to ashes

Thorsten: let's get on with it then

\*\*\*Cosmo looked at all of them and her eyes changed colour and everyone including Jay and Jase's beasts but except for Thorsten's screamed covering their ears...she smiled looking at all of them screaming as they went down to the floor with their hands covering their ears but when her eyes landed on an angry



looking Thorsten her smile faded\*\*\*

Constantine: it's not possible

\*\*\* Constantine looked at her and a bone cracking sound was heard as Thorsten changed to his beast form and the screams stopped as Cosmo was shocked at seeing Thorsten's kind of beast and in the process she stopped concentrating on making them feel pain\*\*\*

Cosmo: a....a Gevaudan beast

\*\*\*before they could snap out of it Thor's beast had already separated Cosmo's head from her body and Constantine screamed loud while Mj and Jabu's son fainted under the table\*\*\*

-----

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*he just received a call from Mbali who sounded frantic, she told him what happened and he didn't know what to do, she couldn't

leave Phumi alone and at the same time he couldn't let his brothers fight The Brethren alone\*\*\*

Castiel: fuck it

\*\*\*he went to the bedroom where a pale looking Phumi with dark circles around her eyes was sleeping on a hospital bed he put inside their bedroom and some machines to monitor her heart rate, she also had a fluid and loss dehydration IV on ....her belly was huge and she lost a lot of weight you'd swear she has Aids or she's on her last stages of cancer...he swallowed hard cause he couldn't leave her alone in this state, she only has two weeks left and she will give birth\*\*\*

Castiel: I hope im doing the right thing

\*\*\*he said to himself then he sat at the edge of the bed and he held her hand and kissed it then she opened her eyes and smiled weakly at

him\*\*\*

Phumi: hey

\*\*\*she said with a weak voice and he swallowed hard\*\*\*

Phumi: what's wrong?

\*\*\*she said frowning\*\*\*

Castiel: something happened at the party and... everyone's lives is in danger

Phumi: what

Castiel: Mbali called me crying and she said....

\*\*\*he sighed\*\*\*

Castiel: they need me....there's kids there bello

Phumi: ummm ok... go I'll be fine

Castiel: at the same time I can't leave you all alone in your condition

Phumi: I have a catheter thingy on and my phone is here

Castiel: I don't know bello

\*\*\*he said having a feeling of doubt\*\*\*

Phumi: im ok considering but your family is not  
Cass

\*\*\*he sighed and smashed his lips on hers then  
he kissed the tip of her nose and her forehead  
then her huge belly\*\*\*

Castiel: I love you

\*\*\*she blushed\*\*\*

Phumi: I love you too

Castiel: I'll be back ok

\*\*\*she nodded and he swallowed hard cause he  
didn't want to leave her all alone\*\*\*

Castiel: if you start feeling any pain call me ok,  
I'll know but call me please

\*\*\*she nodded and she could see he had a  
worried look on his face\*\*\*

Phumi: I'll be fine

\*\*\*he kissed her lips one more time and he went to the bar fridge in the bedroom and took out a patch full blood and filled a tall Styrofoam cup for her and he put it on the hospital table bed and he adjusted the bed a bit so she will be able to reach it....he kissed her one more time and within a blink of an eye he was inside his car and he opened the gate and drove out in total speed\*\*\*

-----

\*\*\* after a while Phumi felt the baby move roughly and she brushed her belly moaning cause she felt pain\*\*\*

Phumi: calm down baby

\*\*\*the baby stopped for some time then she breathed out and closed her eyes resting a bit but she opened her eyes when she felt an extremely sharp pain inside her stomach....she

screamed holding her belly and when she moved a bit she felt something breaking on her right ribs and she screamed loud with the machine beeping loudly...she held her belly screaming with tears gushing out and that's when she saw blood between her legs.....she felt the baby moving vigorously inside her belly as if it was fighting to get out and she screamed to the top of her lungs.....she moved her hand between her legs and she felt more excruciating pain on her right rib as she felt something break inside of her again and she continued to scream..... she fought through the pain and she got hold of the catheter tube and she pulled it out and let go of it.....she then opened her legs wide as hard as it was and she decided to push cause the baby was coming out while ripping her insides out ....the pain she was feeling was worse than anything she has ever felt before or anything she would never wish even for her enemies, she felt like

someone stabbed her on her right ribs and he's busy twisting the knife, she also felt like her insides were being ripped apart and that she was about to die....she screamed loudly as the baby was ripping its way out of her womb and more blood gushed out of her vagina\*\*\*

Phumi: Casssss...he..l..p....m...eee

\*\*\*she managed to say in a whisper as she struggled to breathe with her head bent on her right side looking towards the door.....The machines continued to make a loud noise with her heart rate dropping\*\*\*

MEANWHILE

\*\*\*Castiel was about to call Ruslan to tell him he's on his way and to find out if anyone was hurt when he felt a sharp pain on his chest.....he quickly packed on the side of the road and he groaned in pain, he has never felt such pain before even when he was still with Juana....

Phumi's face flashed through his mind and he quickly started the car and he made a dangerous sharp U-turn and his car flew on the road as he headed back home still feeling that pain\*\*\*

-----

## BACK TO THE VENUE

\*\*\*Constantine's fangs came out and he screamed looking deadly angry and he charged at the Gevaudan beast and a fight broke out, the other Vampires also charged at the rest of the guys and that's when the floor shook and voices of tortured souls were heard all over....everyone stopped except for Thor's beast and Constantine.....a black cloud just lifted Ray up and covered him then La Parca emerged as Ray disappeared\*\*\*

Snakes: ooh shit....shit...shit

Jabu: no no no no....not again....not again



\*\*\*he said shaking his head...then he knelt with one knee on the floor looking down and Muzi and Snakes looked at him like he's crazy\*\*\*

Snakes: wenzani? ( what are you doing)

\*\*\*he whispered to him and Jabu looked up slowly and found that he's the only one kneeling and he got up with his heart pounding hard\*\*\*

Jabu: the last time.....you know what never mind

\*\*\*Sounds of those tortured souls got louder and Jabu along with Snakes and Muzi moved back looking around while Mad Dog stood there ready for a fight “ with a vampire” imagine!....

Anyway the Brethren hissed with their long fangs all out looking at La Parca bending forwards a bit ready for a fight....La Parca then hit his scythe on the ground and a large crack emerged between the humans and vampires....

Thor's beast managed to grab Constantine's

neck and it choke slammed him to the floor shattering the tiles in the process with Constantine trying to fight it off him...it used its large veined left hand and punched him on the face over and over as its thick and slimy saliva dripped down from its mouth....Constantine's face cracked as more blows were thrown on his face, with his head going deeper inside the hole on floor made by his head being pushed deeper by those blows.... The crack got bigger and a bright orange light came out from it and Jay and Jase's beasts grunted moving back and so did the Brethren meanwhile Thor's beast was still throwing blows at Constantine's face which was showing more cracks with its right hand squeezing tight around his neck too, he was trying to fight the beast off him but it was futile thing to do....The Brethren jumped over the large crack on the floor and Ruslan said some words in the forbidden language and they were pushed back by a powerful force and flew back

hitting the wall hard and they quickly got up and charged at them again and that's when La Parca pointed his scythe to the burning huge crack on the floor and it got wider and deeper and that's when red skinned demons crawled out of it and the beasts growled looking angry as they looked from the demons to the vampires \*\*\*

Snakes: ooh hell no!

\*\*\*he shouted\*\*\*

Jabu: Mshikaro get the fuck away from there....Mshikaro!

\*\*\*Heath didn't move....Jabu attempted to rush to him but when one of the demons looked at him he stopped and he started shaking moving back slowly\*\*\*

Jabu: morena ke modisa wame gankitla ke tlhoka sepe, le ga madimone a ka ntebella ka matlho a ma hibidu gankitla di nketsa sepe ka

ntlha ya gae! ( The Lord is my Shepard I shall not want, even if demons are looking at me with red eyes they will do nothing to me because of him!)

\*\*\* he repeated that over and over and the demon crawled to them in a creepy way, it then looked at Heath and Mad Dog didn't show any emotion on his face and when Mad Dog turned his head to look back at the bone shattering demon, he clenched his jaws and shook his head while moving his index finger from left to right warning it to not even try it\*\*\*

Jabu: VOETSEK!....VOETSEK!

\*\*\*it turned and looked at Jabu, Muzi and Snakes and Muzi pulled out his gun and so did Jabu and Snakes but when it jumped like a spider coming towards them they ran around the tables started shooting at it and when their eyes landed on Mj and Sbu who were passed out under the table, Muzi screamed Ruslan's

name\*\*\*

Muzi: Ruu the boys are here!

\*\*\*Ruu turned looking at them and he spoke in the forbidden language and the demon exploded and blood red liquid scattered all over with some landing on Snakes, Jabu and Muzi and that's when Muzi , Jabu rushed to the boys while Snakes sat down on the floor with his hand on his chest as he struggled to breathe\*\*\*

Jabu: check your brother man I got them

\*\*\*Muzi looked over at Snakes and quickly rushed to him\*\*\*

Muzi: breathe Nhlaka....just breathe.....think of Ntombi and calm the fuck down

\*\*\*he thought of Ntombi, his grandmother, all his kids and Mbali the way she looked when she walked in, her happy face when she realized that Ray threw her a party....the tears of joy on her face made him calm down\*\*\*

Muzi: you having a panic attack so calm down man and breathe....find your happy place and breathe

La Parca: ያ ስፍራው በጣም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምት ችግሮች ላይ ቢያስቀምጡትም እንኳ አያደርጉትም

(light and darkness don't mix and that is why you have your own dark world and humans have this world now what are you doing here creatures! )

Ruslan: your worst mistake is trying to kill our women and children you pieces of shit

\*\*\* He said floating on white smoke with his eyes still all white in colour and his face was filled with visible dark veins...he looked scary and angry.....Then Thor's beast stopped punching Constantine and it pulled him up closer to its scary face \*\*\*

Thor's beast: my family is off limits!

\*\*\*it spoke slowly looking straight into his cold eyes then it ripped his head from his body and threw the body and the head inside the flames then it growled loud making the room shake, then it grabbed a demon that was passing next to him and it detached it's head from its body too and it threw it inside the flames and grunted looking at the remaining demons and vampires\*\*\*

La Parca: ჭჭღ! (you!)

\*\*\*he pointed at one of the brethren guys with his skeletal index finger who looked scared\*\*\*

La Parca: go tell your Leader about what happened here.....tell him that he broke the rules by involving mere humans into a fight of mystical creatures... tell him that he should prepare himself to go willingly or by force....GO NOW!

\*\*\*The young scared brethren ran out like a

speed of lightning then La Parca hit his scythe on the floor and the demons looked at him\*\*\*

La Parca: እምመጠኔ ይህጥ ሩውእስማተኛ ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲ ያስተምረው (take the dead ones back home demons!)

\*\*\*the demons stopped and turned to the remaining vampires\*\*\*

La Parca: ወለድ! (NOW!)

\*\*\*the ground shook as he commanded them and the demons jumped on the Vampires who tried by all means to fight them off and they dragged them inside the flames with them screaming...La Parca looked over at one of the tables \*\*\*

La Parca: ርለታል በጨለማው አለም ውስጥበጥ ሩሁኔታ ( don't test my patience demon!)

\*\*\*one demon crawled from under the table like a spider and it went straight into the flames rumbling and mumbling in the forbidden



language then La Parca hit the scythe on the ground and the crack closed and he looked at Ruslan\*\*\*

La Parca: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው እናም እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው (if the human dies im coming for your brother)

\*\*\*then off he went and Ray emerged from the black smoke and it put him down on the floor and it disappeared\*\*\*

-----

## AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

\*\*\*Cass parked and rushed in like a speed of lightning and what he found when he walked inside the bedroom will haunt him for eternity...there was a baby between Phumi's legs looking pale and covered in blood and he wasn't crying or moving and as for Phumi, she laid there with her eyes closed and she wasn't moving too and the machine that read her heart

rate were making a neutral beep sound which indicated that her heart stopped beating\*\*\*

Cass: no...no no

\*\*\*he rushed to her and felt her pulse and it wasn't there...he went to his son and found him lying there with his eyes opened blinking but he wasn't moving or crying or even making baby sounds...he then rushed downstairs to the basement like a speed of lightning and he came back holding a string, a resuscitation machine and a sterilized scalpel..... within a blink of an eyes he had cut and tied the umbilical cord separating the baby from Phumi then he quickly used the resuscitation machine on Phumi, he used it severally not giving up while screaming at her to wake up\*\*\*

Cass: baby wake up please...please wake up!

\*\*\*he begged her as he tried one more time and still nothing changed....he backed away from

the bed with his eyes popped out and his hands shaking from fear for the first time in very long time and he fell on the floor with his butt\*\*\*

Cass: no...no....Phumi please...please don't do this to me im begging you

\*\*\*he whispered looking like his world was coming to an end\*\*\*

Cass: NOOOOOO!

\*\*\* He screamed which startled the baby and he cried his lungs out but Cass didn't move he continued to scream out loud.... the baby continued to cry her tiny lungs out then out of the blue Cass head the machine beeping....he quickly got up and looked at it and she had a heartbeat but it was low\*\*\*

Cass: thank you baby....thank you

\*\*\*he kissed her forehead and with a blink of an eye he took off the IV and carried her to the basement, where a hospital like white room was

packed with hospital equipment and other things and he connected her to an anesthetic machine that will help her breathe....he then went back upstairs to get the baby and he found a brethren holding the baby waiting for him\*\*\*

Cass: not today Fabiano....you have 10 seconds to give me my son and get the fuck out of here!

\*\*\*he said with an angry voice\*\*\*

Fabiano: I was waiting for a go ahead from Cosmo and his hard headed brother but nah they are just taking forever so I'll do this my way

Cass: 10....9....8...7

Fabiano: you know touching this tiny neck and giving him a little squeeze and he's gon.....

\*\*\* within a blink of an eye Cass got to him and he detached his head from his body and he threw the head on the floor then he quickly took his son as the body was falling down and put

him on top of the bed gently.....he carried both the body and head downstairs to the fire place and switched it on and threw them in and he closed it and rushed back upstairs and took his son where Phumi was..... Since the white room was prepared for both Phumi and the baby he quickly cleaned him up and checked him then he wrapped him up with a baby blanket and put him side an incubator and he went to prepare himself for Phumi's surgery.... he didn't understand what just happened with Phumi cause she was gone but then her heart started beating again after it stopped beating for quite some time....anyway he got busy with her hoping that the baby didn't do any unfixable damage to her insides and that she'll hold on and live for him cause he couldn't lose her\*\*\*